

# P A M E L A:

O R,

V I R T U E Rewarded.

In a SERIES of  
F A M I L I A R L E T T E R S

From a Beautiful  
Young D A M S E L to her P A R E N T S:

And afterwards,  
In her EXALTED CONDITION,

B E T W E E N  
H E R, and Persons of *Figure* and *Quality*,

U P O N T H E  
Most Important and Entertaining S U B J E C T S  
I n G E N T E E L L I F E.

---

I n F O U R V O L U M E S.

---

Published in order to cultivate the Principles of V I R T U E  
and R E L I G I O N in the Minds of the Y O U T H of  
B O T H S E X E S.

---

The S I X T H E D I T I O N; Corrected.

---

By the late Mr. S A M. R I C H A R D S O N.

---

V O L. I I I.

---

L O N D O N:

Sold by W I L L I A M O T R I D G E, opposite the North-side of  
the *New Church*, in the *Strand*.

M D C C L X X I I.



P. A. M. E. L. A.

V. I. R. T. U. E. R. E. C. O. R. D. E. D.

F. A. M. I. L. I. A. R. T. E. R. S.



\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

---

---

# PAMELA;

O R,

## VIRTUE Rewarded.

---

*In a Series of* FAMILIAR LETTERS.

---

V O L. III.

---

### LETTER I.

*My dear Father and Mother,*

**W**E arrived here last Night, highly pleas'd with our Journey, and the Occasion of it. May God bless you both with long Life and Health, to enjoy your sweet Farm, and pretty Dwelling, which is just what I wished it to be! And don't make your grateful Hearts too uneasy in the Possession of it, by your modest Diffidence of your own Worthiness: For, at the same time that it is what will do Honour to the best of Gentlemen, it is not so *very* extraordinary, considering his Condition, as that it will give any one Cause to censure it as the Effect of a too partial and injudicious Kindness

VOL. III.

B

for

for the Parents of one whom he *delighteth to honour*.

MY dear Master (why should I not still call him so, bound to reverence him as I am in every Light that he can shine in to the most obliged and sensible Heart?) holds his kind Purpose of fitting up the large Parlour, and Three Apartments in the commodious Dwelling he calls yours, for his Entertainment and mine, when he shall permit me to pay my Duty to you both, for a few happy Days together: And he has actually given Orders for that Purpose; and that the Three Apartments be so fitted up, as to be rather suitable to *your* Condition, than his *own*; for, he says, the plain simple Elegance which he will have to be observed in the Rooms, as well as the Furniture, will be a Variety in his Retirement to this Place, that will make him return to his own with the greater Pleasure; and at the same time, when we are not there, will be of Use for the Reception of any of your Friends; and so he shall not, as he kindly says, rob the good Couple of any of their Accommodations.

THE old Bow-windows he will have preserv'd, but will not have them fash'd, nor the Woodbinds, Jessamines, and Vines, that run up against them, destroyed; only he will have larger Panes of Glass, and convenienter Casements, to let in more of the sweet Air and Light, to make Amends for that obstructed by the Shades of those fragrant Climbers: For he has mention'd, three or four times, how gratefully they dispens'd their intermingled Odours to us, when, the last Evening,



ing, we stood at the Window in our Bed-chamber, to hear the responsive Songs of Two warbling Nightingales, one at a Distance, the other near; which took up our delighted Attention for above Two Hours, and charm'd us the more, as we thought their Season had been over. And when they had done, he made *me* sing him one, for which he rewarded me with a Kiss, saying, How greatly do the innocent Pleasures I now hourly taste, exceed the guilty Tumults that used formerly to agitate my unequal Mind! Never talk, my *Pamela*, as you frequently do, of Obligation to me: One such Hour as I now enjoy, is an ample Reward for all the Benefits I can confer on you and yours in my whole Life!

THE Parlour indeed will be more elegant, tho' that is to be rather plain than rich, as well in its Wainscot as Furniture, and to be new floor'd. The dear Gentleman has already given Orders about it, and you will soon have Workmen with you to put them in Execution. The Parlour Doors are to have brass Hinges and Locks, and to shut as close, he tells them, as a Watch-case: For who knows, said he, my Dear, but we shall have still added Blessings, in two or three charming Boys and Girls, to place there in their Infancy, before they can be of Age to be benefited by your Lessons and Example? And besides, I make no Doubt, but I shall entertain there some of my chosen Friends, in their Excursions, for a Day or so.

How am I, every Hour of my Life, overwhelm'd with Instances of God Almighty's Good-

ness and his! — O spare, blessed Father of Mercies, the precious Life of this excellent Gentleman! and increase my Thankfulness, and my Worthiness; and then — But what shall I say? — Only that then I may *continue* to be what I am; for more blest'd and more happy, in my own Mind, surely I cannot be.

THE Beds he will have of Cloth; because he thinks the Situation a little cold, especially when the Wind is Easterly, and because he purposes to be down in the early Spring Season now-and-then, as well as in the latter Autumn; and the Window Curtains of the same, in one Room red, in the other green; but plain, lest you should be afraid to use them occasionally. The Carpets for them will be sent with the other Furniture; for he will not alter the old oaken Floors of the Bed-chamber, nor yet of the little Room he intends for my Use, to withdraw to, when I chuse not to join in such Company as may happen to fall in: Which, my Dear, says he, shall be as little as is possible, only particular Friends, who may be disposed, once in a Year or two, to see, when I am there, how I live with my *Pamela*, and her Parents; and how I pass my Time in my Retirement, as I shall call this: For otherwise, perhaps, they will be apt to think I am ashamed of Company I shall always be pleased with. — Nor are you, my Dear, continued he, to take this as a Compliment to yourself, but a Piece of requisite Policy in me; for who will offer to reproach me for marrying, as the World thinks, below me, when they shall see,

see, that such a Reproach, as they would intend it, is so far from being so to me, that I not only pride myself in my *Pamela*, but take Pleasure in owning her Relations as mine, and visiting them, and receiving Visits from them; and yet offer not to set them up in such a glaring Light, as if I would have the World forget (who in that Case would always take the more Pleasure in remembering) what they were. And how will it anticipate low Reflection, when they shall see, I can bend my Mind to partake with them the Pleasures of their humble, but decent Life? — Ay, continued he, and be rewarded for it too, with better Health, better Spirits, and a better Mind: So that, my Dear, added he, I shall reap more Benefit, by what I propose to do, than I shall confer.

IN this generous manner does this best of Gentlemen endeavour to disclaim (tho' I must be very ungrateful, if, with me, it did not enhance) the proper Merit of a Beneficence which is natural to him; and which indeed, as I tell him, may be in one respect depreciated, inasmuch, as (so excellent is his Nature) he cannot help it, if he would. — O that it was in my Power to recompense him for it! But I am poor, as I have often said, in every thing but Will — and that is *wholly* his. — And what an Happiness is it to me, an Happiness I could not so early have hoped for, that I can say so without *Reserve*; since the dear Gentleman requires nothing of me, but what is consistent with my Duty to the Supreme Benefactor, the First Mover and Cause of all his



own Happiness, of my Happiness, and of that of my dear, my ever dear Parents!

BUT whither does the enchanting Subject lead me! I am running on to my usual Length, tho' I have not the same Excuse for it: For heretofore I had nothing to do but to write: Yet, I am sure, if I do exceed a little, *you* will be pleased with it; and you have moreover a Right to rejoice with me in the Days of my Felicity, after your indulgent Hearts had been so much pained by a long Succession of my Fears and my Dangers, which only ought to be remember'd now, as Subjects of thankful Exultation, by

*Your dutiful and happy Daughter.*

---

## LETTER II.

*My dearest Daughter,*

I NEED not repeat to you the Sense your good Mother and I have of our Happiness, and of our Obligations to your honoured Spouse: You both were pleased Witnesses of it every Hour of the happy Fortnight you passed with us. But still, my Dear, we hardly know how to address ourselves even to *you*, much less to the 'Squire, with the Freedom he so often invited us to take: For, I don't know how it is, but tho' you are our Daughter, and are so far from being lifted up by your high Condition, that we see no Difference in your Behaviour to us your poor Parents; yet,

yet, when we look upon you as the Lady of so fine a Gentleman, we cannot forbear having a kind of Respect, and — I don't know what to call it, — that lays a little Restraint upon us! And yet we would not, methinks, let our Minds be run away with the Admiration of worldly Grandeur, so as to set too much by it.

BUT your Merit, and your Prudence, my dear Daughter, is so much above all we could ever have any Notion of! — And to have Gentry come only to behold you, and admire you, not so much for your Genteelness and Amiability neither, as for your Behaviour, and your Affability to Poor as well as Rich, and to hear every one calling you an Angel, and saying, You *deserve* to be what you are; makes us hardly know how to look upon you, but as an Angel indeed! I am sure you have been a good Angel to us! — Since, for your sake, God Almighty has put it into your honour'd Husband's Heart, to make us the happiest Couple in the World: But little less, indeed, we should have been, had we only, in some far distant Land, heard of our dear Child's Happiness, and never partaken of the Benefits of it ourselves. But thus to be provided for! — Thus kindly to be owned, and called Father and Mother by such a brave Gentleman; and thus to be placed, that we have nothing to do, but to bless God, and bless him, and bless you, and hourly pray for you *both*, is such a Providence, my dear Child, as is too mighty to be borne by us with Equalness of Temper; and we kneel together every Morning, Noon, and

Night, and weep and rejoice, and rejoice and weep, to think how our Unworthiness is distinguished, and how God has provided for us in our latter Days, when all that we had to fear, was, that, as we grew older, and more infirm, and worn out by hard Labour, we should be troublesome, where not our Pride, but our industrious Wills, would have made us wish not to be so; but to be intitled to a happier Lot: For this would have grieved us the more, for the sake of you, my dear Child, and your unhappy Brother's Children: For it is well known, that, tho' we pretend not to boast of our Family, and indeed had no Reason, yet none of us were ever sunk so low as I was: — To be sure, partly by my own Fault; for had it been for your poor aged Mother's sake only, I ought not to have done what I did for *John* and *William*; for, so unhappy were they, poor Lads, that what I could do, was but as a Drop of Water to a Bucket.

BUT yet the Issue has shewn, that (if I may presume to say so) what I did, was not displeasing to God; inasmuch as I have the Comfort to see, that my Reliance on Him, while I was doing what tho' some thought *imprudent* Things, yet not *wrong* Things, is so abundantly rewarded, beyond Expectation and Desert. Blessed be His holy Name for it!

YOU command me — Let me, as writing to Mr. B.'s Lady, say *command*, tho', as to my dear *Daughter*, I will only say *desire*: And indeed I will not, as you wish'd me not to do, let the one Condition, which was accidental, put the  
other,



other, which was natural, out of my Thought: You spoke it in better Words, but this was the Sense — But you have the Gift of Utterance; and Education is a fine thing, where it meets with such Talents to improve upon as God has given you. — But let me not forget what I was going to say. — You *command* — or, if you please — you *desire* me to write long Letters, and often. — And how can I help it, if I would? For when here, in this happy Dwelling, and this well-stock'd Farm, in these rich Meadows, and well-cropp'd Acres, we look around us, and, which Way soever we turn our Heads, see Blessings upon Blessings, and Plenty upon Plenty; see Barns well-stored, Poultry increasing, the Kine lowing and crouding about us, and all fruitful; and are bid to call all these our own — And then think, that all is the Reward of our Child's Virtue! — O my dear Daughter, who can bear these Things! — Excuse me — I must break off a little, for my Eyes are as full as my Heart; and I will retire to bless God, and your honour'd Husband.

So — my dear Child — I now again take up my Pen. — But reading what I had written, in order to carry on the Thread, I can hardly forbear again being in like sort affected. — But do you think I will call all these Things my own! — Do you think I will live Rent-free! — Do you think I would? Can the honoured 'Squire believe, that having such a generous Example before me, if I had no Gratitude in my Temper before,

before, I could help being touched by such an one as he sets me? — If his Goodness makes him know no Mean in giving, shall I be so greedy as to know none in receiving? — Come, come, my dear Child, your poor Father is not so fordid a Wretch neither: He will shew the World, that all these Benefits are not thrown away upon one, who will disgrace you as much by his Temper, as by his Condition: What tho' I cannot be as worthy of all these Favours as I wish? I will be as worthy as I can. And, let me tell you, my dear Child, if the King and his Royal Family (God bless them!) be not ashamed to receive Taxes and Duties from his Subjects; if Dukes and Earls, and all the top Gentry, cannot support their Bravery, without having their Rents paid; I hope I shall not affront the 'Squire, to pay to his Steward, what any other Person would pay for this noble Stock, and improving Farm: And I will do it, an' it please God to bless me with Life and Health — I should not be worthy to crawl on the Earth, if I did not. And what did I say to Mr. *Longman*? the faithful Mr. *Longman*! sure no Gentleman had ever a more worthy Steward than he: It was as we were walking over the Grounds together — and observing in what good Order every thing was; he was praising some little Contrivances of my own, for the Improvement of the Farm, and saying, how comfortably he hoped we might live upon it. Ay, Mr. *Longman*, said I, comfortably indeed: But do you think I could be properly said to *live*, if I was not to pay as much Rent for it as another?

another? — I can tell you, said he, the 'Squire will not receive any thing from you, Goodman *Andrews*. — Why, Man, he has no Occasion for it: He's worth a Power of Money, besides a noble and clear Estate in Land. — Ads-heartlikins, you must not affront him, I can tell you that: For he's as generous as a Prince where he takes: but he is hasty, and will have his own way. — Why, for that Reason, Mr. *Longman*, said I, I was thinking to make *you* my Friend! — Make *me* your Friend! You have not a better in the World, to my Power, I can tell you that; nor your Dame neither; for I love such honest Hearts: I wish my own Brother would let me love him as well; but let that pass. — What I can do for you, I will; and here's my Hand upon it.

WELL then, said I, it is this: Let me account to you at the Rent Farmer *Dickins* offered; and let me know, what the Stock cost, and what the Crops are valued at; and pay the one as I can, and the other quarterly; and not let the 'Squire know it, till you can't chuse; and I shall be as happy as a Prince: For I doubt not, by God's Blessing, to make a comfortable Livelihood of it, besides. — Why, dost believe, Goodman *Andrews*, said he, that I would do such a thing? — Would not his Honour think, if I hid one thing from him, I might hide another? — Go to, go to, honest Heart, I love thee dearly: But can the 'Squire do too much for his Lady, think'st thou? Come, come, (and he jeer'd me so, I could not tell what to say to him) I wish at  
Bottom



Bottom there is not some Pride in this; — what, I warrant, you would not be too much beholden to his Honour, would you? — No, good Mr. *Longman*, said I — it is not that, I am sure. If I have any Pride, it is only in my dear Child, to whom, under God, all this is owing! — But some how or other it shall be so.

AND so, my dear Daughter, I resolve it shall: And it will be, over and above, one of the greatest Pleasures to me, to do the good 'Squire Service, as well as to be so much benefited and obliged by him.

OUR eldest Grandson, *Thomas*, is very desirous to come and live with us: The Boy is honest; and, they tell me, industrious. And Cousin *Burroughs* wants me to imploy his Son *Roger*, who understands the Business of a Farm very well. It is no wonder, that all one's Relations should wish to partake of our happy Lot; and if they *can*, and *will*, do their Business as well as others, I see not why Relationship should be an Objection. But yet, I think, one would not *beleaguer*, as one may say, your honoured Husband with one's Relations. You, my best Child, will give me always your Advice, as to my Carriage in this my new Lot; for I would not for the World be thought an Incroacher. And I am sure, you have so much Prudence, that there is nobody's Advice fitter to be followed than yours.

OUR Blessings (I am sure you have blessed us!) attend you, my dearest Child; and may you be as happy as you have made us (I cannot wish you  
to

to be happier, because I have no Notion how it can be, in this Life) conclude us,

*Your ever loving Father and Mother,*

JOHN and ELIZ. ANDREWS.

May we not hope to be favour'd now-and-then with a Letter from you, my dear Child, like some of your former, to let us know how you go on? It would be a great Joy to us: Indeed it would. — But we know you'll have enough to do, without obliging us in this way; so must acquiesce.

---

### L E T T E R   I I I .

*My dear Father and Mother,*

**I** HAVE shew'd your Letter to my Best-beloved. — Don't be uneasy that I have; — for you need not be ashamed of it, since it is my Pride to have such honest and grateful Parents: And I'll tell you what he said to it, as the best Argument I can use why you should not be uneasy; but enjoy, without Pain or Anxiety, all the Benefits of your happy Lot.

DEAR, good Souls! said he, how does every thing they say, and every thing they write, manifest the Worthiness of their Hearts! No Wonder, *Pamela*, you love and revere such honest Minds; for that you would do, were they not your Parents: And tell them, that I am so far from having them believe, that what I have done for them, is only the Effect of my Affection

tion for their Daughter, that let 'em find out another Couple, as worthy as themselves, and I will do as much for them. Indeed I would not place them, continued the dear Obliger, in the *same* County, because I would wish *Two* Counties to be bless'd for their sakes. Tell them, my Dear, that they have a Right to what they enjoy, on the foot of their own *proper* Merit; and *bid* them enjoy it as their Patrimony: And if there can any thing arise, that is more than they themselves can wish for, in the way of Life they chuse to live, let them look round among their own Relations, where it may be acceptable, and communicate to them the like solid Reasons for rejoicing in the Situation they are pleas'd with: And do you, my Dear, continued he, still further inable them, as you shall judge proper, to gratify their enlarged Hearts, for fear they should deny any Comfort to themselves, in order to do good to others.

I COULD only fly to his generous Bosom, (for this is a Subject which most affects me) and, with my Eyes swimming in Tears of grateful Joy, and which overflow'd as soon as my bold Lips touch'd his dear Face, bless God, and bless him, with my whole Heart; for, speak I could not! — But, almost choak'd with my Joy, sobb'd to him my grateful Acknowledgements — He clasped me in his Arms, and said, How, my Dearest, do you overpay me for the little I have done for your Parents! If it be thus to be bless'd for conferring Benefits so insignificant to a Man of my Fortune, what Joys is it not in  
the



the Power of rich Men to give themselves whenever they please! — Foretastes, indeed, of those we are bid to hope for; which can surely only exceed these, as *then* we shall be all Intellect, and better fitted to receive them! — 'Tis too much! — too much! said I, in broken Accents: — How am I oppress'd with the Pleasure you give me! — Oh, Sir, bless me more gradually, and more cautiously; — for I cannot bear it! And indeed, my Heart went flutter, flutter, flutter, at his dear Breast, as if it wanted to break its too narrow Prison, to mingle still more intimately with his own.

SURELY, surely, my dear, my beloved Parents, nobody's Happiness is so great as mine! — If it proceeds thus from Degree to Degree, and is to be augmented by the Hope, the charming Hope, that the dear second Author of your Blessings and mine, be the uniformly good, as well as the partially kind Man to us, what a Felicity will this be! And if our Prayers shall be heard, and we shall have the Pleasure to think, that his Advances in Piety are owing not a little to them, and to the Example God shall give us Grace to set; then, indeed, may we take the Pride to think, we have repaid his Goodness to us, and that we have satisfied the Debt, which nothing less can discharge.

THUS, then, do I set before you imperfectly, as I am forced to do, the Delight your grateful, your honest Hearts give us. I say, imperfectly, and well I may; for I might as easily

easily paint Sound, as describe the noble, the sublime Pleasures, that wind up my Affections to even a painful Height of Rapture, on such Occasions as this: And I desire, as he often bids *me*, that *you* will take to yourselves the Merit of thus delighting us both, and then think with less Uneasiness of the Obligation you are under to the best of Friends! — And indeed it is but doing Justice to his beneficent Temper, to think, that we have given him an Opportunity of exercising it, in a way so agreeable to it; and I can tell by the Ardour of his Speech, by the additional Lustre that it lights up in his Eyes, naturally so lively, and by the virtuous Indearments, refined on these Occasions above what Sense can know, that he has a Pleasure, a Joy, a Transport, in doing what he does of this sort, that is its own Reward; as every virtuous and noble Action must be to a Mind that can be delighted with Virtue for its own sake, and can find itself enlarged by the Power of doing Good to worthy Objects. Even I, my dear Parents, know this by Experience, when I can be an humble Means to make an honest Creature happy, tho' not related to myself; and yet I am but a Third-hand Dispenser, as I have \* elsewhere said, of these Comforts; and all the Light I can communicate, as I once before observed†, like that of the Moon, is but borrow'd from his sunny Radiance.

FORGIVE me, my dear, my worthy Parents, if my Style on this Subject be raised

\* See Vol. II. p. 436. † See Vol. II. p. 276.

above that natural Simplicity which is more suited to my humble Talents. But how can I help it? For when the Mind is elevated, ought not the Sense we have of our Happiness, to make our Expressions soar equally? Can the Affections be so highly rais'd, as mine are on these Occasions, and the Thoughts creep, groveling, like one's ordinary Self? No, indeed! — Call not this, therefore, the Gift of Utterance, if it should appear to you in a better Light than it deserves. It is the Gift of Gratitude: A Gift, which makes you, and me too, *speak* and *write*, as I hope it will make us *act*, above ourselves. — And thus will our Gratitude be the Inspirer of Joy to our common Benefactor; and his Joy will heighten our Gratitude; and so we shall proceed, as Cause and Effect to each other's Happiness, to bless the dear Gentleman that blesses us. — And will it be right then to say, you are so uneasy under such (at least as to your Wills) return'd and discharged Obligations? God Almighty requires only a thankful Heart for all the Mercies he heaps upon the Children of Men: My dear Mr. *B.* who, in these Particulars, imitates Divinity, desires no more: — — You *have* this thankful Heart; — yes, you have; and that to such an high Degree of Gratitude, that nobody can exceed you.

BUT yet, my dear Parents, when your worthy Minds would be too much affected with your Gratitude, so as to lay you under the Restraints you mention, to the dear Gentleman, and, for his sake, to your dependent Daughter;



then, let me humbly advise you, that you will, at such Times, with more particular, more abstracted Aspirations, than at others, raise your Thoughts upwards, and consider who it is that gives *him* the Opportunity; and pray for him and for me; for *him*, that all his future Actions may be of a Piece with this noble Disposition of Mind; for *me*, that I may continue humble, and consider myself blest'd for your sakes, and in order that I may be, in some sort, a Rewarder, in the Hands of Providence, of this its dear excellent Agent; and then we shall look forward, all of us, with Pleasure indeed, to that State, where there is no Distinction of Degree, and where the humble Cotager shall be upon a Par with the proudest Monarch.

O MY dear, dear Parents! how can you, as in your *Postscript*, say — May we not be *favour'd* now-and-then with a Letter? Call *me* your Daughter, your *Pamela* — I am no Lady to you — I have more Pleasure to be called your Comfort, and to be thought to act worthy of the Sentiments with which your Examples, Cautions and Instructions, have inspired me, than in any one thing in this Life, my determin'd Duty to our common Benefactor, the best of Gentlemen and Husbands, excepted. And I am sure, God has blest'd me for your sakes, and has thus answer'd for me all your Prayers; nay, *more* than answer'd all you or I could have wished or hoped for. We only pray'd, only hoped, that God would preserve

*you*

*you* honest, and *me* virtuous : And see, O see, my excellent Parents! how we are crown'd with Blessings upon Blessings, till we are the Talk of all that know us : — You for your Honesty ! I for my Humility and Virtue ! — that Virtue which God's Grace inspired, and your Examples and Lessons, with those of my dear good Lady, cultivated ; and which now have left me nothing to do but to reap all the Rewards which this Life can afford ; and if I walk humbly, and improve my blessed Opportunities, will heighten and perfect all in a still more joyful Futurity !

HENCE, my dear Parents, (I mean, from the Delight I have in writing to you ; a Delight which transports me so much above my own Sphere) you'll see that I *must* write to you, and cannot help it, if I would. And *will* it be a great Joy to you ! — And is there any thing that can add to your Joy, think you, that is in the Power of your *Pamela*, that she would not *do* ! — O that the Lives and Healths of my dearest Mr. B. and my dearest Parents, may be continued to me ! And who then can be so blest'd as your *Pamela* ?

I WILL write ; *depend* upon it, I will — on every Occasion : — And you augment my Joys, to think it is in my Power to add to your Comforts. Nor can you conceive the Pleasure I have in hoping, that this your new, happy Lot, may, by relieving you from corroding Care, and the too wearing Effects of hard Labour, add, in these your advanced Years, to both

your Days! — For, so happy am I, I can have no Grief, no Pain, in looking forward, but from such Thoughts as remind me, that, one Day, either you from me, or I from you, must be separated.

BUT it is fit, that we so comport ourselves, as that we should not imbitter our present Happiness with Prospects too gloomy — but bring our Minds to be chearfully thankful for the present, wisely to enjoy that *present* as we go along, — and at last, when all is to be wound up, lie down, and say, *Not mine, but thy Will be done!*

BUT I have written a great deal; yet have much still to say, relating to other Parts of your kind, your acceptable Letter; and so will soon write again: For I must think every Opportunity happy, whereby I can assure you, how much I am, and will ever be, without any Addition to my Name, if that will make you easier,

*Your dutiful* PAMELA.

## LETTER IV.

*My dearest Father and Mother,*

I NOW write again, as I told you I should in my last --- But I am half afraid to look back on the Copy of it; for your worthy Hearts, so visible in your Letter, and my best Beloved's kind Deportment upon shewing it to him, raised me into



into a Frame of Mind, that was bordering on Ecstasy : Yet am I sure, I wrote my Heart. But you must not, my dear Father, write to your poor *Pamela* so affectingly. Your *steadier* Mind could hardly bear your own moving Strain, and you were forc'd to lay down your Pen, and retire : How then could I, who love you so dearly, if you had not, if I may so say, *increased* that Love, by fresh and stronger Instances of your Worthiness, forbear being affected, and rais'd above myself ? — But I will not again touch upon this Subject.

YOU must know then, that my dearest Spouse commands me, with his kind Respects, to tell you, that he has thought of a Method to make your *worthy Hearts* easy ; those were his Words — And this is, said he, by putting that whole Estate, with the new Purchase, under your Father's Care, as I at first intended\* ; and he shall receive and pay, and order every thing as he pleases, and *Longman*, who grows in Years, shall be eased of that Burden. Your Father, said he, writes a very legible Hand, and he shall take what Assistants he pleases : And do you, *Pamela*, see to that, that this new Task may be made as easy and pleasant to him as possible. He shall make up his Accounts only to you, my Dear : And there will be several Pleasures arise to me upon it, continued he : First, That it will be a Relief to honest *Longman*, who has Business enough on his Hands besides.

\* See Vol. II. p. 378.

Next, It will make the good Couple easy, that they have an Opportunity of injoying that as their Due, which now their too grateful Hearts give them so many causeless Scruples about. Thirdly, It will imploy your Father's Time more suitably to *your* Liking, and *mine*, because with more Ease to himself; for you see his industrious Will cannot be satisfied without doing something. In the fourth Place, The Management of this Estate will gain him more Respect and Reverence among the Tenants, and his Neighbours; and yet be all in his own way. — For, my Dear, added he, you'll see, that it is always one Point in View with me, to endeavour to convince every one, that I esteem and value them for their own intrinsic Merit, and want not any body to distinguish them in any other Light than that in which they have been accustomed to appear.

So, my dear Father, the Instrument will be drawn, and brought you by honest Mr. *Longman*, who will be with you in a few Days, to put the last Hand to the new Purchase, and to give you Possession of your new Commission, if you please to accept it; as I hope you will; and the rather, for my dear Mr. *B.*'s. third Reason; and because I know, that this Trust will be discharged as worthily, and as sufficiently, after you are used to it, as if Mr. *Longman* himself was in it — And better it cannot be. Mr. *Longman* is very fond of this Relief, and longs to be down to settle every thing with you, as to the proper Powers, the Method, &c. —  
and

and he says, in his usual way of Phrasing, that he'll make it as easy to you as a Glove.

IF you do accept it, my best Beloved will leave every thing to you, as to Rent, where not already fixed, and likewise as to Acts of Kindness and Favour to be done where you think proper; and he is pleased to say, That, with all his bad Qualities, he was ever deemed a kind Landlord: And this I can confirm in fifty Instances to his Honour: So that the old Gentleman, said he, need not be afraid of being put upon severe or harsh Methods of Proceeding, where Things will do without; and he will always have it in his Power to befriend an honest Man: By which means the Province will be intirely such an one as suits with his Inclination. If any thing difficult or perplexing arises, continued he, or where a little Knowledge in Law-matters is necessary, *Longman* shall do all that: And your Father will see, that he will not have, in those Points, a Coadjutor that will be too hard-hearted for his Wish: For it was a Rule my Father set me, and I have strictly followed, that altho' I have a Lawyer for my Steward, it was rather to know how to do *right* Things, than *oppressive* ones: And *Longman* has so well answered this Intention, that he was always more noted for composing Differences, than promoting Law-suits.

I DARE say, my dear Father, this will be an acceptable Imployment to you, on the several Accounts my dearest Mr. *B.* was pleased to mention: And what a charming Contrivance



is here! — God for ever bless his confidante Heart for it! — To make you useful to him, and easy to yourself; as well as respected by, and even a Benefactor to, all around you! What can one say to all these Things? — But what signifies exulting in one's Gratitude for *one* Benefit! — Every Hour the dear Gentleman heaps new ones upon us, and we have hardly Time to thank him for one, but a second, and a third, and so on to countless Degrees, confound one, and throw back one's Words upon one's Heart before they are well formed, and oblige one to sit down under all with profound Silence and Admiration.

As to what you mentioned of the Desire of Cousin *Thomas*, and *Roger*, to come to live with you, I endeavoured to sound what our dear Benefactor's Opinion was. He was pleased to say, I have nothing to chuse in this Case, my Dear. Your Father is his own Master: He may imploy whom he pleases; and, if they are not wanting in Respect to him and your Mother, I think, as he rightly observes, Relationship should rather have the Preference; and as he can remedy Inconveniencies, if he finds any, by all means let every Branch of your Family have Reason to rejoice with him.

BUT I have thought of this Matter a good deal, since I had the Favour of your Letter; and I hope, since you condescend to ask my Advice, you will excuse me, if I give it freely; yet intirely submitting all to your own Liking.

IN the first Place, then, I think it would be better to have *any body* than Relations; and that for these Reasons:

ONE is apt to expect more Regard from Relations, and they more Indulgence, than Strangers can have Reason for.

THAT where there is such a Difference in the Expectations of both, it is hardly possible but Uneasiness must arise.

THAT this will subject you to bear it, or to resent it, and to part with them. If you bear it, you will know no End of Impositions: If you dismiss them, it will occasion Ill-will. They will call you unkind; and you them ungrateful; and as, it may be, your prosperous Lot will raise you Enviars, such will be apt to believe *them*, rather than *you*.

THEN the World will be inclined to think, that we are crowding upon a generous Gentleman, a numerous Family of indigent People: And tho' they may be ever so deserving, yet, it will be said, The Girl is filling every Place with her Relations, and *beleaguering*, as you significantly express it, a worthy Gentleman. And this will be said, perhaps, should one's Kindred behave ever so worthily. And so,

IN the next Place, one would not, for *their* sakes, that this should be done; who may live with *less* Reproach, and *equal* Benefit, anywhere else: For I would not wish any one of them to be lifted out of his Station, and made independent,

independent, at Mr. B.'s Expence, if their Industry will not do it; altho' I would never scruple to do any thing reasonable to promote or assist that Industry, in the way of their Callings.

THEN it will possibly put others of our Relations upon the same Expectations, of living with you; and this may occasion Ill-will among them, if some be preferred to others in your Favour.

THEN, my dear Father, I apprehend, that our beloved and honoured Benefactor would be under some Difficulty, from his natural Politeness, and Regard for you and me. — You see how kindly, on all Occasions, he treats you both, not only as the Father and Mother of his *Pamela*, but as if you were his own Father and Mother: And if you had any body as your Servants there, who called you Cousin, or Grandfather, or Uncle, he would not care, when he came down, to treat them on the Foot of common Servants, tho' *they* might nevertheless think themselves honoured (as they would be, and as I am sure I shall always think *myself*) with his Commands. And would it not, if they are modest and worthy, be as great a Difficulty upon *them*, to be thus distinguished, as it would be to *him*, and to *me*, for *his* sake? For otherwise, (believe me, I hope you will, my dear Father and Mother) I could sit down and rejoice with the meanest and remotest Relation I have. But in the World's Eye, to every body but my best of Parents, I must, if I have ever so much Reluctance  
to



to it, appear in a Light that may not give Discredit to his Choice.

THEN again, as I hinted, you will have it in your Power, without the least Injury to our common Benefactor, to do kinder Things by any of our Relations, when *not* with you, than you can do, if they *live* with you.

YOU may lend them a little Money, to put them in a Way, if any thing offers, that you think will be to their Advantage. You can fit out my She-Cousins to good reputable Places. — The younger you can put to School, or, when fit, to Trades, according to their Talents; and so they will be of course in a way to get an honest and creditable Livelihood.

BUT, above all things, one would as much discourage as one could, such a proud and ambitious Spirit in any of them, as should want to raise itself by Favour instead of Merit; and this the rather, for that, undoubtedly, there are many more happy Persons in low than in high Life, take Number for Number, all the World over.

I AM sure, altho' Four or Five Years of different Life had passed with me, I had so much Pride and Pleasure in the Thought of working for my Living with you, my dear Parents, if I could but get honest to you, that it made my Confinement the more grievous to me, and even, if possible, aggravated the Apprehensions attending it.

BUT I must beg of you, not to harbour a Thought, that these my Reasons proceed from  
the

the bad Motives of a Heart tainted with Pride on its high Condition. Indeed there can be no Reason for it, to one who thinks after this manner:—The greatest Families on Earth have some among them, who are unhappy, and low in Life; and shall such an one reproach me with having Twenty low Relations, because they have, peradventure, not above Five? or with Ten, because they have but One, or Two, or Three?—Or should I, on the other hand, be ashamed of Relations who had done nothing blame-worthy; and whose Poverty (a very necessary State in the Scale of Beings) was all their Crime; when there is hardly any great Family but has produced Instances of Persons guilty of bad Actions, *really* bad, which have reduced them to a Distress we never knew? Let the Person who would reproach me with *low Birth*, which is *no* Disgrace, and what I *cannot help*, give me no Cause to retort upon him *low Actions*, which *are* a Disgrace to any Station, the more so, the higher it is, and which he *can help*; or else I shall smile with Contempt at his empty Reproach: And, could I be half so proud *with* Cause, as he is *without*, glory in my Advantage over him.

LET us then, my dear Father and Mother, endeavour to judge of one another, as God, at the last Day, will judge of us all: And then the honest Peasant will stand fairer in our Esteem, than the guilty Peer.

IN short, this shall be my own Rule —  
Every one who acts justly and honestly, I will  
look

look upon as my Relation, whether he be so or not; and the more he wants my Assistance, the more intitled to it he shall be, as well as to my Esteem: While those who deserve it not, must expect nothing but Compassion from me, and my Prayers, were they my Brothers or Sisters. 'Tis true, had I not been poor and lowly, I might not have thought thus; but if it be a right way of Thinking, it is a Blessing, that I *was* so: And that shall never be matter of Reproach to me, which one Day will be matter of Justification.

UPON the Whole, then, I should think it adviseable, my dear Father and Mother, to make such kind Excuses to the offered Services of my Cousins, as your better Reason shall suggest to you; and to do any thing else for them of *more* Value, as their Circumstances may require, or Occasions offer to serve them.

BUT if the employing them, and having them about you, will add any one Comfort to your Lives, I give up intirely my own Opinion, and doubt not every thing will be thought well of, that you shall think fit to do.

AND so I conclude, with assuring you, that I am, my ever dear Parents,

*Your dutiful and happy Daughter.*

The Copy of this Letter I will keep to myself, till I have your Answer to it, that you may be under no Difficulty how to act in either of the Cases mentioned in it.

L E T-



## LETTER V.

*My dearest Daughter,*

**H**OW shall I do to answer, as they deserve, your Two last Letters? Surely no happy Couple ever had such a Child as we have! But it is in vain to aim at Words like your Words; and equally in vain for us to offer to set forth the Thankfulness of our Hearts, on the kind Office your honoured Husband has given us; for no Reason but to favour us still more, and to quiet our Minds in the Notion of being useful to him. God grant I may be able to be so! Happy shall I be, if I can! — But I see the generous Drift of his Proposal; it is only to make me more easy from the Nature of my Employment, and in my Mind too, overloaden, as I may say, with Benefits; and, at the same time, to make me more respected in my new Neighbourhood.

I CAN only say, I most gratefully accept of the kind Offer; and since it will ease the worthy Mr. *Longman*, shall, with still greater Pleasure, do all I can in it. But I doubt I shall be wanting in Ability; I doubt I shall: But I will be just and honest, however: That, by God's Grace, will be within my own Capacity; and that, I hope, I may answer for.

It is kind, indeed, to put it in my Power to do good to those who shall deserve it: And I will take *double* Pains to find out the true Merit of  
 2 such

such as I shall recommend to Favour, and that their Circumstances be really such as I shall represent them.

BUT one thing, my dear Daughter, let me desire, that I may make up my Accounts to Mr. *Longman*, or to his Honour himself, when he shall make us so happy as to be here with us. I don't how — but it will make me uneasy, if I am to make up my Accounts to you: For so well known is your Love to us, that tho' you would no more do an unjust thing, than, by God's Grace, we should desire you; yet this same ill-willing World might think it was like making up Accounts to one's Self.

Do, my dearest Child, get me off of this Difficulty, and I *can* have no other; for already I am in Hopes I have hit upon a Contrivance to improve the Estate, and to better the Condition of the Tenants at the same time, at least, not to worst them, and which I hope, will please every body: But I will acquaint Mr. *Longman* with this, and take his Advice; for I will not be too troublesome either to you, my dear Child, or to your Spouse. — If I could act so for his Interest, as not to be a Burden, what happy Creatures should we both be in our own Minds! We find ourselves more and more respected by every one; and, so far as shall be consistent with our new Trust, we will endeavour to deserve it, that we may interest as many as know us, in our own good Wishes and Prayers for both your Happiness.

BUT

BUT let me say, how much convinced I am by the Reasons you give for not taking to us any of our Relations. Every one of those Reasons has its Force with us. How happy are we to have so prudent a Daughter to advise with! And I think myself obliged to promise this, That whatever I do for any of them above the Amount of Forty Shillings at one Time, I will take your Direction in it, that your wise Hints of making every one continue their Industry, and not to rely upon Favour, instead of Merit, may be followed. I am sure this is the way to make them *happier*, as well as *better* Men and Women; for, as I have often thought, if one were to have an Hundred Pounds a Year in good Comings-in, it would not do without Industry; and with that, one may do with a Quarter of it, and less.

IN short, my dear Child, your Reasons are so good, that I wonder they came not into my Head before, and then I needed not to have troubled you about the Matter: But yet it ran in my own Thought, that I could not like to be an Incroacher: — For I hate a dirty thing; and in the midst of my Distresses, never could be guilty of one: Thank God for it!

YOU rejoice our Hearts beyond Expression at the Hope you give us of receiving Letters from you, now-and-then: To be sure it will be the chief Comfort of our Lives, next to seeing you, as we are put in hope we sometimes shall. But yet, my dear Child, don't let us put you to Inconvenience, neither. Pray, don't! You'll have enough upon



on your Hands without — To be sure you will.

THE Workmen have made a good Progress, and wish for Mr. *Longman* to come down; as we also do.

YOU need not be afraid we should think you proud, or lifted up with your Condition. You have weather'd the first Dangers; and but for your fine Cloaths and Jewels, we should not see any Difference, indeed we should not, between our dear *Pamela*, and the much respected Mrs. *B.* — But God has given you too much Sense to be proud or lifted up. I remember, in your former Writings, a Saying of the 'Squire's, speaking of you, my dear Child, That it was for Persons who were not used to Praise, and did not deserve it, to be proud of it\*: In like sort, one may say, it is for Persons of little Sense to be proud; but you, my dear Child, every one sees, are *above* it: And that, methinks, is a proud Word; Is it not? If one was not, — I don't know how — half-stupid, I believe — one would be raised by your high Style of Writing: But I should be more than half-stupid, I am sure, to aim at it.

EVERY Day brings us Instances of the good Name his Honour and you, my dear Child, have left behind you, in this Country. Here comes one, and here comes another, and a third, and a fourth; and, Goodman *Andrews*, cries one, and, Goody *Andrews*, cries another —

\* See Vol. II. p. 131.

(and some call us Mr. and Mrs. but we like the other full as well) When heard you from his Honour? — How does his Lady do? — What a charming Couple are they! — How lovingly they live! — What an Example do they give to all about them! — Then one cries, God bless 'em both; and another cries, *Amen*; and so says a third, and a fourth: And all say, But when do you expect them down again? — Such-an-one longs to see 'em; — and such-an-one will ride a Day's Journey, to have but a Sight of 'em at Church. — And then they say, how this Gentleman praises them, and that Lady admires them. — O my dear Child! what an Happiness is this! How do your poor Mother and I stand fixed to the Earth, to hear both your Praises; our Tears trickling down our Cheeks, and our Hearts heaving, as if they would burst with Joy, till we are forced to take Leave in half Words, and hand-in-hand go in together, to bless God, and bless you both! — O my Daughter! what a happy Couple have God and you made us!

YOUR poor Mother is very anxious about her dear Child. I will not touch upon a Matter so very irksome to you to hear of. But tho' the Time may be some Months off, she every Hour prays for your Safety and Happiness, and for all the Increase of Felicity that his Honour's generous Heart can wish for. This is all we will say, at present: Only, that we are, with  
continued

continued Prayers and Blessings, my dearest Child,

*Your loving Father and Mother,*

J. and E. ANDREWS.

Yet one Word more! — and that is — Our *Duty* to your honoured Husband. We must say so now; tho' he forbid us so often before. You cannot, my dear Child, imagine how I was ashamed to have my poor Letter shewn to him. I hardly remember what I wrote; but it was from my Heart, I'm sure; so I needed not to keep a Copy: For an honest Mind must always be the same, in Cases that cannot admit of Change, such as those of my Thankfulness to God, and to him. But don't shew him all I write; for I shall be afraid of what I say, if I think any body but our Daughter sees it, who knows how to allow for her poor Parents Defects.

---

## LETTER VI.

*From Lady DAVERS to Mrs. B*

*My dear PAMELA,*

I HAD intended to have been with you before this; but my Lord has been a little indisposed with the Gout, and *Jackey*, too, has had an Intermittent Fever; but they are pretty well reco-



vered, and it shall not be long before I see you, now I understand you are returned from your *Kentish* Expedition.

WE have been exceedingly diverted with your Papers. You have given us, by their Means, many a delightful Hour, that otherwise would have hung heavy upon us; and we are all charm'd with you. Lady *Betty*, as well as her noble Mamma, has always been of our Party, whenever we have read your Accounts. She is a dear generous Lady, and has shed many a Tear over them, as indeed we all have; and my Lord has not been unmov'd, nor *Jackey* neither, at some of your Distresses and Reflections. Indeed, *Pamela*, you are a charming Creature, and an Ornament to our Sex. We wanted to have had you among us an hundred times, as we read, that we might have lov'd, and kiss'd, and thank'd you.

BUT, after all, my Brother, generous and noble as he was, when your Trials were over, was a strange wicked young Fellow; and happy it was for you both, that he was so cleverly caught in the Trap he had laid for your Virtue.

I CAN assure you, my Lord longs to see you, and will accompany me; for, he says, he has but a faint Idea of your Person. I tell him, and tell them all, that you are the finest Girl, and the most improv'd in Person and Mind, I ever beheld; and I am not afraid, altho' they should imagine all they can in your Favour, from my Account of you, that they will be disappointed when they see you, and converse with you. But one  
thing

thing more you must do for us, and then we will love you still more; and that is, You must send us the rest of your Papers, down to your Marriage at least; and further, if you have written further: For we all long to see the rest, as you relate it, tho' we know in general what has passed.

You leave off \* with an Account of an angry Letter I wrote to my Brother, to persuade him to give you your Liberty, and a Sum of Money; not doubting but his Designs would end in your Ruin, and, I own it, not wishing he would marry you; for little did I know of your Merit and Excellence, nor could I, but for your Letters so lately sent me, have had any Notion of either. — I don't question but, if you have recited my passionate Behaviour to you, when I was at the Hall, I shall make a ridiculous Figure enough; but I will forgive all that, for the sake of the Pleasure you *have* given me, and will still further give me, if you comply with my Request.

LADY *Betty* says, It is the best Story she has heard, and the most instructive; and she longs to have the Conclusion of it in your own Words. She says now-and-then, What a hopeful Brother you have, Lady *Davers*! — O these intriguing Gentlemen! — What Rogueries do they not commit! I should have had a fine Husband of him, had I receiv'd your Proposal! The *dear Pamela* would have run in his Head, and had I been the first Lady in the Kingdom, I

\* See Vol. II. p. 29. & 394.

should have stood but a poor Chance in his Esteem; for, you see, his Designs upon her began \*early.

SHE says, You had a good Heart to go back again to him, when the violent Wretch had driven you from him on such a slight Occasion: But yet, she thinks, the Reasons you give † in your Relation, and your Love for him, (which then you began to discover was your Case) as well as the Event, shew'd you did right.

BUT we'll tell you all our Judgments, when we have read the rest of your Accounts. So pray send them, as soon as you can, to (I won't write myself Sister till then)

*Your affectionate, &c.*

B. DAVERS.

## LETTER VII.

*My dear good Lady,*

YOU have done me great Honour in the Letter your Ladyship has been pleased to send me; and it is an high Pleasure to me, now all is so happily over, that my poor Papers were in the least diverting to you, and to such honourable and worthy Persons as your Ladyship is pleased to mention. I could wish, my dear Lady, I might be favour'd with such Re-

\* See Vol. I. p. 108. l. 12. † See Vol. II. p. 17. to 19.



marks on my Conduct, (so nakedly set forth, without any Imagination that they would ever appear in such an Assembly) as may be of Use to me in my future Life; and make me, by that means, more worthy than it is otherwise possible I can be, of the Honour to which I am raised. Do, dearest Lady, favour me so far: I am prepared to receive Blame, and to benefit by it, and cannot expect Praise so much from my *Actions* as from my *Intentions*; for, indeed, *these* were always just and honourable: But why, even for these, do I talk of Praise? since, being prompted by Impulses I could not resist, it can be no Merit in me, to have been govern'd by them.

As to the Papers following those in your Ladyship's Hands, when I say, that they must needs appear impertinent to such Judges, after what you know, I dare say, your Ladyship will not insist upon them; yet I will not scruple briefly to mention what they contain.

ALL my Dangers and Trials were happily at an End: So that they only contain " The Conversations that pass'd between your Ladyship's  
" generous Brother and me; his kind Assurances of honourable Love to me; my Acknowledgements of Unworthiness to him;  
" Mrs. *Jewkes's* respectful Change of Behaviour towards me; Mr. *B's* Reconciliation to Mr. *Williams*; his introducing me to the good  
" Families in the Neighbourhood, and avowing before them his honourable Intentions. A  
" Visit from my honest Father, who (not know-

“ ing what to conclude from the Letter I wrote  
“ to him before I return'd to your honoured  
“ Brother, desiring my Papers from him) came  
“ in great Anxiety of Heart to know the worst,  
“ doubting I had at last been caught by a Stra-  
“ ragem that had ended in my Ruin. His  
“ joyful Surprize to find how happy I was likely  
“ to be. All the Hopes given me, answer'd,  
“ by the private Celebration of our Nuptials.  
“ — An Honour so much above all that my  
“ utmost Ambition could make me aspire to,  
“ and which I never can deserve! — Your  
“ Ladyship's Arrival, and Anger, not knowing I  
“ was actually marry'd, but supposing me a vile  
“ wicked Creature; in which Case I should  
“ have deserved the worst of Usage. Mr. B.'s  
“ angry Lessons to me, for daring to interfere,  
“ tho' I thought in the tenderest and most duti-  
“ ful Manner, between your Ladyship and  
“ himself. The most acceptable Goodness and  
“ Favour of your Ladyship afterwards to me,  
“ of which, as becomes me, I shall ever retain  
“ the most grateful Sense. My Return to this  
“ sweet Mansion in a manner so different from  
“ my quitting it, where I had been so happy  
“ for Four Years, in paying my Duty to the  
“ best of Mistresses, your Ladyship's excellent  
“ Mother, to whose Goodness, in taking me  
“ from my poor honest Parents, and giving  
“ me what Education I have, I owe, under  
“ God, my Happiness. The Joy of good Mrs.  
“ *Jervis*, Mr. *Longman*, and all the Servants,  
“ on this Occasion. Mr. B.'s acquainting me  
“ with

“ with Miss *Godfrey's* Affair, and presenting to  
“ me the pretty Miss *Goodwin*, at the Dairy-  
“ house. Our Appearance at Church ; the  
“ Favour of the Gentry in the Neighbourhood,  
“ who, knowing your Ladyship had not disdain'd  
“ to look upon me, and to be favourable to me,  
“ came the more readily into a neighbourly Inti-  
“ macy with me, and still so much the more  
“ readily, as the continued Kindness of my dear  
“ Benefactor, and his condescending Deport-  
“ ment to me before them, (as if I had been  
“ worthy of the Honour done me) did Credit  
“ to his own generous Act.”

THESE, my Lady, down to my good Parents setting out to this Place, in order to be settled, by my honoured Benefactor's Bounty, in the *Kentish* Farm, are the most material Contents of my remaining Papers: And tho' they might be the most agreeable to those for whom only they were written, yet, *as* they were principally Matters of course, after what your Ladyship has with you ; *as* the Joy of my fond Heart can be better judg'd of by your Ladyship, than describ'd by me ; and *as* your Ladyship is acquainted with all the Particulars that can be worthy of any other Person's Notice but my dear Parents ; I am sure your Ladyship will dispense with your Commands : And I make it my humble Request, that you will.

FOR, Madam, you must needs think, that *when* my Doubts were dispell'd ; *when* I was confident all my Trials were over ; *when* I had a Prospect before me of being so abundantly rewarded



rewarded for what I had suffer'd; *when* every Hour rose upon me with new Delight, and fraught with fresh Instances of generous Kindness from such a dear Gentleman, my Master, my Benefactor, the Son of my honoured Lady; your Ladyship must needs think, I say, that I must be *too* much affected, my Heart must be *too* much open'd; and especially as it then (reliev'd from its past Anxieties and Fears, which had kept down and damp'd the latent Flame) first discover'd to me Impressions of which before I hardly thought it susceptible. — So that it is scarce possible, that my *Joy* and my *Prudence*, if I were to be try'd by such Judges of Delicacy and Decorum, as Lord and Lady *Davers*, the honoured Countess, and Lady *Betty*, could be so *intimately*, so *laudably* coupled, as were to be wish'd: Altho' indeed the continued Sense of my Unworthiness, and the Disgrace the dear Gentleman would bring upon himself, by his generous Goodness to me, always went hand-in-hand with that my *Joy* and my *Prudence*; and what these Considerations took from the *former*, being added to the *latter*, kept me steadier and more equal to myself, than otherwise it was possible such a young Creature as I could have been.

WHEREFORE, my dear good Lady, I hope I stand excus'd, and shall not bring upon myself the Censure of being disobedient to your Commands.

BESIDES, Madam, since you inform me, that my good Lord *Davers* will attend your Ladyship

ship hither, I should never dare to look his Lordship in the Face, if all the Emotions of my Heart, on such affecting Occasions, stood confess'd to his Lordship; and, indeed, if I am ashamed they should to your Ladyship, and to the Countess, and Lady *Betty*, whose Goodness might induce you all Three to think favourably, in such Circumstances, of one who is of your own Sex, how would it concern me, that the same should appear before such Gentlemen as my Lord and his Nephew? — Indeed I could not look up to either of them, in the Sense of this. — And give me Leave to hope, that some of the Scenes, in the Letters your Ladyship had, were not read to Gentlemen: Your Ladyship must needs know which I mean, and will think of my Two grand Trials of all. For tho' I was the innocent Subject of wicked Attempts, and so cannot, I hope, suffer in any one's Opinion, for what I could not help; yet, for your dear Brother's sake, as well as for the Decency of the Matter, one would not, when one shall have the Honour to appear before my Lord and his Nephew, be look'd upon, methinks, with that Levity of Eye and Thought, which perhaps hard-hearted Gentlemen may pass upon one, by reason of those very Scenes, which would move Pity and Concern, in a good Lady's Breast, for a poor Creature so attempted.

So, my dear Lady, be pleased to let me know, if the Gentlemen *have* heard all. — I hope they have not. — And be pleased also to point

point out to me such Parts of my Conduct as deserve Blame: Indeed, I will try to make a good Use of your Censure, and am sure I shall be thankful for it; — for it will make me hope to be more and more worthy of the Honour I have, of being exalted into such a distinguish'd Family, and the Right the best of Gentlemen has given me to style myself

*Your Ladyship's most humble  
and most obliged Servant,*

P. B.

## LETTER VIII.

*From Lady DAVERS, in Reply.*

*My dear PAMELA,*

**Y**OU have given us all a great Disappointment, in declining to oblige me with the Sequel of your Papers. I was a little out of Humour with you at first; — I must own I was: — For I cannot bear Denial, when my Heart is set upon any thing. But Lady *Betty* became your Advocate, and said, She thought you very excusable; since, no doubt, there might be many tender things, circumstanc'd as you were, which might be well enough for your Parents to see, but for nobody else; and Relations on our Side least of all, whose future Intimacy, and frequent Visits, might give Occasions for Raillery and Remarks, that might not  
be



be always agreeable. I regarded her Apology for you the more, because I knew it was a great Balk to her, that you did not comply with my Request. But now, Child, when you know me more, you'll find, that if I am oblig'd to give up one Point, I always insist upon another, as near it as I can, in order to see if it be only *one* thing I am to be refused, or *every* thing; in which last Case I know how to take my Measures, and resent.

Now then, this is what I insist upon: That you correspond with me in the same manner you did with your Parents, and acquaint me with every Passage that is of Concern to you; beginning with your Accounts, how you spent your Time, both of you, when you were in *Kent*; for, you must know, we are all taken with your Duty to your Parents, and the Discretion of the good Couple, and think you have given a very edifying Example of filial Piety to all who shall hear your Story; for if so much Duty is owing to Parents, where nothing can be done for one, how much more is it to be expected, where there is a Power to add to the natural Obligation, all the Comforts and Conveniences of Life? We People in upper Life, you must know, love to hear how Gratitude and unexpected Benefits operate upon honest Minds, who have little more than plain artless Nature for their Guide; and we flatter ourselves with the Hopes of many a delightful Hour, by your Means, in this our solitary Situation; as it will be, if we are obliged to pass  
the

the next Winter in it, as my Lord and the Earl threaten me, and the Countess, and Lady *Betty*, that we shall. Then let us hear of every thing that gives you Joy or Trouble: And if my Brother carries you to Town, for the Winter, while he attends Parliament, the Advices you will be able to give us of what passes in *London*, and of the publick Entertainments and Diversions he will take you to, as you will relate them from your own artless and natural Observations, will be as diverting to us, as if we were at them ourselves. For a young Creature, of your good Understanding, to whom all these Things will be quite new, will give us, perhaps, a better Taste of them, their Beauties and Defects, than we might have before. For we People of Quality go to those Places, dress'd out and adorn'd, in such Manner, outvying one another, as if we consider'd ourselves as so many Parts of the publick Entertainment; and are too much pleas'd with ourselves, to be able so to attend to what we see, as to form a right Judgment of it: And, indeed, we, some of us, behave with so much Indifference to the Entertainment, as if we thought ourselves above being diverted by what we come to see; and as if our View was rather to trifle away our Time, than to improve ourselves, by attending to the Story or the Action.

SEE, *Pamela*, I shall not make an unworthy Correspondent altogether; for I can get into thy grave way, and moralize a little now-and-then: And if you'll promise to oblige me

by your constant Correspondence in this way, and divest yourself of all Restraint, as if you were writing to your Parents, (and I can tell you, you will write to one who will be as candid and as favourable to you as they can be) then I am sure we shall have Truth and Nature from you; and these are Things which we are generally so much lifted above, by our Conditions, that we hardly know what they are.

BUT I have written enough for one Letter: And yet, having more to say, I will, after this, send another, without waiting for your Answer, which you may give to both together; and am, mean time,

*Yours, &c.*

B. DAVERS.

---

## L E T T E R   I X.

*Dear* PAMELA,

I AM very glad thy honest Man has let thee into the Affair of *Sally Godfrey*. But, pr'ythee, *Pamela*, give us an Account of the Manner in which he did it, and of thy Thoughts upon it; for that is a critical Case; and according as he has represented it, so shall I know what to say of it before you and him: For I would not make Mischief between you for the World.

THIS,



THIS, let me tell you, will be a trying Part of your Conduct. For he loves the Child; and will judge of you by your Conduct towards it. He dearly lov'd her Mother; and, notwithstanding her Fault, she well deserv'd it: For she was a sensible, ay, and a modest Lady, and of an ancient and genteel Family. But he was Heir to a noble Estate, was of a bold and enterprising Spirit, fond of Intrigue — Don't let this concern you — You'll have the greater Happiness and Merit too, if you can hold him: And 'tis my Opinion, if any body can, you will. — Then he did not like the young Lady's Mother, who sought artfully to intrap him. So that the poor Girl, divided between her Inclination for him, and her Duty to her designing Mother, gave into the Plot upon him; and he thought himself, — vile Wretch as he was, for all that! — at Liberty to set up Plot against Plot; and the poor Lady's Honour was the Sacrifice.

I HOPE you spoke well of her to him. I hope you receiv'd the Child kindly. — I hope you had Presence of Mind to do this. — For it was a nice Part to act; and all his Observations were up, I dare say, on the Occasion. — Do, let me hear how it was. There's my good *Pamela*, do. And write, I charge you, freely, and without Restraint; for altho' I am not your Mother, yet am I *his* elder Sister, you know — and, as such — come, I will say so, in hopes you'll oblige me — *your* Sister, and so intitled to expect a Compliance with my Request:

Request: For is there not a Duty, in degree, to elder Sisters from younger?

As to our Remarks upon your Behaviour, they have been much to your Credit, I can tell you that: But, nevertheless, I will, to encourage you to enter into this requested Correspondence with me, consult Lady *Betty*, and will go over your Papers again, and try to find fault with your Conduct; and if we can see any thing censurable, will freely let you know our Minds.

BUT, before-hand, I can tell you, we shall be agreed in one Opinion; and that is, that we know not who would have acted as you have done, upon the Whole.

So, *Pamela*, you see I put myself upon the same Foot of Correspondence with you. — Not that I will promise to answer every Letter: No, you must not expect that. — Your Part will be a kind of Narrative purposely designed to entertain us here; and I hope to receive Six, Seven, Eight, or Ten Letters, as it may happen, before I return One: But such a Part I will bear in it, as shall let you know our Opinion of your Proceedings, and Relations of Things. And as you wish to be found fault with, as you say, you shall freely have it, (tho' not in a splenetick or ill-natur'd way) as often as you give Occasion. Now, you must know, *Pamela*, I have Two Views in this: One is, to see how a Man of my Brother's Spirit, who has not deny'd himself any genteel Liberties, (for it must be own'd, he never was a common

Town Rake, and had always Dignity in his Roguery) will behave himself to you, and in Wedlock, which used to be freely sneer'd by him: The next, that I may love you more and more, which it will be enough to make me do, I dare say, as by your Letters I shall be more and more acquainted with you, as well as by Conversation; so that you can't be off, if you would.

I know, however, you will have one Objection to this; and that is, that your Family Affairs will require your Attention, and not give you the Time you used to have for this Imployment. But consider, Child, the Station you are rais'd to, does not require you to be quite a domestick Animal. You are lifted up to the Rank of a Lady, and you must act up to it, and not think of setting such an Example, as will derive upon you the Ill-will and Censure of other Ladies. — For will any of our Sex visit one who is continually imploying herself in such Works as either must be a Reproach to herself, or to them? — You'll have nothing to do but to give Orders. You will consider yourself as the Task-mistress, and the common Herd of Female Servants as so many Negroes directing themselves by your Nod; or yourself as the Master-wheel, in some beautiful Piece of Mechanism, whose dignify'd grave Motion is to set a-going all the Under-wheels, with a Velocity suitable to their respective Parts. — Let your Servants, under your Direction, do all that relates to Household Management:



Management : They cannot write to entertain and instruct as you can. So what will you have to do?—I'll answer my own Question: In the first Place, Endeavour to please your Sovereign Lord and Master; and, let me tell you, any other Woman in *England*, be her Quality ever so high, would have found enough to do to succeed in that. Secondly, To receive and pay Visits, in order, for his Credit as well as your own, to make your fashionable Neighbours fond of you. Then, thirdly, You will have Time upon your Hands (as your Monarch himself rises early, and is tolerably regular for such a Brazen-face as he has been) to write to me, in the manner I have mentioned, and expect; and I see plainly, by your Style, that nothing can be easier for you, than to do this.

AND thus, and with Reading, may your Time be filled up with Reputation to yourself, and Delight to others, till a Fourth Imployment puts itself upon you; and that is, (Shall I tell you in one Word, without mincing the Matter?) a Succession of brave Boys, to perpetuate a Family that has for many Hundred Years been esteem'd worthy and eminent, and which, being now reduced, in the direct Line, to him and me, *expects* it from you; or else, let me tell you, (nor will I balk it) my Brother, by descending to the wholesome Cot—Excuse me, *Pamela*—will want one Apology for his Conduct, be as excellent as you may.

I SAY this, Child, not to reflect upon you, since the thing is done; for I love you dearly,

and will love you more and more—but to let you know what is expected from you, and to encourage you in the Prospect that is already opening to you both, and to me, who have the Welfare of the Family I sprung from so much at Heart, although I know this will be attended with some Anxieties to a Mind so thoughtful and apprehensive as yours seems to be.

O B U T this puts me in mind of your Solitude for fear the Gentlemen should have seen every thing contain'd in your Letters.— But this I will particularly speak to in a Third Letter, having fill'd my Paper on all Sides: And am, till then,

*Tours, &c.*

B. DAVERS.

You see, and I hope will take it as a Favour, that I break the Ice, and begin first in the indispensably expected Correspondence between us.

## L E T T E R X.

*From the same.*

A N D so, *Pamela*, you are very solicitous to know, If the Gentlemen have seen every Part of your Papers? I can't say but they have. Nor, except in regard to the Reputation of your saucy Man, do I see, why the Parts you  
hint

hint at might not be read by those to whom the rest might be shewn.

I CAN tell you, Lady *Betty*, who is a very nice and delicate Lady, had no Objections to any Part, tho' read before Men : Only now-and-then crying out — O the vile Man! — See, Lord *Davers*, what Wretches you Men are! — And, commiserating you, Ah! the poor *Pamela*! — And expressing her Impatience to hear on, how you escaped at this time, and at that, and rejoicing in your Escape. And now-and-then, — O Lady *Davers*! what a vile Brother you have! — I hate him perfectly. — The poor Girl cannot be made Amends for all this, tho' he has marry'd her. Who, that knows these things of him, would wish him to be hers, with all his Advantages of Person, Mind, and Fortune? — And such-like Expressions in your Praise, and condemning him and his wicked Attempts.

BUT I can tell you this, that except one had heard every Tittle of your Danger; how near you were to Ruin, and how little he stood upon taking any Measures to effect his vile Purposes, even daring to attempt you in the Presence of a *good* Woman, which was a Wickedness that every *wicked* Man could not be guilty of; — I say, except one had known these things, one should not have been able to judge of the Merit of your Resistance, and how shocking those Attempts were to your Virtue, insomuch that Life itself was indanger'd by th

Nor, let me tell you, could I, in par-



ticular, have so well justify'd him for marrying you, (I mean with respect to his own proud and haughty Temper of Mind) if there had been Room to think he could have had you upon easier Terms.

It was necessary, Child, on Twenty Accounts, that we, your and his Well-wishers and Relations, should know, that he had try'd every Stratagem, and made use of every Contrivance, to subdue you to his Purpose, before he marry'd you: And how would it have answer'd to his intrepid Character, and Pride of Heart, had we not been particularly let into the Nature of those Attempts, which you so nobly resisted, as to convince us all, that you have deserved the good Fortune you have met with, as well as all the kind and respectful Treatment he can possibly shew you?

NOR ought you to be concerned who sees any the most tender Parts of your Story, except, as I said, for *his* sake; for it must be a very unvirtuous Mind, that can form any other Ideas from what you relate, than those of Terror and Pity for you. Your Expressions are too delicate to give the nicest Ear Offence, except at him. — You paint no Scenes but such as make his Wickedness odious; and that Gentleman, much more Lady, must have a very corrupt Heart, who could, from such Circumstances of Distress, make any Reflections but what should be to your Honour, and in Abhorrence of such Actions. Indeed, Child, I am so convinc'd of this, that by this Rule I would  
judge

judge of any Man's Heart in the World, better than by a Thousand Declarations and Protestations. I do assure you, rakish as *Jackey* is, and freely as I doubt not that Lord *Davers* has formerly lived, (for he has been a Man of Pleasure) they gave me, by their Behaviour on these tenderer Occasions, Reason to think they had more Virtue than not to be apprehensive for your Safety; and my Lord several times exclaim'd, that he could not have thought his Brother such a Libertine, neither.

BESIDES, Child, were not these things written in Confidence to your Mother? And, bad as his Actions were to you, if you had not recited all you could recite, would there not have been Room for any one who should have seen what you wrote, to imagine they had been still worse?—And how could the Terror be supposed to have had such Effects upon you, as to indanger your Life, without imagining you had undergone the worst that a vile Man *could* offer, unless you had told us what that was which he *did* offer, and so put a Bound, as it it were, to one's apprehensive Imaginations of what you suffer'd, which otherwise must have been injurious to your Purity, tho' you could not help it?

MOREOVER, *Pamela*, it was but doing Justice to the Libertine himself, to tell your Mother the whole Truth, that she might know he was not so very abandon'd, but that he could stop short of the Execution of his wicked Purposes, which, he apprehended, if pursued,

would destroy the Life, that, of all Lives, he would chuse to preserve; and you ow'd also thus much to your Parents Peace of Mind, that after all their distracting Fears for you, they might see they had Reason to rejoice in an uncontaminated Daughter. And one cannot but reflect, now all is over, and he has made you his Wife, that it must be a Satisfaction to the wicked Man, as well as to yourself, that he was not more guilty than he *was*, and that he took no more Liberties than he *did*.

FOR my own part, I must say, that I could not have accounted for your Fits, by any Descriptions short of those you give; and had you been less particular in the Circumstances, I should have judg'd he had been still *worse*, and your Person, tho' not your Mind, less pure, than his Pride would expect from the Woman he should marry: For this is the Case of all Rakes, that, tho' they indulge in all manner of Libertinism themselves, there is no Class of Men who exact greater Delicacy than they, from the Persons they marry; tho' they care not how bad they make the Wives, the Sisters, and Daughters of others.

I HAVE run into Length again; so will only add, (and send all my Three Letters together) that we all blame you, in some degree, for bearing the wicked *Jewkes* in your Sight, after the most impudent Assistance she gave to his lewd Attempt; much less, we think, ought you to have left her in her Place, and rewarded her: For her Vileness could hardly be equall'd  
by



by the worst Actions of the most abandon'd Procurefs.

I K N O W the Difficulties you lay under, in his arbitrary Will, and in his Intercession for her : But Lady *Betty* rightly observes, that he knew what a vile Woman she was, when he put you into her Power, and no doubt employ'd her, because he was sure she would answer all his Purposes; and that therefore she should have had very little Opinion of the Sincerity of his Reformation, while he was so solicitous in keeping her there, and in having her put upon a foot, in the Present on your Nuptials, with honest *Jervis*.

S H E would, she says, had she been in your Case, have had one Struggle for her Dismission, let it have been taken as it would; and he that was so well pleased with your Virtue, must have thought this a natural Consequence of it, if he was in earnest to reclaim.

I K N O W not whether you shew him all I write, or not : But I have written this last Part in the Cover, as well for want of Room, as that you may keep it from him, if you please : Tho', if you think it will serve any good End, I am not against shewing to him all I write. For I must ever speak my Mind, tho' I were to smart for it; and that nobody can, or has the Heart to make me do, but my bold Brother. So, *Pamela*, for this time,

*Adieu.*

L E T

## LETTER XI.

*My good Lady,*

I AM honour'd with your Ladyship's Three Letters, the Contents of which are highly obliging to me: And I should be inexcusable, if I did not comply with your Injunctions, and be very proud and thankful for your Ladyship's Condescension in accepting of my poor Scribble, and promising me such a rich and invaluable Return; of which you have given me already such ample and such delightful Instances. I will not plead my Defects, to excuse my Obedience. I only fear, that the Awe which will be always upon me, when I write to your Ladyship, will lay me under so great a Restraint, that I shall fall short even of the Merit my Papers have already made for me, thro' your kind Indulgence. But nevertheless, sheltering myself under your Goodness, I will chearfully comply with every thing your Ladyship expects from me, that is in my Power to do.

You will give me Leave, Madam, to put into some little Method, the Particulars of what you desire of me; that I may speak to them all: For since you are so good as to excuse me from sending the rest of my Papers, (which indeed would not bear in many Places) I will omit nothing that shall tend to convince you of my Readiness to obey you in every thing else.

FIRST,

FIRST, then, your Ladyship would have the Particulars of the happy Fortnight we pass'd in *Kent*, on one of the most agreeable Occasions that could befall me.

SECONDLY, An Account of the Manner in which your dear Brother acquainted me with the affecting Story of Miss *Godfrey*, and my Behaviour upon it.

AND, thirdly, I presume, your Ladyship, and Lady *Betty*, expect, that I should say something upon your welcome Remarks on my Conduct towards Mrs. *Fewkes*.

THE other Particulars contained in your Ladyship's kind Letters will naturally fall under one or other of these Three Heads. — But expect not, my Lady, tho' I begin in Method thus, that I shall keep up to it. If your Ladyship will not allow for me, and keep in View the poor *Pamela Andrews* in all I write, but will have Mrs. *B.* in your Eye, what will become of me? — But, indeed, I promise myself so much Improvement from this Correspondence, that I enter upon it with a greater Delight than I can express, notwithstanding the mingled Awe and Diffidence, that will accompany me in every Part of the agreeable Task.

To begin with the first Article;

YOUR dear Brother, and my honest Parents, (I know your Ladyship will expect from me, that on all Occasions I should speak of them



them with the Duty that becomes a good Child ; I say then, your dear Brother, and they) and myself, set out on the *Monday* Morning for *Kent*, passing thro' *St. Albans* to *London*, at both which Places we stopp'd a Night ; for our dear Benefactor would make us take easy Journeys ; and on *Wednesday* Evening we arriv'd at the sweet Place allotted for the good Couple. We were attended only by *Abraham* and *John*, on Horseback ; for Mr. *Colbrand*, having sprain'd his Foot, was in the Travelling-Coach with the Cook and House-Maid, and *Polly Barlow*, a genteel new Servant, whom Mrs. *Brooks* recommended to wait on me.

MR. *Longman* had been down there for a Fortnight, employ'd in settling the Terms of an additional Purchase to this pretty well-wooded and well-water'd Estate ; and the Account he gave of his Proceedings was very satisfactory to his honour'd Principal. He told us, He had much ado to dissuade the Tenants from pursuing a form'd Resolution of meeting their Landlord on Horseback, at some Miles Distance ; for he had inform'd them when he expected us : But knowing how desirous Mr. *B.* was of being retired, while he staid here this time, he had ventured to assure them, that when every thing was settled, and the new Purchase actually enter'd upon, they would have his Presence among them now-and-then ; and that he would introduce them all at different times to their worthy Landlord, before we left the Country.

THE House, my good Lady, is large, and very commodious; and we found every thing about it, and in it, exceeding neat and convenient; which was owing to the worthy Mr. *Longman's* Care and Direction. The Ground is well-stock'd, the Barns and Out-houses in excellent Repair, and my poor Father and Mother have only to wish, that they and I may may be deserving of half the Goodness we experience from the bountiful Mind of your good Brother.

BUT indeed, my Lady, I have the Pleasure of discovering every Day more and more, that there is not a better dispos'd and more generous Gentleman in the World than himself, inso-much that, I verily think, he has not been so careful to conceal his *bad* Actions as his *good* ones. His Heart is naturally beneficent, and his Beneficence is the Gift of God to him, for the most excellent Purposes, as I have often been so free as to tell him. — Pardon me, my dear Lady; I wish I may not be impertinently grave: But I find a great many Instances of his considerate Charity, which hardly any body knew of, and which, since I have been his Almoner, could not avoid coming to my Knowledge. — But this, possibly, is no News to your Ladyship. Every body knows the generous Goodness of your *Own* Heart: Every one, that wanted Relief, tasted the Bounty of your excellent *Mother*, my late honour'd Lady: So that 'tis a *Family Grace*, and I have no need to speak of it to you, Madam.

THIS

THIS cannot, my dear Lady, I hope, be construed as if I would hereby suppose ourselves less oblig'd. Indeed I know nothing so God-like in human Nature as this Disposition to do Good to our Fellow-creatures; for is it not following immediately the Example of that gracious Providence, which every Minute is conferring Blessings upon us all, and by giving Power to the Rich, makes them but the Dispensers of its Benefits to those that want them? But yet, as there are but too many Objects of Compassion, and as the most beneficent Mind in the World cannot, like Omnipotence, do Good to all, how much are they oblig'd, who are distinguish'd from others? And this, kept in Mind, will always contribute to make the Benefited receive as *they ought* the Favours of the Obliger.

I KNOW not if I write to be understood in all I mean; but my grateful Heart is so over-fill'd, when it is imploy'd on this Subject, that, methinks, I want to say a great deal more, at the same time that I am apprehensive I say too much.—Yet, perhaps, the Copies of the Letters I here inclose to your Ladyship, (that mark'd [I.] written by me to my Father and Mother, on our Return hither from *Kent*; that mark'd [II.] from my dear Father in Answer to it, and that mark'd [III.] mine in Reply to his\*) will, (at the same time that they may convince your Ladyship, that I will conceal nothing from you,

\* See Letters I, II, III, of this Volume.



in the Course of this Correspondence, that may in the least amuse and divert you, or that may better explain our grateful Sentiments) in a great measure, answer what your Ladyship expects from me, as to the happy Fortnight we pass'd in *Kent*.

AND here I will conclude this Letter, chusing to suspend the Correspondence, till I know from your Ladyship, whether it will not be too low, too idle for your Attention; whether you will not dispense with your own Commands for my writing to you, when you see it is so little likely to answer what you may possibly expect from me; or whether, if you insist upon my scribbling, you would have me write in any other way, be less tedious, less serious—in short, less or more any thing. For all that is in my Power, your Ladyship may command from, Madam,

*Your obliged and faithful Servant,*

P. B.

Your dearest Brother, from whose Knowledge I would not keep any thing that shall take up any considerable Portion of my Time, gives me Leave to proceed in this Correspondence, if you command it; and is pleas'd to say, He will content himself to see such Parts of it, and *only* such Parts, as I shall shew him, or read to him. — Is not this very good, Madam? — O my Lady, you don't know how happy I am!

LET-

## LETTER XII.

*From Lady DAVERS to Mrs. B.*

*My dear PAMELA,*

**Y**OU very much oblige me by your chearful Compliance with my Request. I leave it intirely to you to write in what Manner you please, and as you shall be in the Humour to write, when you take up your Pen; for then I shall have you write with less Restraint: For, you must know, that what we admire in you, are Truth and Nature, and not studied or elaborate Epistles. We can hear at Church, or we can read in our Closets, fifty good Things that we expect not from you; but we cannot receive from any body else the Pleasure of Sentiments flowing with that artless Ease, which so much affects us when we read your Letters. Then, my sweet Girl, your Gratitude, your Prudence, your Integrity of Heart, your Humility, shine so much in all your Letters and Thoughts, that no Wonder my Brother loves you as he does!

BUT I shall make you proud, I doubt; and so by Praise ruin those Graces which we admire, and, but for that, cannot praise you too much. In my Conscience, if thou canst hold as thou hast begun, I believe thou wilt have him *all to thyself*, and that was, once, more than I thought any Woman on this Side the Seventieth

tieth Year of his Age would ever be able to say. The Letters to and from your Parents we are charm'd with, and the communicating of them to me, I take to be as great an Instance of your Confidence in me, as it is of your Judgment and Prudence; for you cannot but think, that we his Relations are a little watchful over your Conduct, and have our Eyes upon you, to observe what Use you are likely to make of the Power you have over your Man, with respect to your own Relations.

HITHERTO all is unexampled Prudence; and you take the right Method to reconcile even the proudest of us to your Marriage, and make us not only love you, but respect your Parents, because their Honesty will, I perceive, be their distinguishing Character, and they will not forget themselves, nor their former Condition.

I CAN tell you, you are exactly right; for if you were to be an *Incroacher*, as the good old Man calls it, my Brother would be one of the first to see it; and he would gradually think less and less of you, till possibly he might come to despise you, and to repent of his Choice: For the least Shadow of an Imposition, or low Cunning, or mean Selfishness, he cannot bear.

IN short, you're a charming Girl; and Lady *Betty* says so too; and, moreover, adds, That if he makes you not the best and *faithfullest* of Husbands, he cannot deserve you, for all his Fortune and Birth. — And, in my Heart, I begin to think so too.



BUT won't you oblige me with the Sequel of your Letter to your Father? for you promise, my dear charming Scribbler, in that you sent to me, to write again to his Letter; and I long to see how you answer the latter Part of it, about your Relations desiring already to come and live with him. I know what I *expect* from you. But, let it be what it will, send it to me exactly as you wrote it; and I shall see whether I have Reason to praise or to reprove you. For surely, *Pamela*, you must leave one Room to blame you for something. Indeed I can hardly bear the Thought, that you should so much excel as you do, and have more Prudence by Nature, as it were, than the best of us get in a Course of the genteelest Education, and with fifty Advantages, at least in Conversation, that *you* could not have, by reason of my Mother's retired Life while you were with her, and your close Attendance on her Person.

BUT I'll tell you what has been a great Improvement to you: It is your own Writings. This Itch of Scribbling has been a charming Help to you. For here, having a natural Fund of good Sense, and a Prudence above your Years, you have, with the Observations these have enabled you to make, been Flint and Steel too, as I may say, to yourself: So that you have struck *Fire* when you pleas'd, wanting nothing but a few dry'd Leaves, like the First Pair in old *Du Bartas*, to serve as Tinder to catch your animating Sparks. So that reading constantly, and thus using yourself to  
write,

write, and enjoying besides the Benefit of a good Memory, every thing you heard or read became your own; and not only so, but was improved by passing thro' more salubrious Ducts and Vehicles; like some fine Fruit grafted upon a common Free-stock, whose more exuberant Juices serve to bring to quicker and greater Perfection the downy Peach, or the smooth Nectarine with its crimson Blush.

REALLY, *Pamela*, I believe, I, too, shall improve by writing to you. — Why, you dear Saucy-face, at this Rate, you'll make every one that converses with you, better, and wiser, and *wittier* too, as far as I know, than they ever before thought there was *Room* for them to be.

As to my own Part, I begin to like what I have written myself, I think; and your Correspondence will possibly revive the poetical Ideas that used to fire my Mind, before I enter'd into the drowsy married Life; for my good Lord *Davers's* Turn happens not to be to Books; and so, by degrees, my Imagination was in a manner quench'd; and I, as a dutiful Wife should, endeavour'd to form my Taste by that of the Man I chose.

BUT after all, *Pamela*, you are not to be a little proud (I can tell you that) of my Correspondence; and I could not have thought it e'er would have come to this: But you'll have the Penetration to observe, that I am the more free and unreserved, to encourage *you* to write with-

out Restraint: For already you have made us a Family of Writers and Readers; so that Lord *Davers* himself is become inamour'd of your Letters, and desires of all things he may hear read every one that passes between us. Nay, *Jackey*, for that matter, who was the most thoughtless, whistling, sauntering Fellow you ever knew, and whose Delight in a Book ran no higher than a Song or a Catch, now comes in with an inquiring Face, and vows he'll set Pen to Paper, and turn Letter-writer himself; and intends (if my Brother won't take it amiss, he says) to begin to *you*, provided he could be sure of an Answer.

I HAVE twenty Things still to say; for you have unlocked all our Bosoms: And yet I intended not to write above Ten or a Dozen Lines when I began; only to tell you, that I would have you take your own Way, in your Subjects, and in your Style — And if you will but give me Hope, that you are in the Way I so much wish to have you in, I will then call myself your affectionate Sister; but, till then, it shall only barely be,

*Your Correspondent,*

B. D A V E R S.

You'll proceed with the Account of your *Kentish* Affair, I doubt not.

LET-



## L E T T E R XIII.

*My dear good Lady,*

WHAT kind, what generous things, are you pleased to say of your happy Correspondent! And what Reason have I to value myself on such an Advantage as is now before me, if I am capable of improving it as I ought, from a Correspondence with so noble and so admired a Lady! I wish I be not now proud indeed!—To be praised by such a Genius, and my honoured Benefactor's worthy Sister, whose Favour, next to his, it was always my chief Ambition to obtain, is what would be enough to fill with Vanity a steadier and a more equal Mind than mine.

I HAVE heard from my late honoured Lady, what a fine Pen her beloved Daughter was Mistress of, when she pleased to take it up: But I never could have had the Presumption, but from your Ladyship's own Motion, to hope to be, in any manner, the Subject of it, much less to be called your Correspondent.

INDEED, Madam, I *am* proud, *very* proud of this Honour, and consider it as such a Heightening to my Pleasures, as only *that* could give; and I will set about obeying your Lady without Reserve.

BUT permit me, in the first Place, to disclaim any Merit, from my own poor Writings, to that Improvement which your Goodness imputes to me. What I have to boast of that sort,

is owing principally, if it deserves Commendation, to my late excellent Lady. It is hardly to be imagined what Pains her Ladyship took with her poor Servant. Besides making me keep a Book of her Charities dispensed by my Hands, she caused me always to set down, in my Way, the Cases of the Distressed, their Grievs from their Misfortunes, and their Joys in her bountiful Relief; and so I was enter'd early into the various Turns, that affected worthy Hearts, and was taught the better to regulate my own, especially by the Help of the fine Observations which my good Lady used to make to me, when I read to her what I wrote. For many a time has her worthy Heart run over with Pleasure at my Remarks, and with Praises; and I was her good Girl, her dear *Pamela*, her hopeful Maiden; and she would sometimes snatch my Hand with Transport, and draw me to her, and vouchsafe to kiss me; and always was saying, what she would do for me, if God spared her, and I continued to be deserving.

O MY dear Lady! you cannot think what an Encouragement this condescending Behaviour and Goodness was to me! Indeed, Madam, you *cannot* think it.

I USED to throw myself at her Feet, and embrace her Knees; and, my Eyes streaming with Tears of Joy, would often cry, O continue to me, my dearest Lady, the Blessing of your Favour and kind Instructions, and it is all your happy, happy *Pamela* can wish for!

BUT

BUT I will proceed to obey your Ladyship, and write with as much Freedom as I possibly *can*: For you must not expect, that I can intirely divest myself of that Awe, which will necessarily lay me under a greater Restraint, than if I was writing to my Father and Mother, whose Partiality for their Daughter, made me, in a manner, secure of their good Opinions.

AND now, that I may shorten the Work before me, in the Account I am to give of the sweet Fortnight that we passed in *Kent*, I inclose not only the Copy of the Letter your Ladyship desired me to send you, but my Father's Answer to it, which, with those you have already, will set before your Ladyship all you want to see, in relation to the Desire some of my Kindred had to live with my Father, and my own Advice on the Occasion. And I am humbly confident you will join in Sentiment with me: For Persons are less doubtful of Approbation, when their Minds are incapable of dark Reserves, or such Views as they would be afraid should be detected by any watchful Observer of their Conduct: And your Ladyship gives me double Pleasure, that you are pleased to have an Eye upon mine; first, Because I hope it will be such as will generally bear the strictest Scrutiny; and, next, Because, when my Actions fall short of my Intentions, I presume to hope your Ladyship will be as kind a Monitor to me, as you are a Correspondent; and then I shall have an Opportunity to correct myself, and be, as near as my



slender Talents will permit, what your Ladyship would have me to be.

As the Letters I sent before, and those I now send, will let your Ladyship into several Particulars, such as a brief Description of the House and Farm, and your honoured Brother's Intentions of retiring thither now-and-then; of the Happiness and Gratitude of my dear Parents, and their Wishes to be able to deserve the Comforts his Goodness has heaped upon them; and that in stronger Lights than I am able to set them; I will only, in a summary manner, mention the rest: And, particularly,

THAT the Behaviour of my dear Benefactor to me, to my Parents, to Mr. *Longman*, and to the Tenants, was one continued Series of Benignity and Condescension. He endeavour'd, in every kind and generous way, to encourage the good Couple to be free and chearful with him; and, seeing them unable to get over that Awe and Respect which they owe him above all Mankind, and which they sought to pay him on all Occasions, he would take their Hands, and more than once called them by the nearest and dearest Names of Relationship, as if they were his own Parents; and I believe would have distinguished them oftener in this manner, but that he saw them too much affected with his Goodness to bear the Honour (as my dear Father says, in his first Letter) with *Equalness of Temper*; and he seemed always to delight in being particularly kind to them before Strangers, and before the Tenants, and before Mr. *Sorby*,  
and

and Mr. *Bennet*, and Mr. *Shepherd*, Three of the principal Gentlemen in the Neighbourhood, who, with their Ladies, came to visit us; and whose Visits we *all* returned; for your dear Brother would not permit my Father and Mother to decline the Invitation of those worthy Families.

JUDGE you, my dear Lady, with what a Joy these kind Distinctions, and this sweet Behaviour, must fill their honest Hearts: Judge of my grateful Sentiments and Acknowledgements, of these hourly Instances of his Goodness; and judge of the Respect with which this must inspire every one for the good Couple. And when once Mrs. *Bennet* had like to have said something of their former Condition, which she would have recalled in some Confusion; and when she could not, apologized for it; the dear Gentleman said, — All is well, Mrs. *Bennet*. No Apologies are necessary; and to shew you they are not, I'll tell you myself what you cannot have heard so particularly from others, and which, were I to endeavour to conceal, would be a Piece of Pride, as stupid as despicable: So, in a concise manner, he gave them an Account of my Story, so much to my Advantage, and so little to his own, in the ingenuous Relation of his Attempts upon me, that you can't imagine, Madam, how much the Gentry were affected by it; and how much, in particular, they applauded him for the Generosity of his Actions to me, and to my dear Parents: And your Ladyship will permit me to observe,  
that

that since the Matter is circumstanced as it is, Policy, as well as Nobleness of Mind, obliged the dear Gentleman to this Frankness and Acknowledgement; for, having said *worse* of himself, and as mean of my Parents Fortunes, as any one could think, what remained for the Hearers but to *applaud*, when he had left them no room to *reproach*, not so much as in Thought?

EVERY Day we rode out, or walked a little about the Grounds; and while we were there, he imploy'd Hands to cut a Vista thro' a Coppice, as they call it, or rather a little Wood, to a rising Ground, which fronting an old-fashioned Balcony, in the Middle of the House, he order'd it to be planted like a Grove, and a pretty Alcove to be erected on its Summit, of which he has sent them a Draught, drawn by his own Hand; and this, and a few other Alterations mentioned in my Letter to my Father, are to be finish'd against we go down next.

THE dear Gentleman was every Hour pressing me, while there, to take one Diversion or other; frequently upbraiding me, that I seem'd not to *chuse* any thing; urging me to propose sometimes what I could *wish* he should oblige me in, and not always to leave it to him to chuse for me; saying he was half afraid, that my constant Compliance with every thing he propos'd, laid me sometimes under a Restraint; and he would have me have a Will of my own, since it was impossible, that it could be such, as he should not take a Delight in conforming to it.

BUT,



BUT, when (as I told him) his Goodness for me, made him rather study what would oblige me, than himself, even to the Prevention of all my Wishes, how was it possible for me not to receive with Pleasure and Gratitude every Intimation from him, in such a manner, as that tho' it might seem to be the Effect of an implicit Obedience to his Will, yet was it (nor could it be otherwise) intirely agreeable to my own?

I WILL not trouble your Ladyship with any further Particulars relating to this happy Fortnight, which was made up all of white and unclouded Days, to the very last; and your Ladyship will judge, better than I can describe, what a Parting there was between my dear Parents, and their honoured Benefactor, and me.

WE set out, attended with the good Wishes of Crouds of Persons of all Degrees; for your dear Brother left behind him noble Instances of his Bounty; it being the *first* Time, as he bid Mr. *Longman* say, that he had been down among them since that Estate had been in his Hands.

BUT permit me, Madam, to observe, that I could not forbear, often, very often, in this happy Period, to thank God in private, for the blessed Terms upon which I was there, to what I should have been, had I gracelessly accepted of those which were tender'd to me; for your Ladyship will remember, that the *Kentish* Estate was to be Part of the Purchase of my Infamy\*.

\* See Vol. I. p. 315, 316.

WE return'd thro' *London* again, by the like easy Journeys, but tarry'd not to see any thing of that vast Metropolis, any more than we did in going thro' it before; your beloved Brother only stopping at his Banker's, and desiring him to look out for a handsome House, which he purposes to take for his Winter Residence: He chuses it to be about *Soho-Square*, or the new Buildings call'd *Hanover-Square*; and he left Mr. *Longman* there, to see one, which his Banker believed would be fit for him.

AND thus, my dear good Lady, I have answer'd your First Commands, by the Help of the Letters which pass'd between my dear Parents and me; and conclude this, with the Assurance, that I am, with high Respect,

*Your Ladyship's most obliged  
and faithful Servant,*

P. B.

## LETTER XIV.

*My dearest Lady,*

I NOW set myself to obey your Ladyship's second Command, which is, To give an Account in what manner your dear Brother broke to me the Affair of the unfortunate Miss *Godfrey*, with my Behaviour upon it: And this I cannot do better, than by transcribing the Relation I gave at the Time in Letters to my dear Parents, which your Ladyship has not seen, in these very Words.

[See

[See Vol. II. *p.* 401. beginning, *My dear Mr. B.* down to the Bottom of *p.* 419.]

THUS far, my dear Lady, the Relation I gave to my Parents, at the Time of my being first acquainted with this melancholy Affair.

IT is a great Pleasure to me, that I can already flatter myself, from the Hints you kindly give me, that I behaved as you wished I should behave. Indeed, Madam, I could not help it; for I pitied most sincerely the unhappy Lady; and tho' I could not but rejoice, that I had had the Grace to escape the dangerous Attempts of the dear-Intriguer, yet never did the Story of any unfortunate Lady make such an Impression upon me as hers did: She loved *him*, and believed, no doubt, he loved *her* too well to take ungenerous Advantages of her soft Passion for him; and so, by degrees, put herself in his Power; and too seldom, alas! have the noblest-minded of the seducing Sex the Mercy or the Goodness to spare the poor Creatures that do!—And then this Love, to be sure, is a sad Thing, when once it is suffer'd to reign!—A perfect Tyrant!—requiring an unconditional Obedience to its arbitrary Dictates, and deeming every Instance of Discretion, and Prudence, and Virtue itself, too often, but as so many Acts of Rebellion to its usurped Authority.

AND then, how do even Blemishes become Perfections in those we love? Crimes themselves too often, to inconsiderate Minds, appear but as human Failings; and human Failings are

*a common*



a *common Cause*, and every frail Person excuses them for his or her own sake.

THEN 'tis another Misfortune of People in Love, they always think highly of the beloved Object, and lowly of themselves; such a dismal Mortifier is Love!

I SAY not this, Madam, to excuse the poor Lady's Fall: Nothing can do that; because Virtue is, and ought to be, preferable to all Considerations, and to Life itself. But methinks I love this dear Lady so well, for the sake of her edifying Penitence, that I would fain extenuate her Crime, if I could; and the rather, as, in all Probability, it was a *first Love* on *both* Sides; and so he could not appear to her as a *practised* Deceiver.

YOUR Ladyship will see, by what I have transcribed, how I behaved myself to the dear Miss *Goodwin*; and I am so fond of the little Charmer, as well for the sake of her unhappy Mother, tho' personally unknown to me, as for the Relation she bears to the dear Gentleman whom I am bound to love and honour, that I must beg your Ladyship's Interest to procure her to be given up to my Care, when it shall be thought proper. I am sure I shall act by her as tenderly as if I was her own Mother. And glad I am, that the poor unfaulty Baby is so justly beloved by Mr. B.

BUT I will here conclude this Letter, with assuring your Ladyship, that I am

*Your obliged and humble Servant,*

P. B.  
LET-

## LETTER XV.

*My good Lady,*

I NOW come to your Ladyship's Remarks on my Conduct to Mrs. *Jewkes*; which you are pleased to think too kind and forgiving, considering the poor Woman's Baseness.

YOUR Ladyship says, "That I ought not to have borne her in my Sight, after the impudent Assistance she gave to his lewd Attempts; much less to have left her in her Place, and rewarded her." Alas! my dear Lady, what could I do; a poor Prisoner, as I was made, for Weeks together, in Breach of all the Laws of Civil Society; without a Soul who durst be my Friend; and every Day expecting to be ruin'd and undone, by one of the haughtiest and most determin'd Spirits in the World? — And when it pleased God to turn his Heart, and incline him to abandon his wicked Attempts, and to profess honourable Love to me, his poor Servant, can it be thought I was to insist upon Conditions with such a Gentleman, who had me in his Power; and who, if I had provoked him, might have resumed all his wicked Purposes against me?

INDEED, I was too much overjoy'd, after all my Dangers past, (which were so great, that I could not go to Rest, nor rise, but with such Apprehensions, that I wish'd for Death rather than Life) to think of refusing any Terms that I could yield to, and keep my Honour.

AND

AND tho' such noble Ladies, as your Ladyship and Lady *Betty*, who are born to Independency, and are hereditarily, as I may say, on a Foot with the highest-descended Gentleman in the Land, might have exerted a Spirit, and would have had a Right to have chosen your own Servants, and to have distributed Rewards and Punishments to the Deserving and Undeserving, at your own good Pleasure; yet what had I, a poor Girl, who ow'd even my Title to common Notice to the Bounty of my late good Lady, and had only a kind of imputed Sightliness of Person, tho' enough to make me the Subject of vile Attempts; who, from a Situation of Terror and Apprehension, was lifted up to an Hope, beyond my highest Ambition, and was bid to pardon the bad Woman, as an Instance, that I could forgive his own hard Usage of me; who had experienced so often the Violence and Impetuosity of his Temper, which even his beloved Mother never ventur'd to oppose till it began to subside; and then, indeed, he was all Goodness and Acknowledgement (of which I could give your Ladyship more than one Instance); what, I say, had I to do, to take upon me Lady-Airs, and to resent?

BUT, my dear Ladies, (let me, in this Instance, bespeak both your Attention) I should be inexcusable, if I did not tell you all the Truth; and that is, that I not only forgave the poor Wretch, in regard to *his Commands*, but from *my own Inclination* also.



IF I am wrong in saying this, I must submit it to your Ladyships; and, as I pretend not to Perfection, am ready to take the Blame I shall be found to deserve in your Ladyships Judgment: But, indeed, were it to do again, I verily think, I could not help forgiving her. And were I not able to say this, I should be thought to have made a mean Court to my Master's Passions, and to have done a wrong thing with my Eyes open: Which, I humbly conceive, no one should do.

WHEN full Power was given me over this poor Creature, (seemingly at least, tho' it might possibly have been resum'd, and I might have been re-committed to hers, had I given him Reason to think I made an arrogant Use of it) you cannot imagine what a Triumph I had in my Mind over the mortify'd Guilt, which (from the highest Degree of Insolence and Impericuness, that before had harden'd her masculine Features) appear'd in her Countenance, when she found the Tables likely to be soon turn'd upon her.

THIS Change of Behaviour, which at first discover'd itself in a sullen Awe, and afterwards in a kind of silent Respect, shew'd me, what an Influence Power had over her; and that when she could treat her late Prisoner, when taken into Favour, so obsequiously, it was the less Wonder the bad Woman could think it her Duty to obey Commands so unjust, when her Obedience to them was required from her Master.

To be sure, if a Look could have kill'd her, after some of her bad Treatment, she had been

slain over and over, as I may say; but to me, who was always taught to distinguish between the Person and the Action, I could not hold my Resentment against the poor passive Machine of Mischief, one Day together, tho' her Actions were so odious to me.

I SHOULD indeed except that Time of my grand Trial, when she appear'd so much a Wretch to me, that I saw her not (even after \* Two Days that she was kept from me) without great Flutter and Emotion of Heart; and I had represented to your Brother before, how hard a Condition it was for me to forgive so much unwomanly Wickedness†.

BUT, my dear Ladies, when I consider'd the Matter in *one* particular Light, I could the more easily forgive her; and, *having* forgiven her, *bear her in my Sight*, and act by her (as a Consequence of that Forgiveness) as if she had not so horridly offended. — Else, how would it have been Forgiveness? Especially as she was ashamed of her Crime, and there was no Fear of her repeating it.

THUS, then, I thought on the Occasion: Poor wretched Agent, for Purposes little less than infernal! I *will* forgive thee, since *thy* Master and *my* Master will have it so. And indeed thou art beneath the Resentment even of such a poor Girl as I. I will *pity* thee, base and abject as thou art. And she who is the Object of my *Pity*, is surely beneath my *Anger*.

\* See Vol. I. p. 344.

† Ibid. p. 347.

My Eye, that used to quiver and tremble at thy haughty Eye, shall now, with conscious Worthiness, take a superior Steadiness, and look down thy scouling guilty one into Self-condemnation, the State thou couldst never cast mine into, nor from it wilt be able to raise thine own! Bear the Reproach of thine own wicked Heart, low, vile Woman, unworthy as thou art of the *Name*; and chosen, as it should seem, for a Foil to the Innocent, and to make Purity shine forth the brighter, the *only* good Use such Wretches as thou can be of to others (except for Examples of Penitence and Mercy): This will be Punishment enough for thee, without my exposing myself to the Imputation of descending so near to a Level with thee, as to resent thy Baseness, when thou hast no Power to hurt me!

SUCH were then my Thoughts, my *proud* Thoughts; so far was I from being guilty of intentional Meanness, in forgiving, at Mr. *B.*'s Interposition, the poor, low, creeping, abject, *Self*-mortify'd, and *Master*-mortify'd Mrs. *Jewkes*.

AND do you think, Ladies, when you revolve in your Thoughts, *who* I was, and *what* I was, and what I had been *designed* for; when you revolve the amazing Turn in my Favour, and the Prospects before me (Prospects so much above my Hopes, that I left them intirely to Providence to direct for me, as it pleased, without daring to look forward to what those Prospects seemed naturally to tend); when I could



see my haughty Persecutor become my repentant Protector; the lofty Spirit that used to make me tremble, and to which I never could look up without Awe, except in those animating Cases, where his guilty Attempts, and the Concern had to preserve my Innocence, gave a Courage, more than natural to my otherwise dastardly Heart: When this impetuous Spirit could stoop to request one whom he had sunk beneath even her usual low Character of his Servant, who was his Prisoner, under Sentence of a Ruin worse than Death, as he had intended it, and had seiz'd her for that very Purpose; could stoop to acknowledge the Vileness of that Purpose: Could say, at one time, "That my Forgiveness of Mrs. *Jewkes* should stand me in greater Stead than I was aware of:" Could tell her, before me, "That she must, for the future, shew me all the Respect that was due to one he must love\*:" At another, acknowledge, before her, "That he had been stark naught, and that I was very forgiving†:" Again‡, to Mrs. *Jewkes*, putting himself on a Level with her, as to Guilt, "We are both in generous Hands: And, indeed, if *Pamela* did not pardon you, I should think she but half forgave me, because you acted by my Instructions:" Another time to the same§, "We have been both Sinners, and must be both included in one Act of Grace:"

\* See Vol. I. p. 347, 348.

† Vol. II. p. 54.

‡ Ibid.

§ Vol. II. p. 163.

WHEN,

WHEN, I say, I was thus lifted up to the State of a sovereign Forgiver, and my lordly Master became a Petitioner for himself, and for the guilty Creature, whom he put under my Feet; what a Triumph was here for the poor *Pamela*! And could I have been guilty of so mean a Pride, as to trample upon the poor abject Creature, when I found her thus lowly, thus mortify'd, and wholly in my Power? For so she seemed actually to be, while I really thought so: And would it have been good Manners, with regard to my Master, or Policy, with respect to myself, to doubt it, after he had so declared?

THEN, my dear Ladies, while I was enjoying the Soul-charming Fruits of that Innocence which the Divine Grace had enabled me to preserve, in spite of so many Plots! and Contrivances on my *Master's* Side, and such wicked Instigations and Assistances on *hers*, and all my Prospects were improving upon me beyond my Wishes; when all was Sunshine, unclouded Sunshine, and I possessed my Mind in Peace, and had nothing to do but to be thankful to Providence, which had been so gracious to my Unworthiness; when I saw, as I said above, my Persecutor become my Protector, my active Enemy no longer my Enemy, but creeping with slow, doubtful Feet, and speaking to me, with awful, hesitating Doubt of my Acceptance; a Stamp of an insolent Foot, turn'd into courtesying half-bent Knees; threatening Hands into supplicating Folds; and the Eye unpitiful to In-

nocence, running over with the Sense of her own Guilt; a faltering Accent on her late menacing Tongue, and uplifted Handkerchief — “ I see she will be my Lady: And then I know how it will go with me\* ;” — Was not this, my Ladies, a Triumph of Triumphs to the late miserable, now exalted *Pamela*? — Could I do less than pardon her? And having declared, that I did so, was I not to shew the Sincerity of my Declaration?

INDEED, indeed, my dear good Ladies, I found such a Subject for Exultation in this providential Change of my Condition, that I had much ado to subdue my rising Pride, and thought there was more Danger of being lifted up, (every Moment, to see such improving Contrition on the poor Creature’s Part) than to be supposed guilty of a Meanness of Heart, in *stooping* (yes, Madam, that was then the proudly proper Word, in the Elevation wherein I found myself) to forgive her! — And, what! should I not forgive a Creature for that very Baseness, which, happily withstood, had so largely contributed to exalt me? Indeed, my dear good Ladies, permit me to repeat, I could not chuse but to forgive her! How could I? — And would it not have been out of Character in me, and against all Expectation of my high-soul’d (tho’ sometimes, as in my Case, for a great while together, meanly-acting) Master, if I had not?

WOULD it not have shewn him, that the low-born *Pamela* was incapable of a generous

† See Vol. I. p. 355.



Action, had she refused the *only* Request her humble Condition had given her the Opportunity of granting, at that time, with Innocence; Would he not have thought the humble Cottager as capable of Insolence, and Vengeance too, in her Turn, as the better-born? And that she wanted but the Power, to shew the like unrelenting Temper, by which she had so grievously suffer'd? — And might not this have given him Room to think me (and to have resumed and prosecuted his Purposes accordingly) fitter for an arrogant kept Mistress, than an humble and obliged Wife?

I SEE, (might he not have said?) the Girl has strong Passions and Resentments; and she that has, will be *acted*, and sometimes *govern'd*, by them. — I will improve upon the Hint she herself has now given me, by her inexorable Temper: — I will gratify her Revenge, till I turn it upon herself: I will indulge her Pride, till I make it administer to her Fall: For a Wife I cannot think of in the low-born Cottager; especially when she has lurking in her all the Pride and Arrogance (you know, my Ladies, his haughty way of speaking of our Sex) of the better-descended. — And by a little Perseverance, and watching her unguarded Hours, and applying Temptations to her Passions, I shall first discover them, and then make my Advantage of them.

MIGHT not this have been the Language, and this the Resolution, of such a dear wicked Intriguer? — For, my Lady, you can hardly

conceive the Struggles he apparently had to bring down his high Spirit to so low a Level. And tho', I hope, all would have been, even in this *worst* Case, ineffectual, thro' Divine Grace, yet how do I know what lurking Vileness might have appeared by degrees, in this frail Heart, to have encouraged his Designs, and to have augmented my Trials and my Dangers? And perhaps downright Violence might have been used, if he could not on one hand have subdued his Passion, nor on the other have overcome his Pride. A Pride, that every one, reflecting upon the Disparity of Birth and Condition between us, would have dignify'd with the Name of *Decency*: A Pride that was become such an essential Part of the dear Gentleman's Character, in this Instance of a Wife, that altho' he knew he could not keep it up, if he made *me* happy, yet it was no small Motive in his chusing me, in one respect, because he expected from me more Humility, more Submission, than he thought he had Reason to flatter himself would be paid him by a Lady equally born and educated: And of this I will send your Ladyship an Instance, in a Transcription from that Part of \* my Journal you have not seen, of his Lessons to me, on the Occasion your Ladyship so well remembers, of my incurring his Displeasure by interposing between yourself and him †, in your Misunderstanding at the Hall; for, Madam, I intend to send, at times, any thing I

\* See Vol. II. p. 28, & seq. beginning at Line 9.

† Ibid. p. 330.

think worthy of your Ladyship's Attention, out of those Papers you were so kind as to excuse me from sending you in the Lump, and many of which must needs have appeared very impertinent to such Judges.

THUS, could your Ladyship have thought it? have I ventur'd upon a strange Paradox, that even this strongest Instance of his Debasing himself, is not the weakest of his Pride; and he in ventured once at Sir *Simon Darnford's* to say, your Ladyship's hearing, as you may remember, That in his Conscience he thought he should hardly have made a tolerable Husband to any body but *Pamela*\*: And why? For the Reasons you will see in the inclosed Papers, which give an Account of the noblest and earliest Curtain-Lecture that ever Girl had: One of which is, That he expects to be *borne* with, (*comply'd* with, he meant) even when in the wrong: Another, That a Wife should never so much as expostulate with him, altho' he *was* in the wrong, till, by complying with all he insisted upon, she should have shewn him, she designed rather to convince him for his *own* sake, than for *Contradiction's* sake: And then, another time, perhaps, he might take better Resolutions †.

I HOPE, from what I have said, it will appear to your Ladyship, and to Lady *Betty* too, that I am justify'd, or at least excused, in pardoning Mrs. *Jewkes*: And I have yet another Reason behind for doing so, had she been as absolutely in my Power, as the Wish of the most resenting Per-

\* See Vol. II. p. 341.

† Ibid. p. 349, 350.



son in the World could have made her; and that is, the Hope I had, that the poor Creature, by being continued in a Family where the Gentleman gave Hopes of so desirable a Reformation, and where the Example of the Person he was about to honour in so eminent a Degree, beyond all that could have been hoped for by her a few Days before, might, possibly, contribute to make her change her Manner of Thinking, as well as Acting.

I LOOKED upon the poor Wretch, in all her Deportment to me, in my Days of Trial, as one devoted to Perdition; as one who had no Regard to a future State; but while she could live in Ease and Plenty for a poor Remainder of Years, cared not what she did, and was ready to undertake any thing, which Persons of Power and Riches would put her upon; and who, were she to be turned off disgracefully, at my Desire, besides that I should thereby shew myself to be of an implacable Spirit, might have been entertained by some profligate Persons, to whose Baseness such a Woman might be useful; and that then her Power to do Mischief would have been augmented, and she would have gone on more successfully to do the Devil's Work; and several innocent Creatures might have been intangled, like so many thoughtless Flies, in the insnaring Web of this venomous-hearted Spider, which I had so happily escaped. Is it not better then, thought I, if I can imprint *Conviction* upon the poor Wretch, whom its hopeful Forerunner *Shame* had already taken

taken hold of, and add the delightful Hope of Mischiefs prevented, to that of a Soul reclaimed? And may not I, who have been so hardly used by her, for *that* very Reason, have more Influence upon her, than any other Person, even the best of Divines, could have?

NAY, would not this Behaviour of mine, very probably, operate on a much higher and nobler Subject, her dear naughty Master, and let *him* see the Force and Amiability of conquering one's self? that there must be something in that Duty which could make so young a Creature regard it, in an Instance so difficult to some Minds, (and especially to the Passionate and High-born) that of forgiving Injuries, where there is a Power to revenge, and of returning Good for Evil?

AND then, when no sullen Behaviour to the poor Wretch, on my Side, took Place; no distant Airs were affected, no angry Brow put on, nor Sharpness of Speech, towards one who might expect all these from me; would it not shew him, that I was sincere in my Forgiveness? that I was not able to bear Malice? was a Stranger to Revenge? had truly that Softness of Nature, and Placableness of Disposition, which he holds to be the greatest Merit in our Sex; and which, I dare say, your Ladyship will join with me in Opinion, is indispensably necessary to the happy Life of the Person who is his Wife?

THEN I have no Notion of that slight Distinction I have so often heard, between *forgive* and

and *forget*, when Persons have a mind to split Hairs, and to distinguish away their Christian Duties by a Word, and say, *I must forgive such an Action, but I will never forget it*: When I would rather say, *I will remember such an Action, in order for my future Guard*; but *I will forgive it as often as I remember it*: or *else I will try to forget it for ever, if it will occasion a Breach in my Christian Charity*.

I WILL only add, That I thought it would not be wrong to keep her, as, besides what I have mention'd, it would induce the World to think, that Mr. *B.* had not gone such very wicked Lengths, as would have been imagin'd, if she had not been supportable to me in the same House? And who knows, besides, what she might have reported of both, had she been dismissed?

How then, dearest Ladies, if these Considerations have any Weight, could I act otherwise than I did, either with respect to your honoured Brother, myself, or the poor Woman? And when I tell your Ladyships, that I have all the Reason in the world to be pleas'd with this manner of Acting, when I consider the Confidence it hath given me with Mr. *B.* and (what I was very desirous of) the good Effects it hath had upon the Woman herself, I dare say, both your Ladyships Opinions will be in my Favour on this Head.

BUT your dear Brother has just sent me Word, that Supper waits for me; and the Post being ready to go off, I defer till the next Opportunity  
what



what I have to say, as to these good Effects; and am, in the mean time,

*Your Ladyship's most obliged  
and faithful Servant,*

P. B.

## L E T T E R   X V I .

*My dear Lady,*

**I** WILL now acquaint you with the good Effects my Behaviour to Mrs. *Jewkes* has had upon her, as a further Justification of my Conduct towards the poor Woman.

THAT she began to be affected as I wish'd, appeared to me before I left the Hall, not only in the Conversations I had with her after my Happiness was completed, but in her general Demeanour also to the Servants, to the Neighbours, and in her devout Behaviour at Church: And this still further appears by a Letter I have received from Miss *Darnford*. I dare say, your Ladyship will be pleased with the Perusal of the whole Letter, altho' a Part of it would answer my present Design: And in Confidence that you will excuse, for the sake of its other Beauties, the high and undeserved Praises which Miss's Goodness makes her so lavishly to bestow upon me, I will transcribe it all.

*From Miss DARNFORD to Mrs. B.*

*" My dear Neighbour that was,*

*" I MUST depend upon your known Good-*

*" ness, to excuse me for not writing before*

*" now, in Answer to your Letter of Compliment*

*" to*

“ to us, for the Civilities and Favours, as you  
 “ call them, which you received from us in  
 “ *Lincolnshire*, where we were infinitely more  
 “ obliged to you, than you to us.

“ THE Truth is, my Papa has been much  
 “ disordered with a kind of rambling Rheu-  
 “ matism, to which the Physicians, learnedly  
 “ speaking, give the Name of *Arthritica vaga*,  
 “ or the Flying Gout; and when he ails ever so  
 “ little, (it signifies nothing concealing his In-  
 “ firmities, where they are so well known,  
 “ and when he cares not who knows them)  
 “ he is so peevish, and wants so much Attend-  
 “ ance, that my Mamma, and her Two Girls,  
 “ (one of which is as waspish as her Papa; you  
 “ may be sure I don’t mean myself) have much  
 “ ado to make his Worship keep the Peace:  
 “ And I being his Favourite, when he is indis-  
 “ posed, because I have most Patience, if I may  
 “ give myself a good Word, he calls upon me  
 “ continually, to read to him when he is grave,  
 “ which is not often indeed, and to tell him  
 “ Stories, and sing to him, when he is merry;  
 “ and so I have been employ’d as a principal  
 “ Person about him, till I have frequently be-  
 “ come sad to make him chearful; and happy  
 “ when I could do it at any Rate: For once,  
 “ in a Pet, he flung a Book at my Head, because  
 “ I had not attended him for Two Hours: And,  
 “ He could not bear to be slighted by little  
 “ Bastards, that was his Word, that were fa-  
 “ ther’d upon him for his Vexation!

“ O THESE

“ O THESE Men! Fathers or Husbands,  
“ much alike! the one tyrannical, the other  
“ insolent; so that, between one and t’other,  
“ a poor Girl has nothing for it, but a few  
“ Weeks Courtship, and perhaps a first Month’s  
“ Bridalry, if that; and then she’s as much a  
“ Slave to an Husband, as she was a Vassal to  
“ her Father — I mean, if the Father be a Sir  
“ *Simon Darnford*, and the Spouse a Mr. B.

“ BUT I will be a little more grave; for a  
“ graver Occasion calls for it, and yet an Occa-  
“ sion that will give you real Pleasure. It is  
“ the very great Change, that the Example you  
“ have left behind you has had upon your  
“ House-keeper.

“ YOU desired her to keep up as much Re-  
“ gularity as she could among the Servants  
“ there; and she is next to exemplary in it;  
“ so that she has every one’s good Word. She  
“ speaks of her Lady not only with Respect,  
“ but Reverence; and calls it a blessed Day for  
“ all the Family, and particularly for herself,  
“ that you came into *Lincolnshire*. She reads  
“ Prayers, or makes one of the Servants read  
“ them, every *Sunday* Night; and never misses  
“ being at Church Morning and Afternoon; and  
“ is preparing herself, by Mr. *Peters’s* Advice  
“ and Direction, for receiving the Sacrament,  
“ which she earnestly longs to receive, and says  
“ it will be the Seal of her Reformation.

“ MR. *Peters* gives us this Account of her,  
“ and says she is full of Contrition for her past  
“ mis-spent Life; and is often asking him, If  
“ such



“ such and such Sins can be forgiven? And  
“ among them, names her vile Behaviour to  
“ her Angel-Lady, as she calls you.

“ I T seems, she has written a Letter to you,  
“ which passed Mr. *Peters's* Revival, before she  
“ had the Courage to send it; and prides her-  
“ self, that you have favoured her with an An-  
“ swer to it; which, she says, when she is dead,  
“ will be found in a Cover of black Silk next  
“ her Heart: For any thing from your Hand,  
“ she is sure, will be efficacious to her keeping  
“ her good Purposes; and for that Reason she  
“ places it there: And when she has any bad  
“ Thoughts, or is guilty of any faulty Word, or  
“ passionate Expression, she recollects her Lady's  
“ Letter; and that recovers her to a Calm, and  
“ puts her again into a better Frame.

“ A s she has written to you, 'tis possible I  
“ might have spar'd you the Trouble of reading  
“ this Account of her; but yet you will not be  
“ displeased, that so free a Liver and Speaker  
“ should have some Testimonial besides her own  
“ Assurances, to vouch for the Sincerity of her  
“ Reformation.

“ W H A T a happy Lady are you, that Per-  
“ suasion dwells upon your Tongue, and Re-  
“ formation follows your Example! We all  
“ hear continually of your Excellencies. Every  
“ body is proud of speaking of you, and of have-  
“ ing something to say of what they observe in  
“ you. This makes us long more and more to  
“ see you here again. My Papa t'other Day  
“ said, He wish'd you'd undertake him.

“ T H I S

“ THIS is not the least of what is admirable  
“ in you, that profess’d Rakes and Libertines,  
“ who take upon themselves to ridicule Ser-  
“ iousness in every body else, speak of you with  
“ Reverence; and while they attribute Phari-  
“ saical Pride, or Affectation, or Hypocrisy,  
“ to other good Persons, they say you are a  
“ Credit to Religion, and that adorns you, and  
“ you that.

“ HAPPY, thrice happy Mrs. *B.*! May you  
“ long live the Ornament of your Sex, and a Cre-  
“ dit to all your Acquaintance! Such Examples  
“ as you set, how are they wanted in an Age  
“ so depraved! I fear not making you proud,  
“ since Praise but puts the Worthy upon enlarg-  
“ ing their Deservings: For who, as I heard  
“ you once say, can sit down easy under imputed  
“ Commendations they do not deserve? — If  
“ they will not disclaim the Praise they have  
“ not merited, when apply’d to their Conduct,  
“ they give an Earnest, by receiving it, that  
“ they will *endeavour* to do it, and ought never  
“ to rest till they have made themselves a Title  
“ to it.

“ HAPPY Mr. *B.*! — But why say I so?  
“ since, with more Propriety, I may say, Happy  
“ Every-one who sees, who knows, who con-  
“ verses with Mrs. *B.* not more the Glory of  
“ the humble Cot, than the Ornament of the  
“ stately Palace!

“ IF you knew how I love you, you would  
“ favour me with your Presence and Conver-  
“ sation, if it was in your own Power to do so;

“ and then I would rank myself among the  
 “ *Happies*, and call myself,

“ *The Happy POLLY DARNFORD.*”

YOUR Ladyship will, as I said, forgive me what may appear like Vanity in this Communication. Miss *Darnford* is a charming young Lady. I always admir'd her; but her Letters are the sweetest, kindest! — But I am too much the Subject of her Encomiums, and so will say no more; but add here a Copy of the poor Woman's Letter to me; and your Ladyship will see what an ample Correspondence you have open'd to yourself, if you go on to countenance it.

“ *Honoured Madam,*

“ I HAVE been long labouring under Two  
 “ Difficulties; the Desire I had to write to  
 “ you, and the Fear of being thought presumptuous, if I did. But I will depend on  
 “ your Goodness, so often try'd; and put Pen  
 “ to Paper, in that very Closet, and on that  
 “ very Desk, which once were so much used  
 “ by your dear Self, when I was acting a Part,  
 “ that now cuts me to the Heart, to think of.  
 “ But you forgave me, Madam, and shew'd me  
 “ you had too much Goodness to revoke your  
 “ Forgiveness. And could I have silenc'd the  
 “ Reproaches of my own Heart, I should have  
 “ had no Cause to think I had ever offended.

“ BUT, oh! Madam, how has your Goodness to me, which once filled me with so  
 “ much



“ much Gladness, now, on Reflection, made  
“ me sorrowful, and at times miserable! —  
“ To think I should act so barbarously as I did,  
“ by so much Sweetness, and so much Forgiv-  
“ ingness! Every Place that I remember to have  
“ used you hardly in, how does it now fill me  
“ with Sadness, and makes me often smite my  
“ Breast, and sit down with Tears and Groans,  
“ bemoaning my vile Actions, and my hard  
“ Heart! How many Places are there in this  
“ melancholy fine House, that call one thing  
“ or other to my Remembrance, that gives me  
“ Remorse! But the Pond, and the Wood-  
“ house, whence I dragg’d you so mercilessly,  
“ after I had driven you to Despair almost,  
“ what Thoughts do they bring to my Remem-  
“ brance!—Then my wicked Instigations —  
“ What an odious Wretch was I!

“ HAD his Honour been as abandoned as my-  
“ self, what Virtue had been destroy’d, between  
“ *his* Orders, and *my* too rigorous Execution  
“ of them; nay, stretching them, to shew my  
“ wicked Zeal, to serve a Master, whom, tho’  
“ I honour’d, I should not (as you more than  
“ once hinted to me, but with no Effect at all,  
“ so resolutely wicked was my Heart) have so  
“ well obey’d in his unlawful Commands.

“ HIS Honour has made you Amends, has  
“ done Justice to your Merits, and so aton’d for  
“ *his* Fault. But as for *me*, it is out of my  
“ Power ever to make Reparation! All that is  
“ left me, is, to let your Ladyship see, that your  
“ pious Example has made such an Impression

“ upon me, that I am miserable now in the  
“ Reflection upon my past Guilt!

“ You have forgiven me, and GOD will,  
“ I hope; for the Creature cannot be more  
“ merciful than the Creator; that is all my  
“ Hope! — Yet sometimes, I dread, that I  
“ am forgiven here, at least not punished, in  
“ order to be punished the more hereafter! —  
“ What will then become of the unhappy  
“ Wretch, that has thus lived in a State of Sin,  
“ and had so qualify’d herself by a Course of  
“ Wickedness, as to be thought a proper In-  
“ strument for the worst Purposes that any one  
“ could be employ’d in?

“ Good your Ladyship, let not my honour’d  
“ Master see this Letter. He will think I have  
“ the Boldness to reflect upon him; when,  
“ God knows my Heart, I only write to con-  
“ demn myself, and my *unwomanly* Actions,  
“ as you were pleas’d often most justly to call  
“ them.

“ But I might go on thus for ever accusing  
“ myself, not considering whom I am writing  
“ to, and whose precious Time I am taking up.  
“ — But what I chiefly write for, I am not  
“ come to yet; that is, to beg your Ladyship’s  
“ Prayers for me. For, oh! Madam, I fear I  
“ shall else be for ever miserable! We every  
“ Week hear of the Good you do, and the Cha-  
“ rity you extend to the Bodies of the Miserable.  
“ Extend, I beseech you, good Madam, to the  
“ unhappy *Jewkes*, the Mercy of your Prayers,  
“ and tell me, if you think I have not sinned  
“ beyond

“ beyond Hope of Pardon; for there is a Woe  
 “ denounced against the presumptuous Sinner.

“ YOUR Ladyship assured me, at your Depart-  
 “ ure, on the Confession of my Remorse for  
 “ my Misdoings, and my Promise of Amend-  
 “ ment, that you would take it for a Proof of  
 “ my being in Earnest, if I would endeavour to  
 “ keep up a Regularity among the Servants here;  
 “ if I would subdue them with Kindness, as I  
 “ had owned myself subdued; and if I would  
 “ endeavour to make every one think, that the  
 “ best Security they could give of their doing  
 “ their Duty to their Master in his *Absence*, was  
 “ by doing it to God Almighty, from whose all-  
 “ seeing Eye nothing can be hid. This, I remem-  
 “ ber, your Ladyship told me, was the best Test  
 “ of Fidelity and Duty, that any Servants could  
 “ shew; since it was impossible without Reli-  
 “ gion, but that worldly Convenience, or Self-  
 “ Interest, must be the main Tye; and so the  
 “ worst Actions might succeed, if Servants  
 “ thought they should find their sordid Advan-  
 “ tage in sacrificing their Duty.

“ So well am I convinced of this Truth, that  
 “ I hope I have begun the Example to good  
 “ Effect; and as no one in the Family was so  
 “ wicked as I, it was therefore less difficult to  
 “ reform them; and you will have the Pleasure  
 “ to know, that you have now Servants here,  
 “ whom you need not be ashamed to call  
 “ yours.

“ ’TIS true, I found it a little difficult at  
 “ first to keep them within Sight of their Duty,



“ after your Ladyship departed : But when they  
 “ saw I was in earnest, and used them courte-  
 “ ously, as you advised, and as your Usage of  
 “ me convinced me was the rightest Usage;  
 “ when they were told I had your Commands  
 “ to acquaint you, how they conformed to  
 “ your Injunctions; the Task became easy :  
 “ and I hope we shall all be still more and  
 “ more worthy of the Favour of so good a Lady,  
 “ and so bountiful a Master.

“ I DARE not presume upon the Honour of  
 “ a Line to your unworthy Servant. Yet it  
 “ would pride me much, if I could have it. But  
 “ I shall ever pray for your Ladyship's and his  
 “ Honour's Felicity, as becomes

“ *Your undeserving Servant,*

“ K. JEWKES.”

I HAVE already, with these transcribed Letters of Miss *Darnford* and Mrs. *Jewkes*, written a great deal : But nevertheless, as there yet remains one Passage in your Ladyship's Letter, relating to Mrs. *Jewkes*, that seems to require an Answer, I will take Notice of it, if I shall not quite tire your Patience.

THAT Passage is this, “ Lady *Betty* rightly  
 “ observes, says your Ladyship, That he knew  
 “ what a vile Woman she [Mrs. *Jewkes*] was,  
 “ when he put you into her Power; and, no  
 “ doubt, imploy'd her, because he was sure,  
 “ she would answer all his Purposes : And that  
 “ therefore she should have had very little Opi-  
 “ nion of the Sincerity of his Reformation,  
 “ while

“ while he was so solicitous in keeping her  
“ there.

“ SHE should she says, had she been in your  
“ Case, have had one Struggle for her Dismiss-  
“ sion, let it have been taken as it would; and  
“ he that was so well pleased with your Virtue,  
“ must have thought this a natural Consequence  
“ of it, if he was in earnest to become virtuous  
“ himself.”

BUT, alas! Madam, he was not so well  
pleased with my Virtue for Sake's sake, as Lady  
*Betty* thinks he was. He would have been  
glad, at that very Time, to have found me less  
resolved on that score. He did not so much  
as *pretend* to any Disposition to Virtue: No,  
not he!

HE had entertained, as it proved, a strong  
Passion for me. This Passion had been height-  
ened by *my* resisting of it. His Pride, and the  
Advantages he had both of Person and Fortune,  
would not let him brook Controul; and when  
he could not have me upon his own Terms,  
God turn'd his evil Purposes to good ones, and  
he resolved to submit to mine, or rather to such  
as he found I would not yield to him without.  
For all this time, I had no Terms to propose.  
Neither my low Fortunes, my unjust Captivity,  
nor my Sex, nor unexperienced Youth, (not a  
Soul near me, whom I could call my Friend,  
or whose Advice I could ask) permitted me to  
offer any Terms to him, had I been disposed  
to have disputed his Will, or his Intercession  
for the Woman; which, as I have said, I was

not. I had but one steady Purpose to adhere to, and having Grace given me me to adhere to that, he resolved, since he could not conquer his Passion for me, to make me his with Honour. But still, I doubt, as I said, this was not for the Love of Virtue at that time. That came afterwards; and I hope will be always his governing Motive in his future Actions; and then I shall be happy indeed!

BUT Lady *Betty* thinks, “ I was to blame “ to put Mrs. *Jewkes* upon a Foot, in the Pre- “ sent I made on my Nuptials, with Mrs. *Fervis*.” But the Case was rather this, That I put Mrs. *Fervis* on a Foot with Mrs. *Jewkes*; for the dear Gentleman had *named* the Sum he would have me give Mrs. *Jewkes*\*; and I would not give Mrs. *Fervis* *less*, because I loved her better; nor *more* could I give her, on that Occasion, without making such a Difference between Two Persons equal in Station, on a Solemnity too, where one was present and assisting, the other not, as would have shewn such a Partiality, as might have induced their Master to conclude, I was not so sincere in my Forgiveness as he hoped from me, and as I really was.

BUT a stronger Reason still was behind; that I could, in a much more agreeable manner, both to Mrs. *Fervis* and myself, shew my Love and my Gratitude to the dear good Woman: And this I have taken care to do, in the manner

\* See Vol. II. p. 191.

I will



I will submit to your Ladyship; at the Tribunal of whose Judgment I am willing all my Actions, respecting your dear Brother, shall be try'd: And I hope, your Ladyship will not think me a too profuse or lavish Creature; I hope you won't have Reason for it: Yet if you think you have, pray, my dear Lady, don't spare me; for if you shall judge me profuse in one Article, I will endeavour to save it in another.

BUT I will make what I have to say on this Head the Subject of a Letter by itself. And am, mean time,

*Your Ladyship's most obliged  
and obedient Servant,*

P. B.

## L E T T E R XVII.

*My dear Lady,*

IT is needful, in order to let you more intelligibly into the Subject where I left off in my last, that your Ladyship should know, that your generous Brother has made me his Almoner, as I was my late dear Lady's; and has order'd Mr. *Longman* to pay me 50*l.*\* quarterly, for Purposes of which he requires no Account, tho' I have one always† ready to produce; and he has given me other Sums to enable me to do all the Good I can to distressed Objects, at my first setting out. Thus enabled, your Lady-

\* See Vol. II. p. 380.

† Ibid. p. 393, 394.

ship knows not how many honest Hearts I have made glad already, and how many more I hope to rejoice before a Year is at an End, and yet keep within my Limits.

Now, Madam, as I knew Mrs. *Jervis* was far from being easy in her Circumstances, thinking herself obliged to pay old \* Debts for Two extravagant Children, who are both dead; and maintaining in Schooling and Cloaths Three of their Children, which always kept her bare; I took upon me, one Day, as she and I sat together, at our Needles, to say to her, (as we are always running over old Stories, when we are alone) My good Mrs. *Jervis*, will you allow me to ask you after your own private Affairs, and if you are tolerably easy in them?

You are very good, Madam, said she, to concern yourself about my poor Matters, so much as you have to imploy your Thoughts about, and so much as every Moment of your Time is taken up from the Hour you rise, to the Time of your Rest. But I can with great Pleasure attribute it to your Bounty, and that of my honoured Master, that I am easier and easier every Day.

BUT tell me, my dear Mrs. *Jervis*, said I, how your Matters *particularly* stand. I love to mingle Concerns with my Friends, and as I hide nothing from *you*, I hope you'll treat *me* with equal Freedom; for I always loved you, and

\* See Vol. I. p. 117.

always will; and nothing but Death shall divide our Friendship.

SHE had Tears of Gratitude in her Eyes; and taking off her Spectacles, I cannot bear, said she, so much Goodness! — Oh! my Lady!

OH! my *Pamela*, say, reply'd I. — How often must I chide you for calling me any thing but your *Pamela*, when we are alone together.

MY Heart, said she, will burst with your Goodness! — I cannot bear it!

BUT you must bear it, and bear still greater Exercises to your grateful Heart, I can tell you that: A pretty thing, truly! Here, I, a poor helpless Girl, raised from Poverty and Distress, by the Generosity of the best of Gentlemen, only because I was young and slight, shall put on Lady-Airs to a Gentlewoman born, the Wisdom of whose Years, and her faithful Services, and good Management, make her a much greater Merit in this Family than I can pretend to have! And return, shall I? in the Day of my Power, Insult and Haughtiness for the Kindness and Benevolence I received from her in that of my Indigence! — Indeed, I won't forgive you, my dear Mrs. *Jervis*, if I think you capable of looking upon me in any other Light than as your Daughter; for you have been a Mother to me, when the Absence of my own could not afford me the Comfort, and good Counsel, I received every Day from you.

THEN moving my Chair nearer her, and taking her Hand, and wiping, with my Handkerchief in my other, her reverend Cheek,  
Come,



Come, come, my dear second Mother, said I, call me your Daughter, your *Pamela*: I have passed many sweet Hours with you under that Name: And as I have but too seldom such an Opportunity as this, open to me your worthy Heart, and let me know, if I cannot make my *second* Mother as easy and happy as our dear Master has made my *first*.

SHE hung her Head on her Shoulder, and I waited till the Discharge of her Tears gave Time for Utterance to her Words; provoking only her Speech, by saying, You used to have Three Grandchildren to provide for in Cloaths and Schooling. They are all living, I hope?

YES, Madam, they are living: And your last Bounty (Twenty Guineas was a great Sum, and all at once!) made me very easy, and very happy!

How easy, and how happy, Mrs. *Fervis*?

WHY, my dear Lady, I paid Five to one old Creditor of my unhappy Sons; Five to a second; and Two and an half to Two others, in Proportion to their respective Demands; and with the other Five I paid off all Arrears of the poor Childrens Schooling and Maintenance, and every one is satisfy'd and easy, and all declare they will never do harsh Things by me, if they are paid no more.

BUT, tell me, Mrs. *Fervis*, what you owe in the World, put all together; and you and I will contrive, with Justice to our best Friend, to do all we can, to make you quite easy; for, at your Time of Life, I cannot bear, that you shall

shall have any thing to disturb you, which I can remove; and so, my dear Mrs. *Jervis*, let me know all.

COME, I know your Debts, (dear, just, good Woman, as you are!) like *David's* Sins, are ever before you: So come, putting my Hand in her Pocket, let me be a friendly Pick-pocket: Let me take out your Memorandum-Book, and we will see how all Matters stand, and what can be done. Come, I see you are too much moved; your worthy Heart is too much affected (pulling out her Book, which she always has about her): I will go to my Closet, and return presently.

So I left her to recover her Spirits, and retir'd with the good Woman's Book to my Closet.

YOUR dear Brother stepping into the Par-lour just after I had gone out, Where's your Lady, Mrs. *Jervis*? said he; and being told, came up to me, What ails the good Woman below, my Dear? said he: I hope you and she have had no Words!

No, indeed, Sir, answer'd I. — If we had, I am sure it would have been my Fault: But I have picked her Pocket of her Memorandum-Book, in order to look into her private Affairs, to see if I cannot, with Justice to our common Benefactor, make her as easy as you, Sir, have made my other dear Parents.

A BLESSING, said the dear Gentleman, upon my Charmer's benevolent Heart! — I will leave every thing to your Discretion, my Dear!

Dear! — Do all the Good you prudently can to your Mrs. *Jervis*.

I CLASPED my bold Arms about him, the starting Tear testifying my Gratitude: Dearest, dear Sir, said I, you affect me as much as I did Mrs. *Jervis*: And if any one but You had a Right to ask, What ails your *Pamela*? as you do, What ails Mrs. *Jervis*? I must say, I am hourly so much oppress'd by your Goodness, that there is hardly any bearing one's own Joy.

HE saluted me, and said, I was a dear obliging Creature. But, said he, I came to tell you, that after we have din'd, we'll take a Turn, if you please, to Lady *Arthur's*: She has a Family of *London* Friends for her Guests, and begs I will prevail upon you to give her your Company, and attend you myself, only to drink Tea with her; for I have told her, we are to have Friends to sup with us.

I WILL attend you, Sir, reply'd I, most willingly; altho' I doubt I am to be made a Shew of.

SOMETHING like it, said he — For she has promis'd them this Favour.

I NEED not dress otherwise than I am?

No, he was pleas'd to say, I was always what he wish'd me to be.

So he left me to my *good Works*, (those were his kind Words) and I ran over Mrs. *Jervis's* Accounts, and found a Balance drawn of all her Matters, in one Leaf, in a very clear manner, and a thankful Acknowledgement to God, for her Master's last Bounty, ' which had inabled  
" her



“ her to give Satisfaction to others, and do  
 “ herself great Pleasure,” as she had written  
 underneath.

THE Balance of all was 35*l.* 11*s.* and odd  
 Pence; and I went to my *Escritoire*, and took  
 out 40*l.* and down I hasted to my good Mrs.  
*Jervis*. And I said to her, Here, my dear good  
 Friend, is your Pocket-book; but are 35 or 36*l.*  
 all you owe, or are bound for in the World?

It is, Madam, said she, and enough too. It  
 is a great Sum; but 'tis in Four Hands, and they  
 are all in pretty good Circumstances; and so  
 convinced of my Honesty, that they will never  
 trouble me for it; for I have reduced the Debt  
 every Year something, since I have been in my  
 Master's Service.

NOR shall it ever be in any body's *Power*,  
 said I, to trouble you. I'll tell you how we'll  
 order it.

So I sat down, and made her sit down by  
 me, Here, my dear Mrs. *Jervis*, is 40*l.* It is  
 not so much to me now, as the \* Two Guineas  
 were to you, that you would have given me,  
 if I would have accepted of them, at my going  
 away from this House, to my Father's, as I  
 thought. But I will not *give* it you neither,  
 at least at *present*, as you shall hear: Indeed I  
 won't make you so uneasy as that comes to.  
 But here, take this, and pay the Thirty-five  
 Pounds odd Money to the utmost Farthing; and  
 the remaining Four Pounds odd will be a little  
 Fund in Advance towards the Childrens School-

\* See Vol. I. p. 117.

ing. And thus you shall repay it. I always designed, as our dear Master added Five Guineas *per Annum* to your Salary, in Acknowledgement of the Pleasure he took in your Services, when I was *Pamela Andrews*, to add Five Pounds *per Annum* to it from the Time I became Mrs. *B.* But from that Time, for so many Years to come, you shall receive no more than you did, till the whole Forty Pounds be repaid. And so, my dear Mrs. *Fervis*, you won't have any Obligation to me, you know, but for the Advance; and that is a poor Matter, not to be spoken of: And I will have Leave for it, for fear I should die.

HAD your Ladyship seen the good dear Woman's Behaviour on this Occasion, you would never have forgotten it. She could not speak: Tears ran down her Cheeks in plentiful Currents: her modest Hand put gently from her my offering Hand, and her Bosom heav'd, and she sobb'd with the painful Tumult that seem'd to struggle within her, and which, for some few Moments, made her incapable of speaking.

At last, I rising, and putting my Arm round her Neck, and wiping her Eyes, and kissing her Cheek, she cry'd, My dear, my excellent Lady! 'tis too much! too much! I cannot bear all this — And then she threw herself at my Feet; for I was not strong enough to hinder it; and with uplifted Hands, May God Almighty, said she — I kneeled by her, and clasping her Hands in mine, both uplifted together — May God Almighty, said I, drowning her Voice with my louder Voice, bless us both together, for many  
happy

happy Years! And may He bless and reward the Gentleman who has thus enabled me to make *the Widow's Heart to sing for Joy!*

DEAR good Woman, said I, rising, and raising her, Do you think you shall out-do me in Prayers and Praises to the Fountain of all these Mercies? — Do you think you shall? — And while I am impower'd to do Good to so many worthy Objects *abroad*, shall I forget to make my dear Mrs. *Jervis* happy at *home*?

AND thus, my Lady, did I force upon the good Woman's Acceptance the Forty Pounds.

PERMIT me, Madam, to close this Letter here, and to resume the Subject in my next; will then, I have the Honour to be

*Your Ladyship's most obliged  
and faithful Servant,*

P. B.

## L E T T E R XVIII.

*My dear Lady,*

I NOW resume my last Subject where I left off, that your Ladyship may have the Whole before you at one View.

I WENT after Dinner, with my dear Benefactor, to Lady *Arthur's*; and met with fresh Calls upon me for Humility, having the too natural Effects of the Praises and professed Admiration of that Lady's Guests, as well as my dear Mr. *B.'s*, and those of Mr. and Mrs. *Ar-*



*thur*, to guard myself against: And your good Brother was pleased to entertain me in the Chariot, going and coming, with an Account of the Orders he had given in relation to the *London* House, which is actually taken, and the Furniture he should direct for it; so that I had no Opportunity to tell him what I had done in relation to Mrs. *Jervis*.

BUT after Supper, retiring from Company to my Closet, when his Friends were gone, he came up to me about our usual Bed-time: He inquired kindly after my Employment, which was trying to read in the *French Telemachus*: For, my Lady, I am learning *French*, I'll assure you! And who, do you think, is my Master?—Why, the best I *could* have in the World, your dearest Brother, who is pleased to say, I am no Dunce: How inexcusable should I be, if I was, with such a Master, who teaches me on his Knee, and rewards me with a Kiss, whenever I do well; and says, I have already nearly mastered the Accent and Pronunciation, which, he tells me, is a great Difficulty got over!

I REQUESTED him to render for me into *English* two or three Places that were beyond my Reach; and when he had done it, he ask'd me, in *French*, What I had done for Mrs. *Jervis*?

I SAID, Permit me, Sir, (for I am not Proficient enough to answer you in my new Tongue) in *English*, to say, I have made the good Woman quite happy; and if I have your Approbation,

bation, I shall be as much so myself in this Instance, as I am in all others.

I DARE answer for your Prudence, my Dear, he was pleased to say; but this is your Favourite: Let me know, when you have so bountiful a Heart to Strangers, what you do for your Favourites?

I THEN said, Permit my bold Eye, Sir, to watch yours, as I obey you; and you know you must not look full upon me then; for if you do, how shall I look at you again? how see, as I proceed, whether you are displeased? for you will not chide me in Words, so partial have you the Goodness to be to all I do.

HE put his Arm round me, and look'd down now-and-then, as I desired; for, Oh, Madam, he is all Condescension and Goodness, to his unworthy, yet grateful *Pamela*! And I told him all I have written to your Ladyship about the Forty Pounds. — And now, dear Sir, said I, half-hiding my Face on his Shoulder, you have heard what I have done, chide or beat your *Pamela*, if you please: It shall be all kind from you, and Matter of future Direction and Caution.

HE raised my Head, and kissed me two or three times, saying, Thus, then I chide, I beat my Angel! — And yet I have one Fault to find with you; and let Mrs. *Jervis*, if not in Bed, come up to us, and hear what it is; for I will *expose* you, as you deserve, before her. My *Polly* being in Hearing, attending to know if I wanted her Assistance to undress, I bad her

call Mrs. *Jervis*. And tho' I thought, from his kind Looks, and kind Words, as well as tender Behaviour, that I had not much to fear, yet I was impatient to know what my Fault was, for which I was to be exposed.

THE good Woman came; and as she enter'd with all that Modesty which is so graceful in her, he moved his Chair further from me, and, with a set Aspect, but not unpleasant, said, — Step in, Mrs. *Jervis*: Your Lady (for so, Madam, he will always call me to Mrs. *Jervis*, and to the Servants) has incurred my Censure; and I would not tell her in what, till I had you Face to Face.

SHE look'd surpris'd — now on me, now on her dear Master; and I, not knowing what he would say, looked a little attentive. — I am sorry — I am very sorry for it, Sir! said she, court'ying low. — But should be more sorry, if I were the unhappy Occasion.

WHY, Mrs. *Jervis*, I can't say but it is on your Account that I must blame her.

THIS gave us both Confusion; but especially the good Woman; for still I hoped much from his kind Behaviour to me just before. — And she said, Indeed, Sir, I could never deserve —

HE interrupted her, My Charge against you, *Pamela*, said he, is that of Niggardliness, and no other; for I will put you both out of your Pain: You ought not to have found out the Method of Repayment.

THE dear Creature, said he to Mrs. *Jervis*, seldom does any thing that can be mended; but, I think, when your good Conduct deserved an  
annual



annual Acknowledgement from me, in Addition to your Salary, the Lady should have shewed herself no less pleased with your Service than the Gentleman. — Had it been for old Acquaintance-sake, for Sex-sake, she should not have given me Cause to upbraid her on this Head. — But I will tell you, that you must look upon the Forty Pounds you have, as the Effect of a just Distinction on many Accounts; and your Salary from last Quarter-day shall be advanced, as the dear Niggard intended it some Years hence; and let me only add, that when my *Pamela* first begins to shew a Coldness to her Mrs. *Fervis*, I shall then suspect she is beginning to decline in that humble Virtue which is now peculiar to herself, and makes her the Delight of all who converse with her.

THIS was what he was pleased to *say*: Thus, with the most graceful Generosity, and a Nobleness of Mind, *truly* peculiar to himself, was he pleased to *act*: And what, does your Ladyship think, could Mrs. *Fervis* or I say to him? — Why, indeed, nothing at all! — We could only look upon one another, with our Eyes full, and our Hearts full, of a Gratitude that would not permit either of us to speak; but which express'd itself at last, in a Manner he was pleased to call more elegant than Words; and that was, with uplifted folded Hands, and Tears of Joy.

OH, my dear Lady! how many Opportunities have the beneficent *Rich* to make *themselves*, as well as their *Fellow-creatures*, happy!

All that I could think, or say, or act, was but my Duty before; what a Sense of Obligation then must I lie under to this most generous of Men!

BUT here let me put an End to this tedious Subject; the principal Part of which can have no Excuse, if it may not serve as a Proof of my chearful Compliance with your Ladyship's Commands, That I recite *every* thing that is of Concern to me, and with the same Freedom as I was wont to do to my dear Parents.

I HAVE done it, and at the same time have offer'd what I had to plead in Behalf of my Conduct to the Two Housekeepers, which you expected from me; and I shall therefore close this my humble Defence, if I may so call it, with the Assurance, that I am, my dearest Lady,

*Your obliged and faithful Servant,*

P. B.

## LETTER XIX.

*From Lady DAVERS to Mrs. B. In Answer to the Six last Letters.*

“ *WHERE* she had it, I can't tell; but I think I never met with the Fellow of her in my Life, at any Age;” are, as I remember, my Brother's Words, speaking of his *Pamela*, in the \* early Part of your Papers. In Truth, thou'rt a surprising Creature; and

\* See Vol. I. p. 49.

every

every Letter we have from you, we have new Subjects to admire you for. — Do you think, Lady *Betty*, said I, when I had read to the End of the Subject about Mrs. *Fervis*, I will not soon set out to hit this charming Girl a Box of the Ear or two?

FOR what, Lady *Davers*? said she.

FOR what! reply'd I. — Why, don't you see how many Slaps of the Face the bold Slut hits me? — *I'll* LADY-AIRS her! I will! — *I'll* teach her to reproach me, and so many of her Betters, with her Cottage-Excellencies, and Improvements that shame our Education.

WHY, you dear charming *Pamela*, did you only excel me in *Words*, I could forgive you; for there may be a Knack, and a Volubility, as to *Words*, that a natural Talent may supply; but to be thus out-done in *Thought* and in *Deed*, Who can bear it? and in so young an Insulter too!

WELL, *Pamela*, look to it, when I see you: You shall feel the Weight of my Hand, or — the Pressure of my Lip, one or t'other, depend on it, very quickly: For here, instead of my stooping, as I had thought it would be, to call *you* Sister, I shall be forced to think, in a little while, that you ought not to own *me* as *yours*, till I am nearer your Standard.

BUT to come to Business: I will summarily take Notice of the following Particulars in all your obliging Letters, in order to convince you of my Friendship, by the Freedom of my Observations on the Subjects you touch upon.



FIRST, then, I am highly pleased with what you write of the Advantages you received from the Favour of my dear Mother; and as you know many Things of her by your Attendance upon her, in the last Three or Four Years of her Life, I must desire you will give me, as Opportunity shall offer, all you can recollect in relation to the honoured Lady, and of her Behaviour and Kindness to you, and with a Retrospect to your own early Beginnings, the Dawnings of this your bright Day of Excellence: And this, not only I, but the Countess, and Lady *Betty*, with whom I am going over your Papers again, and her Sister Lady *Fenny*, request of you.

2. I AM much pleased with your *Kentish* Account; tho' we wished you had been more particular in some Parts of it; for we are greatly taken with your Descriptions, and your Conversation-pieces: Yet I own, your honest Father's Letters, and yours, a good deal supply that *Defect*, as our Pleasure in reading your Relations makes us call it. Your Parents are honest discreet Folks, I see that: I have a Value for them: and you're the prudentest Creature I ever knew, in all your Ways; particularly in the Advice you give them about your more distant Relations, and to aim at nothing beyond their natural Sphere. — Every Tittle is right, and as it should be. On these Accounts it is, that all the World will allow, that you, and your Parents too, merit the Fortune you have met with.

3. I AM

3. I AM highly delighted with the Account you give me of my Brother's breaking to you the Affair of *Sally Godfrey*, and your Conduct upon it. 'Tis a sweet Story, as he brought it in, and as you relate it. The Wretch has been very just in his Account of it. But don't you think he was a sad young Fellow! Well may you be thankful for *your* Escape! Well may you! — Your Behaviour was what I admire; and so we do all; but none of us think we could have imitated it in all its Parts. We are in Love with your charitable Reflections in favour of the poor Lady; and the more, as she certainly deserved them; and a better Mother too, than she had, and a faithfuller Lover, than she met with.

4. YOU have exactly hit his Temper, in your declared Love of Miss. I see, Child, you know your Man; and never fear but you'll hold him, if you can go on thus to act, and out-do your Sex. But I should think you might as well not insist upon having Miss with you; for the Girl may be pert, perhaps insolent (you know who is her Father); you'd not care to check her, for several Reasons, and this may make you uneasy; for, if you *did*, he might take it amiss, let your Motives be ever so good: So I think you'd better see her now-and-then at the Dairy-house, or at School, than have her with you. — But this I leave to your own Discretion, and *his* good Pleasure, to determine upon; for in the latter it must rest, let you, or I, or any body, say what we will.

5. You

5. You have fully, and to our Satisfaction, answer'd our Objections to your Behaviour to Mrs. *Jewkes*. We had not consider'd your Circumstances quite so thoroughly as we ought to have done. You are a charming Girl, and all your Motives are so just, that we shall be a little more cautious for the future how we censure you. We are particularly pleased with the Triumphs of your Innocence over his and her Guilt; and agree that they are the rightest and best-to-be-defended Motives for Pride that ever were set before us.

IN short, I say with the Countess, This good Girl is not without her Pride; but it is the Pride that becomes, and can only attend, the innocent Heart; and I'll warrant, said her Ladyship, nobody will become her Station so well, as one who is capable of so worthy a Pride as this.

BUT what a Curtain-Lecture hadst thou, *Pamela*! A noble one, dost thou call it! — Why, what a Wretch hast thou got, to expect thou shouldst never expostulate against his lordly Will, even when in the wrong, till thou hast obey'd it, and of consequence join'd in the Evil he imposes! He says, indeed, in *small* Points; but I suppose he is to judge which are and which are not small.

THUS, I remember, my Brother himself took Notice once of a Proposal in the House of Commons, to grant the Crown a very great Sum to answer Civil-List Deficiencies, which being opposed by the Minority, the Minister found out an Expedient, that they might give the Money  
*first,*



*first*, and examine into the Merits of the Demand *afterwards*. So we read, that, in some Countries, an accused Person is put to Death, and then try'd; and all he has to hope for while he lives, is, that his Relations, and his own Family, will be released from Obloquy, if an Acquittal ensues.

MUCH Good may such a Husband do you, says Lady *Betty*! — Every body will *admire* you; but no one will have Reason to *envy* you upon those Principles. Yet, I don't know how it is, but this is evident, that, at present, there is not a happier Couple in the World than you Two are.

6. I AM pleased with your Promise of sending me what you think I shall like to see, out of those Papers you chuse not to shew me collectedly: This is very obliging. You're a good Girl, and I love you dearly.

7. WE have all smiled at your Paradox, *Pamela*, that his marrying *you* was an Instance of his Pride. The Thought, tho', is pretty enough, and ingenious; but whether it will hold or not, I won't just now examine.

8. YOUR Observation on the *Forget* and *Forgive*, we are much pleased with; and think you have distinguished well on that Head.

9. YOU are a very good Girl for sending me a Copy of Miss *Darnford's* Letter. She is a charming young Lady. I always had a great Opinion of her Merit; her Letter abundantly confirms me in it. I hope you'll communicate to me every Letter that passes between you:  
And

And pray send me, in your next, a Copy of your Answer to her Letter; I must insist upon it, I think.

10. I AM glad with all my Heart to hear of poor *Jewkes's* Reformation. Your Example carries all before it. But pray oblige me with your Answer to her Letter. Don't think me unreasonable. 'Tis all for your sake: You must needs know that, or you know nothing. For I think you deserve all Miss *Darnford* says of you; and that's a great deal too.

PRAY — have you shewn *Jewkes's* Letter to your good Friend? — Lady *Betty* wants to know, (if you *have*) what he could say to it? for, she says, it cuts him to the Quick; and I think so too, if he takes it as he ought: But, as you say, he's above loving Virtue for *Virtue's sake*, I warrant him. He likes it in a Wife, because 'tis a Husband's Security against the Law of Retaliation. There's a great deal in that, I can tell you. I once heard the Wretch hold an Argument, That Women had no Souls. I ask'd him, If he were to marry, whether he'd have his Wife *act* as if she believ'd this Doctrine to be good? That were another thing, he said: He was for having his Wife think she had, he must own: Such a Belief could do her no Harm. Ah! *Pamela*, for Theory and Practice too, I doubt, never was such a Rake, for one not quite a Town Debauchee!

11. YOUR Manner of Acting by Mrs. *Jervis*, with so handsome a Regard to my Brother's Interest, her Behaviour upon it, and your Relation

tion of the Whole, and of his generous Spirit in approving, reprovng, and improving your prudent Generosity, make no inconsiderable Figure in your Papers. And Lady *Betty* says, Hang him, he has some excellent Qualities too! — It is impossible not to think well of him; and his good Actions go a great way towards atoning for his bad. But you, *Pamela*, have the Glory of all! We desire particularly, that you will never omit any of those moving Scenes, which you so well describe, be the Occasion what it will: For they are Nature, and that's your Excellence. Keep to that; for one more learned, I verily think, could not write as you do, nor instruct, and delight, and *move*, all at once, so very ingagingly.

12. I AM glad you are learning *French*: Thou art a happy Girl in thy Teacher, and he is a happy Man in his Scholar. We are pleased with the pretty Account you give us of his Method of Instructing and Rewarding. 'Twould be strange, if you did not learn any Language quickly under such Methods, and with such Encouragements, from the Man you love, were your Genius less apt than it is. But we wish'd you had enlarged on that Subject: For such Fondness of Men to their Wives, who have been any time marry'd, is so rare, and so unexpected from *my* Brother, that we thought you should have written a Side upon that Subject at least.

WHAT a bewitching Girl art thou! What an Exemplar to Wives now, as well as thou wast before to Maidens! Thou canst tame Lions, I dare



dare say, if thou'dst try! — Reclaim a Rake in the Meridian of his Libertinism, and make such a one as my Brother not only marry thee, but love thee better at several Months End, than he did the first Day, if possible! Wonderful Girl! Yet usest thou no Arts but honest ones, such as Prudence directs, Nature points out, and such as make Duty delightful, even commanding most, when thou seemest most to submit.

It must be owned indeed, that thou hast no brutal Mind to deal with: Bad as he is, it must be said, that thou hast a sensible and a generous Heart to work upon; one who takes no Glory in the blind Submission of a Slave; but, like a true *British* Monarch, delights to reign in a free, rather than in an abject Mind. Yet is he jealous as a Tyrant of his Prerogative: But you have found the way to lay that watchful Dragon asleep, and so possess the golden Fruits of Content and true Pleasure, the due Reward of your matchless Conduct.

Now, my dear *Pamela*, I think I have taken Notice of the most material Articles in your Letters, and have no more to say to you; but, Write on, and oblige us; and mind to send me the Copy of your Letter to Miss *Darnford*, of that you wrote to poor penitent *Jewkes*, and every Article I have written about, and all that comes into your Head, or that passes, and you'll oblige

*Yours, &c.*

B. DAVERS.

LET-

## L E T T E R XX.

*My dear Lady,*

I READ with Pleasure your Commands, in your last kind and obliging Letter, and you may be sure of a ready Obedience in every one of them that is in my Power.

THAT which I can most easily do, I will first do; and that is, to transcribe the Answer I sent to Miss *Darnford*,\* and that to Mrs. *Jewkes*, the former of which (and a long one it is) is as follows :

*Dear Miss,*

I BEGIN now to be afraid I shall not have the Pleasure and Benefit I promised myself, of passing a Fortnight or Three Weeks at the Hall, in your sweet Conversation, and that of your worthy Family, as well as those others in your agreeable Neighbourhood, whom I must always remember with equal Honour and Delight.

THE Occasion will be principally, that we expect very soon a Visit from Lord and Lady *Davers*, who propose to tarry here a Fortnight at least; and after that, the advanc'd Season will carry us to *London*, where Mr. *B.* has taken a House for his Winter Residence, and in order to attend Parliament: A Service, he says, which he has been more deficient in

\* See Miss *Darnford's* Letter, p. 94. of this Volume.

hitherto,

‘ hitherto, than he can either answer to his Con-  
‘ stituents, or to his own Conscience; for tho’,  
‘ he says, he is but One, yet if any good Mo-  
‘ tion should be lost by *One*, every absent Mem-  
‘ ber, who is independent, has it to reproach  
‘ himself with the Consequences that may fol-  
‘ low, on the Loss of that Good which might  
‘ otherwise redound to the Commonwealth.  
‘ And besides, he says, such Excuses as *he* could  
‘ make, *every one* might plead, and then pub-  
‘ lick Affairs might as well be left to the Ad-  
‘ ministration, and no Parliament be chosen.

‘ HE observed further on this Subject, that  
‘ every absent Member, in such Cases, indi-  
‘ rectly abets the Minister, be he *who* he will,  
‘ in all his Designs, be they *what* they will;  
‘ and is even less excusable to his Country,  
‘ than the Man, who, for a transitory Benefit  
‘ to his private Family, takes a Pension or Re-  
‘ ward for his Vote; since the Difference is only,  
‘ that the one passively ruins his Country by  
‘ Neglect and Indolence, which can do nobody  
‘ good, and the other more actively for a Bribe;  
‘ which Practice, tho’ ruinous in the End to the  
‘ whole Publick, in which his own Private is  
‘ included, yet serves to answer some present  
‘ Turn or Benefit to himself or Family.

‘ SEE you, my dear Miss, from the humble  
‘ Cottager, what a publick Person your favour’d  
‘ Friend is grown! And behold how easy it is  
‘ for a bold Mind, to look forward; and, per-  
‘ haps, forgetting what she was, now she ima-  
‘ gines she has a Stake in the Country, takes  
‘ upon



‘ upon herself to be as important, as significant,  
 ‘ as if, like my dear Miss *Darnford*, she had  
 ‘ been born to it! But if, nevertheless, I am cen-  
 ‘ sur’d for troubling my Head with Politicks, let  
 ‘ me answer, That I am at Liberty, I hope, to  
 ‘ tell you Mr. *B.*’s Sentiments of these high  
 ‘ Matters; and that is all I have done.

‘ WELL, but, my dearest Miss, may I not  
 ‘ presume to ask, Whether, if the Mountain  
 ‘ cannot come to *Mahomet*, *Mahomet* will not  
 ‘ come to the Mountain? Since Lady *Davers*’s  
 ‘ Visit is so uncertain as to its Beginning and  
 ‘ Duration, and so great a Favour, as I am to  
 ‘ look upon it, and really shall, it being her  
 ‘ first Visit to *me*; — and since we must go and  
 ‘ take Possession of our *London* Residence;  
 ‘ why can’t Sir *Simon* spare to us the dear Lady,  
 ‘ whom he could use so hardly; and whose  
 ‘ Attendance (tho’ he is indeed intitled to all  
 ‘ her Duty) he did not, just in that Instance,  
 ‘ quite so much deserve?

“ WELL, but, after all, Sir *Simon*,” would  
 ‘ I say, if I had been in Presence at his peevish  
 ‘ Hour,’ “ you are a fine Gentleman, are you  
 “ not? to take such a Method to shew your good  
 “ Daughter, that because she did not come *soon*  
 “ enough to you, she came *too soon*! And did  
 “ ever Papa, before you, put a *good Book* (for  
 “ such I doubt not it was, *because* you were in  
 “ Affliction, tho’ so little affected by its Pre-  
 “ cepts) to such a *bad Use*? As Parents Exam-  
 “ ples are so prevalent, suppose Miss had taken  
 “ this very Book, and flung it at her Sister;

“ Miss *Nanny* at her Waiting-maid; and so it  
 “ had gone thro’ the Family; would it not  
 “ have been an Excuse for every one, to say,  
 “ that the Father and Head of the Family had  
 “ set the Example?

“ BUT, again, Sir *Simon*, Suppose you had  
 “ hurt the sweet Dove-like Eyes of my dear  
 “ Miss *Darnford*! — Suppose you had bruise’d  
 “ or broken the fine Skin of any Part of that  
 “ fine Face, which gives, at first Sight, so bright a  
 “ Promise of her still finer Mind, What, let me  
 “ ask you, Sir, could you have said for yourself?  
 “ How would the dear Miss’s Appearance, with  
 “ one sweet Eye, perhaps, muffled up; with a  
 “ plaister’d Forehead, or a veiled Cheek, hide-  
 “ ing herself from every body but you, and  
 “ her griev’d Mamma, and pitying Sister, re-  
 “ proach’d you for so rash an Act; — nay, re-  
 “ proach’d you the more, by her unrepublishing  
 “ Obligingness, and chearful Duty, than if  
 “ (were she capable of it) she could have spoken  
 “ in sharp Complaints, and expostulatory Wail-  
 “ ings?

“ You almost wish, my dear Miss tells me,  
 “ that *I* would undertake *you*! — This is very  
 “ good of you, Sir *Simon*,” “ might I (would  
 “ his Patience have suffer’d me to run on thus)  
 “ have added — “ But I hope, since you are  
 “ so sensible, that you *want* to be undertaken,  
 “ and since this peevish Rashness convinces me,  
 “ that you *do*, that you will undertake *yourself*:  
 “ That you will not, when your Indisposition  
 “ makes the Attendance and Duty of my dear  
 “ Lady

“ Lady and Misses necessary, make it *more* un-  
 “ comfortable to them, by *adding* a Difficulty  
 “ of being pleas’d, and an Impatience of Spirit,  
 “ to the Concern their Duty and Affection  
 “ make them have for you ; and, *at least*, re-  
 “ solve never to take a Book into your Hand  
 “ again, if you cannot make a better Use of it,  
 “ than you did then.”

‘ PRAY, my dear Miss, tell your Papa, that  
 ‘ I beg the Favour of him, to present *me* with  
 ‘ this Book, and I will put a Mark upon it, and  
 ‘ it shall never more either give or receive such  
 ‘ Disgrace, I warrant it! Be it what it will, I  
 ‘ will present him with as good an one.

‘ I WILL write in it, “ Memorandum, This  
 “ Book, reversing the Author’s good Intention,  
 “ had like to have done Mischief next to unpar-  
 “ donable!” — ‘ Or, “ This Book, instead of  
 “ subduing the Reader’s Passions, (I take it for  
 “ granted, you see, Miss, it was *Seneca’s* Morals,  
 “ or some such good Book) had like to have  
 “ been the Cause of a violent Evil. — Hence-  
 “ forth, unavailing Instructor, be thou con-  
 “ demned to stand by thyself, on a lone Shelf,  
 “ in my Closet ; a Shelf most out of mine or  
 “ any other Person’s Reach, for pretending to  
 “ prescribe Rules for subduing the Passions in  
 “ so inefficacious a Manner! And, consign’d to  
 “ Dust and Cobwebs, not once presume (in  
 “ hope to hide thy conscious Guilt) to squeeze  
 “ thyself into Rank with better, or, at least,  
 “ with more convincing Teachers.”



‘ BUT do you think, my dear Miss, Sir  
 ‘ *Simon* would be angry, if Opportunity had  
 ‘ offer’d, and I had been thus bold? If you think  
 ‘ so, don’t let him see I had such Thoughts in  
 ‘ my Head. But, after all, if he were to have  
 ‘ been thus freely treated by me, and if he should  
 ‘ have *blush’d* with *Anger* at my Freedom, ’tis  
 ‘ but what he ought to bear from me; for, more  
 ‘ than once, he has made me *blush* for *Shame*, at  
 ‘ much greater on his Part; nay, and that too,  
 ‘ in Presence of his virtuous Daughters: So that  
 ‘ I have but half my Revenge upon him yet. —  
 ‘ And will you bear Malice, will he say, Mrs.  
 ‘ *B.*? — Yes, Sir *Simon*, I will; and nothing  
 ‘ but your amending the Evil can make me for-  
 ‘ give a Gentleman, that is *really* a Gentleman,  
 ‘ who can so sadly forego his Character, and,  
 ‘ before any Company, not scruple to expose a  
 ‘ modest Virgin to the forward Leer, and loud  
 ‘ Laugh, of younger Gentlemen, who durst not  
 ‘ take such Liberties of Speech, as they would  
 ‘ saucily chuckle at, when coming from the  
 ‘ Mouth of one of Sir *Simon*’s authenticating,  
 ‘ but better promising Time of Life.

‘ BUT Sir *Simon* will say, I have *already*  
 ‘ *undertaken* him, were he to see this. Yet my  
 ‘ Lady *Darnford* once begg’d I would give him  
 ‘ a Hint or two on this Subject; which, she was  
 ‘ pleas’d to say, would be better received from  
 ‘ me than from any body: And if it be a little  
 ‘ too severe, it is but a just Reprisal made by  
 ‘ one, whose Ears, he knows, he has cruelly  
 ‘ wounded more than once, or twice, or three  
 ‘ times;

‘ times; besides by what he calls his *innocent*  
 ‘ double Entendres — and who, if she had not  
 ‘ repented it, when an Opportunity offer’d, must  
 ‘ have been believed by him, to be neither more  
 ‘ nor less than an Hypocrite. — There’s for  
 ‘ you, Sir *Simon*; And so here ends all my Ma-  
 ‘ lice; for now I have spoken my Mind.

‘ YET I hope, your dear Papa will not be so  
 ‘ angry with me neither, as to deny me, for  
 ‘ this my Freedom, the Request I make to *him*,  
 ‘ to your honoured *Mamma*, and to your *dear*  
 ‘ *Self*, for your beloved Company, for a Month  
 ‘ or two, in *Bedfordshire*, and at *London*: And  
 ‘ if you might be permitted to winter with us  
 ‘ at the latter, how happy should I be! It will  
 ‘ be half done the Moment you desire it. Sir  
 ‘ *Simon* loves you too well to refuse you, if you  
 ‘ are earnest in it. Your honoured *Mamma* is  
 ‘ always indulgent to your Requests: And  
 ‘ Mr. *B.* as well in Kindness to me, as for the  
 ‘ great Respect he bears you, joins with me to  
 ‘ beg this Favour of you, and of Sir *Simon*, and  
 ‘ my Lady.

‘ IF it can be obtain’d, what Pleasure and  
 ‘ Improvement may I not propose to myself,  
 ‘ with so polite a Companion, when we are  
 ‘ carried by Mr. *B.* to the Play, to the Opera,  
 ‘ and other of the Town Diversions! We will  
 ‘ work together, visit together, read together,  
 ‘ sing together; and improve one another; you  
 ‘ *me*, in every Word you shall speak, in every  
 ‘ thing you shall do; I *you*, by my Questions,  
 ‘ and Desire of Information, which will make

‘ you open all your Breast to me; and so, un-  
‘ locking that dear Storehouse of virtuous Know-  
‘ lege, improve your own Notions the more for  
‘ communicating them. O my dear Miss *Darn-*  
‘ *ford*, how happy is it in your Power to make  
‘ me!

‘ I AM much affected with the Account you  
‘ give me of Mrs. *Jewkes*’s Reformation. I could  
‘ have wished, had I not *other* and *stronger* In-  
‘ ducements, (in the Pleasure of so agreeable a  
‘ Neighbourhood, and so sweet a Companion)  
‘ that on her Account, I could have been down  
‘ at the Hall, in hopes to have confirm’d the  
‘ poor Woman in her newly-assum’d Penitence.  
‘ God give her Grace to persevere in it! — To  
‘ be an humble Means of saving a Soul from  
‘ Perdition! O my dear Miss *Darnford*, let me  
‘ enjoy that Heart-ravishing Hope! — To pluck  
‘ such a Brand as this out of the Fire, and to  
‘ assist to quench its flaming Susceptibility for  
‘ Mischief, and make it useful to edifying Pur-  
‘ poses! what a Pleasure does this afford one!  
‘ How does it encourage one to proceed in the  
‘ Way one has been guided to pursue! How  
‘ does it make me hope, that I am raised to my  
‘ present Condition, in order to be an humble  
‘ Instrument in the Hand of Providence to com-  
‘ municate great Good to others, and so extend  
‘ to many those Benefits I have receiv’d; which  
‘ were they to go no further than myself, what  
‘ a vile, what an ingrateful Creature should I  
‘ be!

‘ I SEE,



‘ I SEE, my dearest Miss *Darnford*, how  
‘ useful in every Condition of Life a virtuous  
‘ and a serious Turn of Mind may be!

‘ How have I seen some Ladies in Upper Life  
‘ behave as if they thought good Actions, and  
‘ a pious Demeanour, would be so unfashion-  
‘ able, as to make them the Subjects of Ridi-  
‘ cule to the lighter-dispos’d World, and so they  
‘ are shamed out of their Duty! But let me  
‘ make it my Boast, that here is such a poor  
‘ Girl as I, raised from the Cottage to the Pa-  
‘ lace, as I may say, persevering in the good  
‘ Purposes which had been instilled into her,  
‘ by worthy, tho’ poor Parents, and the best of  
‘ Ladies, her Mistress; and resolving to be ob-  
‘ stinate in Goodness, having stood the Tests of  
‘ Libertinism; has brought the World to expect  
‘ good Actions from her, to respect her for  
‘ doing them, and has even found her Example  
‘ efficacious, thro’ Divine Grace, to bring over  
‘ to Penitence and Imitation a poor Crea-  
‘ ture, who used to ridicule her for nothing so  
‘ much as for her Innocence and Virtue, which,  
‘ Word and Thing, were the constant Subjects  
‘ of her Scorn, as well as the Cause of her Per-  
‘ secution.

‘ BUT let me not too much dwell upon the  
‘ dear Thought, lest I fall into the Snare that,  
‘ of all others, Persons meaning well, have Rea-  
‘ son to dread; that of *Spiritual Pride*, the most  
‘ dangerous of all Pride.

‘ IN hopes of seeing you with us, I will not  
‘ inlarge on several agreeable Subjects, which I

‘ could touch upon with Pleasure, besides what  
 ‘ I gave you in my former (of my Reception  
 ‘ here, and of the Kindness of our genteel Neigh-  
 ‘ bours); such, particularly, as the Arrival here  
 ‘ of my dear Father and Mother, and the kind,  
 ‘ the generous Entertainment they met with from  
 ‘ my best Friend: His Condescension in not only  
 ‘ permitting me to attend them to *Kent*, but  
 ‘ accompanying us thither, and settling them  
 ‘ in a most happy manner, beyond their Wishes  
 ‘ and my own; but yet so much in Character,  
 ‘ as I may say, that every one must approve his  
 ‘ judicious Benevolence: The Favours of my  
 ‘ good Lady *Davers* to me, who, pleas’d with  
 ‘ my Letters, has vouchsaf’d to become my Cor-  
 ‘ respondent; and a thousand, thousand Things  
 ‘ which I want personally to communicate to  
 ‘ my dear Miss *Darnford*.

‘ BE pleased to present my humble Respects  
 ‘ to Lady *Darnford*, and to Miss *Nanny*; to  
 ‘ good Madam *Jones*, and to your kind Friends  
 ‘ at *Stamford*; to Mr. and Mrs. *Peters* like-  
 ‘ wise, and their Kinswoman: And beg of that  
 ‘ good Gentleman from me, to encourage his  
 ‘ new Profelyte all he can; and I doubt not,  
 ‘ she will do Credit, poor Woman! to the  
 ‘ Pains he shall take with her. In hopes of your  
 ‘ kind Compliance with my Wishes for your  
 ‘ Company, I remain, dearest Miss,

‘ *Your faithful and obliged Friend*

‘ *and Servant,*

P. B.

THIS,

THIS, my good Lady *Davers*, is the long Letter I sent to Miss *Darnford*, who, at parting, engag'd me to keep up a Correspondence with her, and put me in hopes of passing a Month or two with us, at the Hall, if we came down, and if she could persuade Sir *Simon* and her Mamma to spare her to my Wishes. Your Ladyship will excuse me for so faintly mentioning the Honours you confer upon me; but I would not either add or diminish in the Communications I make to you.

THE following is a Copy of what I wrote to Mrs. *Jewkes*.

“ YOU give me, Mrs. *Jewkes*, very great  
“ Pleasure, to find that at length God  
“ Almighty has touch'd your Heart, and let you  
“ see, while Health and Strength lasted, the  
“ Error of your Ways. — Many an unhappy  
“ one has not been so graciously touched, till  
“ they have smarted under some heavy Affli-  
“ ctions, or till they have been confined to the  
“ Bed of Sickness, when, perhaps, they have  
“ made Vows and Resolutions, that have held  
“ them no longer than the Discipline lasted:  
“ But you give me much better Hopes of the  
“ Sincerity of your Conversion; as you are so  
“ well convinced, before some fore Evil has  
“ overtaken you: And it ought to be an Ear-  
“ nest to you of the Divine Favour, and should  
“ keep you from Despondency.

“ As for me, it became me to forgive you,  
“ as I most cordially did, since your Usage of  
“ me,



“ me, as it prov’d, was but a necessary Means  
 “ in the Hand of Providence, to exalt me to  
 “ that State of Happiness, in which I have every  
 “ Day more and more Cause given me to re-  
 “ joice, by the kindest and most generous of  
 “ Gentlemen.

“ As I have often pray’d for you, even when  
 “ you us’d me the most unkindly, I now praise  
 “ God for having heard my Prayers, and with  
 “ high Delight look upon you as a reclaimed  
 “ Soul given to my Supplications. May the Di-  
 “ vine Goodness enable you to persevere in the  
 “ Course you have entered upon! And when  
 “ you can taste the all-surpassing Pleasure that  
 “ fills the worthy Breast, on being placed in a  
 “ Station, where your Example may be of Ad-  
 “ vantage to the Souls of others, as well as to  
 “ your own; a Pleasure that every good Mind  
 “ glories in, and none else can truly relish; then  
 “ may you be assured, that nothing but your  
 “ Perseverance, and the consequential Improve-  
 “ ment resulting from it, is wanted, to con-  
 “ vince you, that you are in a right Way, and  
 “ that the Woe, that is pronounced against the  
 “ presumptuous Sinner, belongs not to you.

“ LET me, therefore, dear Mrs. *Jewkes*,  
 “ (for now *indeed* you are dear to me) caution  
 “ you against Two Things; the one, that you  
 “ return not to your former Ways, and wil-  
 “ fully err after this Repentance; for, in this  
 “ Case, the Divine Goodness will look upon  
 “ itself as mocked by you, and will withdraw  
 “ itself from you, and more dreadful will your  
 “ State

“ State then be, than if you had never repented  
“ The other, that you don’t despair of the Di-  
“ vine Mercy, which has so evidently manifested  
“ itself in your Favour, and has awakened you  
“ out of your deplorable Lethargy, without  
“ those sharp Medicines and Operations which  
“ others, and perhaps *not more faulty* Persons,  
“ have suffer’d. But go on chearfully in the  
“ happy Path which you have begun to tread.  
“ Depend upon it, you are now in the right  
“ Way, and turn not either to the Right-hand  
“ or to the Left : For the Reward is before you,  
“ in Reputation and a good Fame in this Life,  
“ and everlasting Felicity beyond it.

“ YOUR Letter is that of a sensible Woman,  
“ as I always thought you, and of a truly con-  
“ trite one, as I hope you will approve yourself  
“ to be; and I the rather hope it, because I shall  
“ be always desirous then of taking every Op-  
“ portunity that offers to me of doing you real  
“ Service, as well with regard to your present  
“ as future Life; for I am, *good Mrs. Fewkes*,  
“ as I now hope I may call you,

“ *Your loving Friend to serve you,*

“ P. B.

“ Whatever good Books the worthy Mr.  
“ *Peters* will be so kind as to recommend  
“ to you, and for those under your Di-  
“ rection, send for them either to *Lin-*  
“ *coln*, or *Stamford*, or *Grantham*, as you  
“ can get them, and place them to my Ac-  
“ count: And may they be the effectual  
“ Means

“ Means of confirming you and them in  
 “ the good Way you are in ! I have done as  
 “ much for all here before ; and I hope to  
 “ no bad Effect : For I shall now tell them  
 “ by Mrs. *Jervis*, if there be Occasion, that  
 “ I hope they will not let me be out-done  
 “ in *Bedfordshire* by Mrs. *Fewkes* in *Lin-*  
 “ *colnshire* ; but that the Servants of both  
 “ Houses may do Credit to the best of  
 “ Masters. Adieu, *good* Woman ! as once  
 “ more I take Pleasure to style you.”

THUS, my good Lady, have I obey'd you,  
 in transcribing these Two Letters. I will now  
 proceed to your Ladyship's Twelve Articles. As  
 to the

1. I WILL oblige your Ladyship, as I have  
 Opportunity, in my future Letters, with such  
 Accounts of my dear Lady's Favour and Good-  
 ness to me, as I think will be acceptable to you,  
 and to the noble Ladies you mention.

2. I AM extremely delighted, that your Lady-  
 ship thinks so well of my dear honest Parents :  
 Indeed they are good People, and ever had  
 Minds that set them above low and sordid  
 Actions ; and God and your good Brother has  
 rewarded them most amply in this World ;  
 which is more than they ever expected, after a  
 Series of Unprosperousness in all they under-  
 took.

YOUR Ladyship is pleased to say, that Peo-  
 ple in Upper Life love to see how plain Nature  
 operates in honest Minds, who have hardly any  
 thing



thing else for their Guide; and if I might not be thought to descend too low for your Ladyship's Attention, (for as to myself, I shall, I hope, always look back with Pleasure to what I *was*, in order to increase my Thankfulness for what I *am*) I would give you a Scene of Resignation, and contented Poverty, of which otherwise your Ladyship can hardly have a Notion. I *will* give it, because it will be a Scene of Nature, however low, which your Ladyship loves, and it shall not tire you by its Length.

It was upon Occasion of a great Loss and Disappointment which happened to my dear Parents (for tho' they were never high in Life, yet they were not always so low as my honour'd Lady found them, when she took me): My poor Father came home; and as the Loss was of such a Nature, as that he could not keep it from my Mother, he took her Hand, I remember well, and said, after he had acquainted her with it, " Come, my Dear, let us take Comfort, that we did for the best. We left the  
" Issue to Providence, as we ought, and that  
" has turned it as it pleased; and we must be  
" content, tho' not favoured as we wished.  
" All the Business is, our Lot is not cast for this  
" Life. Let us resign ourselves to the Divine  
" Will, and continue to do our Duty, and this  
" short Life will soon be past. Our Troubles  
" will be quickly overblown; and we shall be  
" happy in a better, I make no Doubt."

Then my dear Mother threw her kind Arms about his Neck, and said, with Tears, " God's  
" Will

“ Will be done, my dear Love! — All cannot be rich and happy. I am contented; and  
“ had rather say, I have a poor honest Husband,  
“ than a guilty rich one. What signifies repining? Let the World go as it will, we shall  
“ have our Length and our Breadth at last. And  
“ Providence, I make no Doubt, will be a better Friend to our good Girl here, because she  
“ is good, than we could be, if this had not  
“ happened,” — pointing to me, who, then about Eleven Years old, (for it was before my Lady took me) sat weeping in the Chimney Corner, over a few dying Embers of a Fire, at their moving Expressions.

I AROSE, and kissing both their Hands, and blessing them, said, “ And this Length and  
“ Breadth, my dear Parents, will be, one Day,  
“ all the Rich and the Great can possess; and,  
“ it may be, their ungracious Heirs will trample upon their Ashes, and rejoice they are  
“ gone: While such a poor Girl as I, am honouring the Memories of mine, who in their  
“ good Names, and good Lessons, will have  
“ left me the best of Portions.”

AND then they both hugg’d their prating Girl to their fond Bosoms, by Turns; and all Three were so filled with Comfort in one another, that after joining in a grateful Hymn, we went to Bed (what tho’ supperless, perhaps?) with such true Joy, that very few of the Rich and Great can have any Idea of it; I to my Loft, and they to their Rush-floor’d cleanly Bed-Room. And we have had sweet Sleep, and Dreams so pleasant,

pleasant, that we have reaped greater Pleasures, in repeating them one to another, at our next Leisure-Hour, than, possibly, we should have received, had we enjoy'd the Comforts we wanted.

AND, truly, my Lady, I must needs say, that while the virtuous Poor can be bless'd with such sweet Enjoyments as these, in contented Minds all Day, and in sound Sleep at Night, I don't know whether they have not more, even of *this* World's Pleasures, than the abounding Rich: And while the Hours of Night bear so near a Proportion to those of the Day, may not such be said, even at the worst, to pass at least *half* their Lives with more Comfort than many times the *voluptuous* and *distemper'd* Great can pretend to know?

FOR a further Proof, that *honest Poverty* is not such a deplorable thing as some People imagine, let me ask, what Pleasure can those overhappy Persons know, who, from the Luxury of their Tastes, and their affluent Circumstances, always eat before they are hungry, and drink before they are thirsty? This may be illustrated by the Instance of a certain Eastern Monarch, who, as I have read, marching at the Head of a vast Army, through a wide-extended Desert, which afforded neither River nor Spring, for the first time found himself (in common with his Soldiers) overtaken by a craving Thirst, which made him wish for and pant after a Cup of Water. And when at last, after diligent and distant Search, one of his Soldiers found out a little dirty Puddle,



Puddle, and carry'd him some of the filthy Water in his nasty Helmet; the Monarch, greedily swallowing it, cry'd out, That in all his Life he never tasted so sweet a Draught!

BUT when I talk or write of my dear worthy Parents, how I run on!—Excuse me, my good Lady; and don't think me, in this respect, too much like the Cat in \* the Fable, turn'd into a fine Lady; for, methinks, though I would never forget what I was, yet I would be thought to know *how*, gratefully to enjoy my present Happiness, as well with regard to my Obligations to GOD, as to your dear Brother. But let me proceed to your Ladyship's Third Particular.

3. AND you cannot imagine, Madam, how much you have set my Heart at Rest, when you tell me, that my dear Mr. B. gave me a just Narrative of his Affair with Miss *Godfrey*: For, when your Ladyship desir'd to know, how he had recounted that Story, lest you should make a Misunderstanding between us unawares, I did not know what to think. I was afraid some Blood had been shed on the Occasion by the dear Gentleman: For Miss was ruin'd, and, as to her, nothing could have happened worse. And the Regard I have for his future Happiness, which, in my constant Supplications for him in private, costs me many a Tear, gave me great Apprehensions, and not a little Un-

\* See the New *Æsop's Fables*, sold by J. Osborn, in Pater-noster Row.

easiness. But as your Ladyship tells me, that he gave me a just Account, I am very happy again.

WHAT makes one, my dear Lady, in our most prosperous Condition, be always intermingling one's Fears of what *may be*; whereby one robs one's self of the Pleasure of one's best worldly Enjoyments? — Is this Apprehensiveness, does your Ladyship think, implanted in our Natures for wise and good Ends, that we may not think ourselves so happy here, as to cause us to forget, that there is a better and more perfectly happy State, which we ought to aspire after? I believe it is: And if so, what an useful Monitor do we carry about us, that shall make us consider and reflect, when in Prosperity; and in Adversity teach us to bear up to Hopes of a happier Lot! Thus it is said by Mr. *Norris*, in his Translation of one of *Horace's* Odes;

*Be Life and Spirit when Fortune proves unkind,,  
And summon up the Vigour of thy Mind,  
But when thou'rt driv'n by too officious Gales,  
Be wise, and gather in the swelling Sails.*

I NOW come to your Ladyship's fourth Particular.

AND highly delighted I am for having obtained your Approbation of my Conduct to the Child, as well as of my Behaviour towards the dear Gentleman on the unhappy Lady's Score. Your Ladyship's wise Intimations about having

the Child with me, make due Impression upon me; and I see in them, with grateful Pleasure, your kind and unmerited Regard for me. Yet I don't know how it is, but I have conceived a strange Passion for this dear Baby: I cannot but look upon her poor Mamma as my Sister in point of Trial: And shall not the prosperous Sister pity and love the poor dear Sister, that, in so slippery a Path, has *fallen*, while *she* had the Happiness to keep her Feet?

No doubt, Miss *Godfrey* loved Virtue, and preferred it to all Considerations: 'Tis plain she did even after her Fall — when, as I have observed in the Papers \* I sent your Ladyship, she could leave Country, Parents, Friends, and the Man of all others she loved best, and seek a new Fortune, run the Danger of the Seas, and perhaps the Hazards of meeting with worse Men, rather than trust to her own Strength, where it had once so unhappily failed her. — What a Love of Virtue for Virtue's sake is this! I know not who could have acted up to this Part of her Character.

THE rest of your Ladyship's Articles give me the greatest Pleasure and Satisfaction; and if I can but continue myself in the Favour of your dear Brother, and improve in that of his noble Sister, how happy shall I be! I will do all I can to deserve both. And I hope your Ladyship will take as an Instance that I will, the chearful Obedience which I pay to your Commands, in writing to so fine a Judge, such

\* See Vol. II. p. 412, 413.



crude and indigested Stuff, as otherwise I ought to be ashamed to lay before you.

I A M impatient for the Honour, which your Ladyship makes me hope for, of your Presence here: And yet I perplex myself with the Fear of appearing so unworthy in your Eyes, when near you, as to suffer in your Opinion; but I promise myself, that however this may be the Case on your *first* Visit, I shall be so much improved by the Benefits I shall reap from your Lessons and good Example, that whenever I shall be favour'd with a *Second*, you shall have fewer Faults to find with me; till, as I shall be more and more favoured, I shall in time be just what your Ladyship will wish me to be, and of Consequence more worthy than I am of the Honour of styling myself

*Your Ladyship's most humble  
and obedient Servant,*

P. B.

---

## L E T T E R XXI.

*From Miss Darnford. In Answer to Mrs. B.'s,  
p. 127.*

*My dear Mrs. B.*

**Y**OU are highly obliging to me in expressing so warmly your Wishes to have me with you. I know not any body in this World,

L 2

out

out of our own Family, in whose Company I should be happier: But my Papa won't part with me, I think; tho' I have secur'd my Mamma in my Interest; and I know *Nancy* would be glad of my Absence, because the dear perversly Envious thinks *me* more valued than *she* is; and yet, foolish Girl, she don't consider, that, if her Envy be well-grounded, I should return with more than double Advantages to what I now have, improved by your charming Conversation.

My Papa affects to be in a fearful Pet at your lecturing of him so justly; for my Mamma would shew him the Letter; and he says he will positively demand Satisfaction of Mr. *B.* for your treating him so freely. And yet he shall hardly think him, he says, on a Rank with him, unless Mr. *B.* will, on Occasion of the new Commission, take out his *Dedimus*: And then, if he will bring you down to *Lincolnshire*, and join with him to commit you Prisoner for a Month at the Hall, all shall be well.

It is very obliging in Mr. *B.* to join in your kind Invitation: But — yet I am loth to say it to you — the Character of your worthy Gentleman, I doubt, stands a little in the Way with my Papa: For he will have it, that he is just such a Rake as is to be liked by a Lady; one that saves common Appearances, and that's all; and is too handsome, too witty, and too enterprising, for any *honest Man*, that's Sir *Simon's* Phrase, *to trust his Daughter with.*

My

MY Mamma pleaded his being marry'd. — Ads-dines, Madam, said he, what of all that! What married Man, when a pretty Girl's in the Way, minds his Wife, except she has made him stand in Fear of her? and that's far from the Case here. Why I tell you, added his peevish Highness, if our *Polly* should happen to slip, (I thank him for his Supposition) he'd make his Lady nurse both *her* and the *Bastard*, (another of his polite Expressions) if he had a mind to it, and she durst not refuse him. And would you trust such a spritely Girl as *Polly*, in the House with such a Fellow as that?

THESE, it seems, were his Words and his Reasonings: I thank him for his Opinion of his Daughter. It becomes not me to say, by what Rules my Papa judges of Mankind; Rules, however, that are not much to the Credit of his Sex: — But it made me put on very grave Airs when I came to Supper, (for, after this Repulse, and the Reasons given for it, I pretended Indisposition, not to dine with my Papa, being half-vexed, and half-afraid of his Raillery) and he said, Why, how now, *Polly*! What! in the Sullens, Girl? I said, I should have hoped, that I never gave my Papa Cause to suspect my Conduct, and that he would have had a better Opinion of the Force which the Example and Precepts of my good Mamma had upon me.

NOT your *Papa's* Example then. — Very well, Saucebox: I understand you.



BUT, Sir, said I, I hope, if I may not go to *Bedfordshire*, you'll permit me to go *London* when Mrs. B. goes.

No, said he, positively no!

WELL, Sir, I have done. I could hope, however, you would enable me to give a better Reason to good Mrs. B. why I am not permitted to accept of her kind Invitation, than that which I understand you have been pleased to assign.

HE stuck his Hands in his Sides, with his usual humourous Positiveness, Why then tell her, she is a very saucy Lady, for her last Letter to you; and that her Lord and Master is not to be trusted; and it is my absolute Will and Pleasure, that you ask me no more Questions about it.

I WILL very faithfully make this Report, Sir. Do so. — And so I have. — And your poor *Polly Darnford* is disappointed of one of the greatest Pleasures she could have had.

I CAN'T help it. — And if you truly pity me, I can put you in a Way to make me easier under the Disappointment, than otherwise I can possibly be; and that is, to favour me with an Epistolary Conversation, since I am deny'd a Personal one; and this my Mamma joins with me to request of you; and particularly, to let us know how Lady *Davers's* first Visit passes; which Mrs. *Peters* and Mrs. *Jones*, who know my Lady so well, likewise long to hear: And this will make us the best Amends in your Power  
for

for the Loss of your good Neighbourhood, which we had all promis'd to ourselves.

THIS Denial of my Papa comes out, since I wrote the above, to be principally owing to a Proposal made him of an humble Servant to one of his Daughters: He won't say which, he tells us, in his usual humourous Way, lest we should fall out about it.

I SUPPOSE, I tell him, the young Gentleman is to pick and chuse which of the Two he likes best. But be he a Duke, 'tis all one to *Polly*, if he be not something above our common *Lincolnshire* Class of Fox-hunters.

I HAVE shewn Mr. and Mrs. *Peters* your Letter. They admire you beyond Expression; and Mr. *Peters* says, He does not know, that ever he did any thing in all his Life, that gave him so much inward Reproach, as his denying you the Protection of his Family, which Mr. *Williams* \* sought to move him to afford you, when you was confined at the Hall, before Mr. *B.* came down to you, with his Heart bent on Mischief; and all he comforts himself with is, that that very Denial, as well as the other Hardships you met with, were necessary to bring about that Work of Providence which was to reward your unexampled Virtue.

YET, he says, he doubts he shall not be thought excusable by you, who are so exact in your own Duty, since he had the Unhappiness to lose such an Opportunity to have done Ho-

\* See Vol. I. p. 220, 221.

nour to his Function, had he had the Fortitude to have done *his*; and he begg'd of me, some how or other, and at some time or other, to hint his Concern to you on this Head; and to express his Hopes, that neither Religion nor his Cloth may suffer in your Opinion, for the Fault of one of its Professors, who never was wanting in his Duty so much before.

HE had it often upon his Mind, he says, to write to you on this very Subject; but he had not the Courage; and besides, did not know how Mr. *B.* might take it, if he should see that Letter, as the Case had such delicate Circumstances in it, that in blaming himself, as he should very freely have done, he must, by Implication, have cast still greater Blame upon him.

MR. *Peters* is certainly a very good Man, and my Favourite for that Reason; and I hope, *you*, who could so easily forgive the late wicked, but now penitent *Jewkes*, will overlook with Kindness a Fault in a good Man, which proceeded more from Pusillanimity and Constitution, than from Want of Principle: For once, talking of it to my Mamma before me, he accused himself on this score, to her, with Tears in his Eyes. She, good Lady, would have given you this Protection, at Mr. *Williams's* Desire; but wanted the \* Power to do it.

So you see, my dear Mrs. *B.* how your Virtue has shamed every one into such a Sense of what they ought to have done, that Good, Bad

\* See Vol. I. p. 219, 220.



and Indifferent are seeking to make Excuses for past Misbehaviour, and to promise future Amendment, like penitent Subjects returning to their Duty to their conquering Sovereign, after some unworthy Defection.

HAPPY, happy Lady! May you be ever so! May you always convert your Enemies, stimulate the Lukewarm, and every Day multiply your Friends, wishes

*Your most affectionate*

POLLY DARNFORD.

P. S. How I rejoice in the Joy of your honest Parents! God bless 'em! I am glad Lady *Davers* is so wise. Every one I have named desire their best Respects. Let me hear from you oftener, and omit not the minutest Thing: For every Line of yours carries Instruction with it.

---

## L E T T E R XXII.

*From Sir SIMON DARNFORD to Mr. B.*

SIR,

LITTLE did I think I should ever have Occasion to make a formal Complaint against a Person very dear to you, and who I believe deserves to be so; but don't let her be so proud and so vain of obliging and pleasing you,

you, as to make her not care how she affronts every body else.

THE Person is no other than the Wife of your Bosom, who has taken such Liberties with me as ought not to be taken, and sought to turn my own Child against me, and make a dutiful Girl a Rebel.

IF People will set up for Virtue, and all that, let 'em be uniformly virtuous, or I would not give a Farthing for their Pretences.

HERE I have been plagued with Gouts, Rheumatisms, and nameless Disorders, ever since you left us, which have made me call for a little more Attendance than ordinary; and I had Reason to think myself slighted, where an indulgent Father can least bear to be so, that is, where he most loves; and that by young Upstarts, who are growing up to the Enjoyment of those Pleasures which have run away from me, fleeting Rascals as they are! before I was willing to part with them. And I rung and rung, and, Where's *Polly*? (for I honour the Slut with too much of my Notice) Where's *Polly*? was all my Cry, to every one who came up to ask what I rung for. And at last in burst the pert Baggage, with an Air of Assurance, as if she thought all must be well the Moment she appeared, with, Do you want me, Papa?

Do I want you, Confidence! Yes, I do. Where have you been these Two Hours, that you never came near me, when you knew it was my Time to have my Foot rubbed, which  
gives

gives me mortal Pain? For you must understand, Mr. B. that nobody's Hand's so soft as *Polly's*.

SHE gave me a saucy Answer, as I was disposed to think it, because I had just then a Twinge, that I could scarce bear; for Pain is a plaguy thing to a Man of my lively Spirits. Why, with a P--x to it, cannot it go and rouse up some stupid lethargic Rascal, whose Blood is ready to stagnate? There it might do some Good; and not make an honest Man miserable, as it does me, who want none of its pungent Helps to Feeling.

SHE gave me, I say, a careless Answer, and turned upon her Heel; and not coming to me at my first Word, I flung a Book I had in my Hand at her Head.

THIS the Boldface (Girls now-a-days make nothing of exposing their indulgent Parents) has mention'd in a Letter to your Lady; and she has abused me upon it in *such* a manner — Well, if you don't take some Course with her, I must with you, that's positive; and young as you are, and a Cripple as I am, I'll stump to an appointed Place, to procure to myself the Satisfaction of a Man of Honour.

YOUR Lady has written to *Polly* what *she* would have said to me on this Occasion. She has reflected upon me for not reading a Book of Mortification, when I was labouring under so great a Sense of it, and confined to my Elbow-chair in one Room, whom lately half a Dozen Counties could hardly have contained: She has put it into *Polly's* Head to fling this very  
Book



Book at her Sister's Head, in Imitation of my Example, and hopes *Nancy* will fling it at somebody's else, till it goes all round the House: She reproaches me for making no better Use of a *good* Book, as she calls *Rabelais's Pantagruel*, which I innocently was reading to make me the more chearfully bear my Misfortune; and runs on a Pack of Stuff about my *Polly's* Eyes, and Skin, and I don't know what, on Purpose to fill the Girl with Notions of what don't belong to her, in order to make her proud and saucy; and then, to inspire her with Insolence to me, runs on with Suppositions of what Harm I might have done her, had the Book bruised her Face, or put out her Eyes, and so forth: As if our Daughters Eyes were not our own Eyes, their brazen Faces our brazen Faces; at least till we can find somebody to take them, and all the rest of their Trumpery, off of our Hands. — Saucy Baggages! who have neither Souls nor Senses, but what they have borrowed from us; and whose very Bones, and the Skin that covers them, so much their Pride and their Ornament, are so many Parts of our own undervalued Skin and Bones; and our Skins only are more wrinkled, by taking Pains to make theirs smooth.

NAY, this fine Lady of yours, this Paragon of Meekness and Humility, in so many Words, bids me, or tells my own Daughter, which is worse, to bid me, never to take a Book in my Hands again, if I won't make a better Use of it: And yet, what better Use can an offended  
 Father

Father make of the best Books, than to correct a rebellious Child with them, and oblige a saucy Daughter to jump into her Duty all at once?

THEN, pray, Sir, do you allow your Lady to beg Presents from Gentlemen? — This is a tender Point to touch upon: But you shall know all, I am resolved. — For here she sends to desire me to make her a Present of this very Book, and promises to send me another as good.

COME, come, Sir, these are no jesting Matters; for, is it not a sad thing to think of, that Ladies, let them be young or old, well-marry'd or ill-marry'd, cannot live without Intrigue? And here, if I were not a very honest Man, and your Friend, and *resolved* to be a virtuous Man too, in spite of Temptation, one does not know what might be the Consequence of such a Correspondence as is here begun, or rather *desired* to be begun; for I have too much *Honour* to give into it, for your sake; and I hope you'll think yourself much obliged to me. — I know the Time that I have improved a more mysterious Hint than this, into all that I had a Mind to make of it. And it may be very happy for you, Neighbour, that I *must* and *will* be virtuous, let the Temptation be from whom it will: For the finest Lady in the World is nothing to me now — in this my Reformed State.

BUT this is not all: Mrs. B. goes on to reflect upon me for making her blush formerly, and  
saying

saying Things before my Daughters, that, truly, I ought to be ashamed to say; and then avows Malice and Revenge, and all that. Why, Sir, why, Neighbour, are these Things to be borne? — Do you allow your Lady to set up for a general Corrector of every body's Morals but your own? Do you allow her to condemn the only Instances of Wit that remain to this Generation, that dear polite *Double Entendre*, which keeps alive the Attention, and quickens the Apprehension of the best Companies in the World, and is the Sauce, which gives a Piquancy to all our genteeler Entertainments?

VERY fine, truly! that more than half the World shall be shut out of Society, shall be precluded their Share of Conversation among the Gay and Polite of both Sexes, were your Lady to have her Will! Let her first find People who can support a Conversation with Wit and good Sense like her own, and then something may be said: But till then I positively say, and will swear upon Occasion, that *Double Entendre* shall not be banish'd from our Tables; and where this won't raise a Blush, or create a Laugh, we will be at Liberty, if we please, for all Mrs. B. and her new-fangled Notions, to force the one and the other by still plainer Hints, and let her help herself how she can.

THUS, Sir, you find my Complaints are of a high Nature, regarding the Quiet of a Family, the Duty of a Child to a Parent, the Advances of a marry'd Lady to a Gentleman who is resolv'd to be virtuous, and the Freedom and  
 Politeness



Politeness of Conversation; in all which Points your Lady has greatly offended; and I insist upon Satisfaction from you, or such a Correction of the fair Transgressor, as is in your Power to inflict, and which may prevent worse Consequences, from

*Your offended Friend and Servant,*

SIMON DARNFORD.

---

## L E T T E R XXIII.

*From Mr. B. In Answer to the preceding.*

*Dear Sir* SIMON,

**Y**OU cannot but believe, that I was much surpris'd at your Letter, complaining of the Behaviour of my Wife. I could no more have expected such a Complaint from such a Gentleman, than I could, that *she* would have deserved it: And I am very sorry on *both* Accounts. I have talked to her in such a manner, that, I dare say, she will never give you like Cause to appeal to me.

It happened, that the Criminal herself receiv'd your Letter from her Servant, and brought it to me in my Closet, and, making her Honours, (for I can't say but she is very obliging to me, tho' she takes such saucy Freedoms with my Friends) away she tripp'd; and I, inquiring for her, when, with Surprise, as  
you

you may believe, I had read your Charge, found she was gone to visit a poor sick Neighbour, of which indeed she had before appris'd me, because she took the Chariot; but I had forgot it in my Wrath.

'T WAS well for her, that she was not in the Way; perhaps I should have taken more severe Methods with her in my first Emotions; and I long'd for her Return: And there is another *Well-for-her* too in her Case; for one would be loth to spoil a Son and Heir, you know, Sir *Simon*, before we see whether the little Varlet may deserve one's Consideration.

I MENTION these Things, that you may observe, it was not owing to any Regard for the Offender herself, that I did not punish her as much as injur'd Friendship requir'd at my Hands.

AT last, in she came, with that sweet Composure in her Face which results from a Conscience of doing *generally* just and generous Things; altho' in this Instance she has so egregiously err'd, that it behoves me (as well in Justice to my Friend, as Policy to myself; for who knows whither first Faults may lead, if not check'd in time?) to nip such Boldness in the Bud. And indeed the Moment I beheld the Charmer of my Heart, (for I do love her too well, that's certain) all my Anger was disarm'd; and had the Offence regarded *myself*, I must have forgiven her, in spite of all my meditated Wrath. But it behoved me in a *Friend's* Case not to be soon subdued by a too partial

partial Fondness: I resumed therefore that Sternness and Displeasure which her Entrance had almost dissipated. I took her Hand: Her charming Eye (you know what an Eye she has, Sir *Simon*) quiver'd at my over-clouded Aspect, and her Lips half-drawn to a Smile, trembled with Apprehension of a Countenance so changed from what she left it.

AND then, all stiff and stately as I could look, did I accost her: Come along with me, *Pamela*, to my Closet. I want to talk with you.

DEAR Sir! good Sir! What's the Matter? what have I done?

WE enter'd. I sat down, still holding her unsteady Hand, and her Pulse fluttering under my Finger, like a dying Bird.

'TIS *well*, said I, 'tis *well*, your present Condition pleads for you! and I must not carry what I have to say too far, for Considerations less in your Favour, than for one unseen: But I have great Complaints against you.

AGAINST me, Sir! — What have I done? Let me know, dear good Sir! looking round, with her half-affrighted Eyes, this way and that, on the Books, and Pictures, and on me, by Turns.

YOU shall know soon, said I, the Crime you have been guilty of.

CRIME, Sir! Pray let me! — This Closet, I hoped, would not be a *second* Time Witness to the Flutter you put me in.



THERE hangs a Tale, Sir *Simon*, which I am not very fond of relating, since it gave Beginning to the Triumphs of this \* little Sorceress.

ISTILL held one Hand, and she stood before me, as Criminals ought to do before their Judge; but said, I see, Sir, sure I do, or what will else become of me! less Severity in your Eyes, than you affect to put on in your Countenance. Dear Sir, let me know my Fault! I will repent, acknowledge and amend: Let me *but* know it.

You must have great Presence of Mind, *Pamela*, such is the Nature of your Fault, if you can look me in the Face when I tell it you.

THEN let me, said the irresistible Charmer, hiding her Face in my Bosom, and putting her other Arm about my Neck; let me thus, my dear Mr. *B.* hide this guilty Face, while I hear my Fault told; and I will not seek to extenuate it, but by my Tears, and my Penitence.

I COULD hardly hold out. What infatuating Creatures are these Women, when they can think it thus worth their while to sooth and calm the Tumults of an angry Heart! When, instead of *scornful* Looks darted in Return for *angry* ones, Words of *Defiance* for Words of *Peevishness*, persisting to defend *one* Error by *another*, and returning *vehement Wrath* for *slight Indignation*, and all the hostile Provocations of the Marriage Warfare; they can thus hide their dear Faces in our Bosoms, and wish but to *know* their Faults, to *amend* them.

\* See Vol. I. p. 91. & seq.

I COULD

I COULD hardly, I say, resist the sweet Girl's Behaviour; nay, I believe I did, unawares to myself, and in Defiance of my resolv'd Displeasure, press her Forehead with my Lips, as the rest of her Face was hid on my Breast: But, considering it was the Cause of my *Friend* that I was to assert, my *injured* Friend, wounded and insulted, in so various a Manner, by the fair Offender, thus haughtily spoke I to the trembling Mischief, in a Pomp of Style theatrically tragick:

I WILL not, too inadvertent and undistinguishing *Pamela*, keep you long in Suspense, for the sake of a Circumstance, that, on this Occasion, ought to give you as much Joy, as it has, till now, given me — Since it becomes an Advocate in your Favour, when otherwise you might expect a very severe Treatment. Know then, that the Letter you gave me before you went out, was a Letter from a Friend, a Neighbour, a worthy Neighbour, complaining of your Behaviour to him; — no other than Sir *Simon Darnford*, (for I would not amuse her too much) a Gentleman I must always respect, and whom, as *my* Friend, I expected *you* should: Since by the Value a Wife expresses for one esteemed by her Husband, whether she thinks so well of him herself, or not, a Man ought always to judge of the Sincerity of her Regards to himself.

SHE raised her Head at once on this: Thank Heaven! said she, it is no worse! — I was at my Wits End almost, in Apprehension: But I

know how this must be. — Dear Sir, How could you frighten me so? — I know how all this is! — I can now look you in the Face, and hear all that Sir *Simon* can charge me with: For I am sure, I have not so affronted him, as to make him angry indeed. And truly, (ran she on, secure of Pardon, as she seem'd to think) I should respect Sir *Simon*, not only as your Friend, but on his own Account, if he was not so sad a Rake at a Time of Life —

THEN I interrupted her, you must needs think, Sir *Simon*; for how could I bear to hear my worthy Friend so freely treated? — How now, *Pamela*! said I; and is it thus, by *repeating* your Fault, that you *atone* for it? Do you think I can bear to hear my Friend so freely treated?

INDEED, said she, I do respect Sir *Simon* very much, as your *Friend*, permit me repeat; but cannot for his wilful Failings. Would it not be, in some measure, to approve of faulty Conversation, if one can hear it, and not discourage it, when the Occasion comes in so pat? — And, indeed, I was glad of an Opportunity, continued she, to give him a little Rub; I must needs own it: But if it displeases you, or has made him angry in Earnest, I am sorry for it, and will be less bold for the future.

READ then, said I, the heavy Charge, and I'll return instantly to hear your Answer to it. So I went from her, for a few Minutes.

BUT, would you believe it, Sir *Simon*? she seem'd, on my Return, very little concerned at  
your



your just Complaints. — What self-justifying Minds have the meekest of these Women! — Instead of finding her in repentant Tears, as one might have expected, she took your angry Letter for a jocular one, and I had great Difficulty to convince her of the Heinousness of *her* Fault, or the Reality of *your* Resentment. Upon which, being determin'd to have Justice done to my Friend, and a due Sense of her own great Error impress'd upon her, I began thus:

PAMELA, *Pamela*, take heed, that you do not suffer the Purity of your own Mind, in Breach of your Charity, to make you too rigorous a Censurer of other Peoples Actions: Don't be so puffed up with your own Perfections, as to imagine, that, because other Persons allow themselves Liberties you cannot take, *therefore* they must be wicked. Sir *Simon* is a Gentleman who indulges himself in a pleasant Vein, and, I believe, as well as you, *has been* a great Rake and Libertine (you'll excuse me, Sir *Simon*, because I am taking your Part): But what then? You see it is all over with him now: You see, he says himself, That he *must*, and therefore he *will*, be virtuous: And is a Man for ever to hear of the Faults of his Youth, when he himself is so willing to forget them?

AH! but, Sir, said the bold Slut, can you say he is *willing* to forget them? — Does he not repine here in this very Letter, that he *must* forsake them? And does he not plainly cherish the *Inclination*, when he owns — She hesitated — Owns what? — You know what

I mean, Sir; and I need not speak it: And can there well be a more censurable Character? — Then, dear Sir, *before* his Maiden Daughters! *before* his virtuous Lady! *before* Any-body! — What a sad thing is this, at a Time of Life, which should afford a better Example!

BUT, dear Sir, continu'd the bold Prattler, (taking Advantage of a Silence that was more owing to Displeasure than Approbation) let me, for I would not be *censorious*, (No, not she! In the very Act of Censoriousness to say this! let me) offer but one thing: Don't you think Sir *Simon* himself would be loth to be thought a reform'd Gentleman? Don't you see the Delight he takes, when he speaks of his former Pranks, as if he was sorry he could not play them over again? See but how he simpers, and *enjoys*, as one may say, the Relations of his own rakish Actions, when he tells a bad Story! — And have you not seen how often he has been forced to take his Handkerchief to wipe the Outside of his Mouth, tho' the Inside was least cleanly, when he has wounded a Lady's Ears, and turn'd, as it were, his own faulty Heart inside out? — Indeed, Sir, I am afraid, so bad in this way is your worthy Neighbour, that he would account it a Disgrace to him to be thought reform'd: And how then can I abuse the Gentleman, by representing him in a Light in which he loves to be considered?

BUT, said I, were this the Case, (for I profess, Sir *Simon*, I was at a grievous Loss to defend you) for you to write all these free things

things against a Father to his Daughter, is that right, *Pamela*?

O SIR! the *good* Gentleman himself has taken care, that such a Character as I presum'd to draw to Miss of her Papa, was no strange one to her. You have seen, yourself, Mr. *B.* whenever his arch Leers, and the humourous Attitude in which he puts himself on those Occasions, have taught us to expect some shocking Story, how his Lady and Daughters (us'd to him, as they are) have suffer'd in their Apprehensions of what he would say, before he spoke it: How, particularly, dear Miss *Darnford* has look'd at me with Concern, desirous, as it were, if possible, to save her Papa from the Censure, which his faulty Expressions must naturally bring upon him. And, dear Sir, is it not a sad thing for a young Lady, who loves and honours her Papa, to observe, that he is discrediting himself, and *wants* the Example he ought to *give*? And, pardon me, Sir, for smiling on so serious an Occasion, continued she; but is it not a fine Sight, do you think, to see a Gentleman, as we have more than once seen Sir *Simon*, when he has thought proper to read a Passage or so, in some bad Book, pulling off *his Spectacles*, to talk filthily upon it? Methinks, I see him now, added the bold Slut, splitting his arch Face, with a broad Laugh, shewing a Mouth, with hardly a Tooth in it, while he is making obscene Remarks upon what he has read.

AND then the dear Saucy-face laugh'd out, to bear *me* Company; for I could not, for the



Soul of me, avoid laughing heartily at the Figure she brought to my Mind, which I have seen my old Friend make, on two or three Occasions of this sort, with his dismounted Spectacles, his arch Mouth, and Gums of shining Jet, succeeding those of polish'd Ivory, of which he often boasts, as one Ornament of his youthful Days. And I the rather in my Heart, Sir *Simon*, gave you up, because, when I was a sad Fellow, it was always a Maxim with me, to endeavour to touch a Lady's Heart without wounding her Ears. And, indeed, I found my Account sometimes in observing it.

BUT, resuming my Gravity, Huffy, said I, do you think I will have my old Friend thus made the Subject of your Ridicule? — Suppose a Challenge should have ensu'd between us on your Account — What might have been the Issue of it? To see an old Gentleman, stumping, as he says, on Crutches, to fight a Duel in Defence of his wounded Honour! A pretty Sight this would have afforded, would it not? And what (had any one met him on the Way) could he have said he was going to do? Don't you consider, that a Man is answerable for the Faults of his Wife? And, if my Fondness for you would have made me deny doing Justice to my Friend, and, on the contrary, to resolve in your behalf to give him a Meeting, and he had flung his Crutch at my Head, as he did the Book at his Daughter's, what might have been the Consequence, think you?

VERY

VERY bad, Sir, to be sure; I see that, and am sorry for it: For had you carry'd off Sir *Simon's* Crutch, as a Trophy, the poor Gentleman must have lain sighing and groaning, like a wounded Soldier in the Field of Battle, till another had been brought him, to have stump'd home with.

BUT, dear Sir *Simon*, I have brought this Matter to an Issue, that will, I hope, make all easy: And that is this — Miss *Pally*, and my *Pamela*, shall both be punish'd as they deserve, if it be not your own Fault. I am told, that the Sins of your Youth don't sit so heavily upon your Limbs, as they do in your Imagination; and I believe Change of Air, and the Gratification of your Revenge, a fine Help to such lively Spirits as yours, will set you up. You shall then take Coach, and bring your pretty Criminal to mine; and when we have them together, they shall humble themselves before us, and it shall be in your Power to absolve or punish them, as you shall see proper. For I cannot bear to have my worthy Friend insulted in so heinous a manner by a Couple of saucy Girls, who, if not taken down in time, may proceed from Fault to Fault, till there will be no Living with them.

IF (to be still more serious) your Lady and you will lend Miss *Darnford* to my *Pamela's* Wishes, whose Heart is set upon the Hope of her wintering with us in Town, you will lay an Obligation upon us both; which will be  
acknow-

acknowledged with great Gratitude, by, Dear Sir,

*Your affectionate and humble Servant.*

## LETTER XXIV.

*From Sir SIMON DARNFORD, in Reply.*

**H**ARK ye me, 'Squire B. — A Word in your Ear! — I like neither You, nor your Wife, to be plain with you, well enough to trust my *Polly* with you. What! you are to shew her, in your Lady's Case, all the Game of a Lying-in, I suppose; and, at least, set the Girl a longing to make one in the Dance, before I have found out the proper Man for her Partner!

BUT here's War declar'd against my poor Gums, it seems. Well I will never open my Mouth before your Lady, as long as I live, if I can help it. I have for these Ten Years avoided to put on my Cravat; and for what Reason, do you think? — Why, because I could not bear to see what Ruins a few Years have made in a Visage, that us'd to inspire Love and Terror as it pleas'd. — And here your — What-shall-I-call-her of a Wife, with all the Insolence of Youth and Beauty on her side, follows me with a Glass, and would make me look in it, whether I will or not. I'm a plaguy good-humour'd old Fellow — if I *am* an old Fellow — or I should not bear the Insults contain'd in your Letter. Between You and your Lady, you make a  
wretched



wretched Figure of me, that certain — And yet, 'tis *taking my Part*, with a P--x to *you*, Mr. B. I would have said; but on your Lady's Account — You see I have as much more Charity than she, as she has Purity than me; or I should not have put in that Saving Clause in her Behalf.

DISMOUNTED *Spectacles*, *arch Mouth*, *Gums of shining Jet*, and such-like fine Descriptions; are these yours, or your Lady's? I'd be glad to know that, Mr. B.

WELL but, What a D — I must a Man do? — I'd be glad, at any Rate, to stand in your Lady's Graces, that I would: Nor would I be the last Rake and Libertine unreform'd by her Example, which, I suppose, will make Virtue the Fashion, if she goes on as she does. But here I have been us'd to cut a Joke, and toss the Squib about; and, as far as I know, it has help'd to keep me alive in the midst of Pains and Aches, and with Two Women-grown Girls, and the rest of the Mortifications that will attend on *advanced Years*; for I won't (hang me if I will) give it up as absolute *Old-age*!

I LOVE, I own it, to make a pretty Woman blush; it is double-damasking a fine Rose, as it were; and till I saw your — [Do, let me call her some free Name or other! I always lov'd to be free with pretty Women! — Till I saw your — Methinks I like her *Arcadian* Name, tho' I'm so old a Swain, as not to merit any thing but Rebuke at her Hands — Well then, till I saw your] — *Pamela* — I thought all Ladies,

in their Hearts, lov'd a little Squib of that kind. For why should they not, when it adds so much Grace to their Features, and improves their native Charms? — And often have I tofs'd the Joke about, as much, in my Intention, to oblige *them*, as *myself*. — Yet no one can say, but that I always wrapp'd it up in clean Linen, as the Saying is — Only suiting myself to my Company, till I had made the dear Rogues *sensible*, and shew they could apprehend.

BUT now, it seems, I must leave all this off, or I must be mortify'd with a Looking-glass held before me, and every Wrinkle must be made as conspicuous as a Furrow. — And what, pray, is to succeed to this Reformation? — I can neither fast nor pray, I doubt. — And, besides, if my Stomach and my Jest depart from me, farewell, Sir *Simon Darnford*!

BUT cannot I pass as one necessary Character, do you think; as a Foil (as, by-the-bye, some of your own Actions have been to your Lady's Virtue) to set off some more edifying Example, where Variety of Characters make up a Feast in Conversation?

I BESEECH you, Mr. B.'s *Pamela*, stick me into some Posy among your finer Flowers — And if you won't put me into your Bosom, let me stand in some gay Flower-pot in your Chimney Corner: I may serve for Shew, if not for Smell. Or, let me be the Bass in your Musick, or permit my humourous Humdrum to serve as a pardonable kind of Discord to set off your own Harmony. — I verily think, I cannot be so good

as

as you'd have me to be: So pray let your poor *Anacreon* go off with what he loves. It will be very cruel, if you won't.

WELL, but, after all, I believe I might have trusted you with my Daughter, under your Lady's Eye, Rake as you have been yourself: And Fame says wrong, if you have not been for your Time, a bolder Sinner than ever I was, (with your Maxim of touching Ladies Hearts, without wounding their Ears, which made surer Work with them, that was all) tho' 'tis to be hoped you are now reformed; and if you are, the whole Country round you, East, West, North and South, owe great Obligations to your fair Reclaimer. But here is a fine prim young Fellow coming out of *Norfolk*, with one Estate in one County, another in another, and Jointures and Settlements in his Hands, and more Wit in his Head, as well as more Money in his Pocket, than he can tell what to do with, to visit our *Polly*; tho' I tell her, I much question the former Quality, his Wit, if he is for marrying. — And would you have her be attending your Wife's Nursery, when she may possibly be put into a Way to have a Raree-shew of her *own*!

HERE then is the Reason I cannot comply with your kind Mrs. *B.*'s Request. But if this Matter should go off; if he should not like *her*, or she *him*; or if I should not like *his* Terms, or he *mine*; — or, still another *Or*, if he should like *Nancy* better — why, then, perhaps, if *Polly* be a good Girl, I may trust to her Virtue, and to your Honour, and let her go for a Month

OR



or two; for the Devil's in you, if you'd attempt to abuse such a generous Confidence. — As to the Superiority of Beauty in your own Lady, I depend nothing on that; for with you young Fellows, Variety has generally greater Charms.

Now, when I have said this, and when I say further, that I can forgive your severe Lady, and yourself too, (who, however, are less to be excus'd in the Airs you assume, which looks like one Chimney-sweeper calling another sooty Rascal) I give a Proof of my Charity, which I hope with Mrs. *B.* will cover a Multitude of Faults; and the rather, since, tho' I cannot be a *Follower* of her Virtue in the strictest Sense, I can be an *Admirer* of it; and that is some little Merit: And indeed all that can be at present pleaded by *yourself*, I doubt, any more than

*Your humble Servant,*

SIMON DARNFORD.

## LETTER XXV.

*My honoured and dear Parents,*

I HOPE you will excuse my long Silence, which has been owing to several Causes, and having had nothing new to entertain you with: And yet this last is but a poor Excuse neither to you, who think every trifling Subject agreeable from your Daughter.

I DAILY expect here my Lord and Lady *Davers*. This gives me no small Pleasure, and yet

yet it is mingled with some Uneasiness at times, lest I should not, when view'd so intimately near, behave myself answerably to her Ladyship's Expectations. But this I resolve upon, I will not endeavour to move out of the Sphere of my own Capacity, in order to emulate her Ladyship. She has, and must have Advantages, by Conversation, as well as Education, which it would be Arrogance in me to assume, or to think of imitating.

ALL that I will attempt to do, therefore, shall be, to shew such a respectful Obligingness to my Lady, as shall be consistent with the Condition to which I am rais'd; that so her Ladyship may not have Reason to reproach me of Pride in my Exaltation, nor her dear Brother to rebuke me for Meanness in condescending: And, as to my Family Management, I am the less afraid of Inspection, because by the natural Biass of my own Mind, I bless God, I am above dark Reserves, and have not one selfish or sordid View, that should make me wish to avoid the most scrutinizing Eye.

I HAVE begun a Correspondence with Miss *Darnford*, a young Lady of uncommon Merit. But you know her Character from my former Writings. She is very solicitous to hear of every thing that concerns me, and particularly how Lady *Davers* and I agree together. I loved her from the Moment I saw her first; for she has the least Pride, and the most Benevolence and solid Thought, I ever knew in a young Lady, and knows not what it is to envy  
any

any one. I shall write to her often: And as I shall have so many Avocations besides to fill up my Time, I know you will excuse me, if I procure from Miss, as I hope to do, the Return of my Letters to her, for your Perusal, and for the Entertainment of your Leisure Hours. This will give you, from time to time, the Accounts you desire of all that happens here. But as to what relates to our own Particulars, I beg you will never spare writing, as I shall not answering; for it is one of my greatest Delights, that I have such dear, such worthy Parents, (as, I hope in God, I long shall) to bless me, and to correspond with me.

THE Papers I send herewith will afford you some Diversion; particularly, those relating to Sir *Simon Darnford*; and I must desire, that when you have perused them, (as well as what I shall send for the future) you will return them to me.

MR. *Longman* gave me great Pleasure, on his last Return from you, in his Account of your Health, and the Satisfaction you take in your happy Lot; and I must recite to you a brief Conversation, on this Occasion, which, I dare say, will please you, as much as it did me.

AFTER he had been adjusting some Affairs with his dear Principal, which took them up Two Hours, my best Beloved sent for me. — My Dear, said he, taking my Hand, and seating me by him, and making the good old Gentleman sit down, (for he will always rise at my Approach) Mr. *Longman* and I have settled



settled in Two Hours some Accounts, which would have taken up as many Months with some Persons. For never was there an exacter or more methodical Accomptant than Mr. *Longman*: He gives me (greatly to my Satisfaction, because I know it will delight you) an Account of the *Kentish* Concern, and of the Pleasure your Father and Mother take in it.—Now, my Charmer, said he, I see your sweet Eyes begin to glisten:—O how this Subject raises your whole Soul to the Windows of it!—Never was so dutiful a Daughter, Mr. *Longman*; and never did Parents better deserve a Daughter's Duty!

I ENDEAVOUR'D before Mr. *Longman*, to rein in a Gratitude, that my throbbing Heart confessed thro' my Handkerchief, as I could perceive: But the good old Gentleman could not hinder his from shewing itself at his worthy Eyes, to see how much I was favour'd — *oppressed*, I should say, with the dearest Gentleman's tender Goodness to me, and kind Expressions. — Excuse me, Sir, excuse me, Madam, said he, wiping his Cheeks: My Delight to see such Merit so justly rewarded, will not be contained, I think. — And so he got up, and walked to the Window.

WELL, good Mr. *Longman*, said I, as he returned towards us, you give me the Pleasure to know, that my Father and Mother are well; and happy then they *must* be, in a Goodness and Bounty, that I, and many more, rejoice in.

WELL and happy, Madam! — Ay, that they are, indeed! And a worthier Couple never lived,

I assure you. Most nobly do they go on, in the Farm. Your Honour is one of the happiest Gentlemen in the World. All the Good you do, returns upon you in a Trice. It may well be said, *You cast your Bread upon the Waters*; for it presently comes to you again, richer and heavier than when you threw it in. All the *Kentish* Tenants, Madam, are hugely delighted with their good Steward: Every thing prospers under his Management: The Gentry love both him and my Dame; and the poor People adore them. Indeed they do a Pow'r of Good, in visiting their poor Neighbours, and giving them Cordials, and such-like; insomuch that Colicks, Agues, and twenty Distempers, nipp'd in the Bud, fly before them. And yet the Doctors themselves can have nothing to say against them; for they administer Help to those only who cannot be at the Charge either of Skill or Physick.

IN this manner ran on Mr. *Longman*, to my inexpressible Delight, you may believe; and when he withdrew, 'Tis an honest Soul, said my dear Mr. *B.* I love him, for his respectful Love to my Angel, and his Value for the worthy Pair. Very glad I am, that every thing answers *their* Wishes. May they long live, and be happy!

THE dear Gentleman makes me spring to his Arms, whenever he touches this String: For he speaks always thus generously and kindly of you; and is glad to hear, he says, that you don't live only to yourselves: And now-and-then adds, That he is as much satisfy'd with  
your

your Prudence, as he is with mine; That Parents and Daughter do Credit to one another; and that the Praises he hears of you from every Mouth, make him take as great Pleasure in you, as if you were his own Relations. How delighting, how transporting rather, my dear Parents, must this Goodness be to your happy Daughter! And how could I forbear repeating these kind Things to you, that you may see how well every thing is taken that you do?

WHEN the expected Visit from Lord and Lady *Davers* is over, the approaching Winter will call us to *London*; and as I shall then be nearer to you, we may more frequently hear from one another; which, to be sure, will be a great Heightening to my Pleasures.

BUT I have such an Account given me of the Immoralities which Persons may observe there, along with the publick Diversions, that it takes off a little from the Satisfaction I should otherwise have in the Thought of going thither. For they say, Quarrels, and Duels, and Gallantries, as they are called, so often happen at *London*, that those Enormities are heard of without the least Wonder or Surprise.

THIS makes me very thoughtful at times. But God, I hope, will preserve our dearest Benefactor, and continue to me his Affection, and then I shall be always happy; especially while your Healths and Felicity confirm and crown the Delights of

*Your ever dutiful Daughter,*



## LETTER XXVI.

*My dearest Child,*

**I**T may not be improper to mention ourselves, what the Nature of the Kindnesses is, which we confer on our poor Neighbours, and the labouring People, lest it should be surmised by any body, that we are lavishing away Wealth that is not our own. Not that we fear either your honoured Husband or you will suspect any such Matter, or that the worthy Mr. *Longman* would insinuate as much; for he saw what we did, and was highly pleased with it, and said he would make such a Report of it as you write he did. What we do is in small Things, tho' the Good we hope from them is not small perhaps: And if a very distressful Case should happen among our poor Neighbours, that would require any thing considerable, and the Objects be deserving, we would acquaint you with it, and leave it to you to do as God should direct you.

BUT this, indeed, we have done, and continue to do: We have furnished ourselves with Simple Waters and Cordials of several Sorts; and when in a hot sultry Day, I see poor labouring Creatures ready to faint and drop down, if they are only fatigued, I order them a Mouthful of Bread or so, and a Cup of good Ale or Beer, and this makes them go about their Business with new Spirits; and when they bless me for it, I tell them, they must bless the good 'Squire, from whose Bounty, next to God,  
it

it all proceeds. If any are ill, I give them a Cordial; and we have been the Means of setting up several poor Creatures, who have labour'd under Colicky and Aguish Disorders, or have been taken with slight Stomach Ailments. And nothing is lost by it, my dear Child; for poor People have as grateful Souls as any body; and it would delight your dear Heart to see how many drooping Spirits we have raised, and how, in an Hour or Two, some of them, after a little cordial Refreshment, from languishing under a Hedge, or behind a Hay-stack, have skipped about, as nimble as Deer, whistling and singing, and pursuing with Alacrity their several Employments; and instead of cursing and swearing, as is the Manner of some wicked Wretches, nothing but Blessings and Praises poured out of their glad Hearts upon his Honour and you; calling me their Father and Friend, and telling me, They will live and die for me and my Wife; and that we shall never want an industrious Servant to do his Honour's Business, or to cultivate the Farm I am blessed in. And in like sort, we communicate to our sick or wanting Neighbours, even altho' they be not Tenants to the Estate.

C O M E, my dear Child, you are happy, very happy, to be sure you are; and, if it *can* be, may you be yet happier and happier! But still I verily think you cannot be more happy than your Father and Mother, except in this one thing, That all *our* Happiness, under God, proceeds from you; and, as other Parents bless their Children with Plenty and Benefits, you have bless'd your Parents (or

your honoured Husband rather, for your sake) with all the good Things this World can afford.

THE Papers you send us are the Joy of our Leisure Hours; and you are kind, beyond all Expression, in taking care to oblige us with them. We know how your Time is taken up, and ought to be very well contented, if but now-and-then you let us hear of your Health and Welfare. But it is not enough with such a good Daughter, that you have made our Lives *comfortable*, but you will make them *joyful* too, by communicating to us all that befalls you: And then you write so piously, and with such a Sense of God's Goodness to you, and intermix such good Reflections in your Writings, that, whether it be our partial Love or not, I cannot tell, but, truly, we think nobody comes up to you: And you make our Hearts and our Eyes so often overflow, as we read, that we join Hand in Hand together, and I say to her, Blessed be God, and blessed be you, my Dear. And she, in the same Breath, Blessed be God, and you, my Love--- For such a Daughter, says the one — For such a Daughter, says the other. — And she has your own sweet Temper, cry I — And she has your own honest Heart, cries she. And so we go on, blessing God, and blessing you, and blessing your Spouse, and blessing ourselves! — Is any Happiness like our Happiness, my dear Daughter!

REALLY and indeed, we are so enraptur'd with your Writings, that when our Spirits flag, thro' the Infirmary of Years, which hath begun to take hold of us, we have recourse to some of  
your



your Papers. Come, my Dear, cry I, what say you to a Banquet now? — She knows what I mean. With all my Heart, says she. — So I read, altho' it be on a *Sunday*, so good are your Letters; and, you must know, I have Copies of a many of them: And after a little while, we are as much alive and brisk, as if we had no Flagging at all, and return to the Duties of the Day with double Delight.

CONSIDER then, my dear Child, what Joy your Writings give us: And yet we are afraid of oppressing you, who have so much to do of other Kinds; and we are heartily glad you have found out a way to save Trouble to yourself, and rejoice us, and oblige so worthy a young Lady as Miss *Darnford*, all at one time. I never shall forget her dear Goodness to me, and the Notice she took of me at the Hall \*, kindly pressing my rough Hands with her fine Hands, and looking in my Face with *so* much Kindness in her Eyes! — to be sure I never shall. — What good People, as well as bad, there are in high Stations! — Thank God there are; else our poor Child would have had a sad Time of it too often, when she was obliged to *step out of herself*, as once I heard you phrase it, into Company you could not *live with*.

WELL, but what shall I say more? And yet how shall I end? — Only, with my Prayers, that God will continue to you the Blessings and Comforts you are in Possession of! — And pray

\* See Vol. II. p. 92.

now, be not over-thoughtful about what may happen at *London*; for why should you let the Dread of future Evils lessen your present Joys? There is no absolute Perfection in this Life, that's true; but one would make one's self as easy as one could. 'Tis Time enough to be troubled when Troubles come: — *Sufficient unto the Day is the Evil thereof.*

REJOICE then, my dear Child, as you have often said you would, in your present Blessings, and leave the Event of Things to the Supreme Disposer of all Events. And what have *you* to do, but rejoice? *You*, who cannot see a Sun rise, but it is to bless you, and to raise up from their Beds Numbers to join in the Blessing! *You*, who can bless your high-born Friends, and your low-born Parents, and obscure Relations! who can bless the Rich by your Example, and the Poor by your Bounty; and bless, besides, so good and so brave a Husband! — O my dear Child, what, let me repeat it, have *you* to do, but rejoice? — *For many Daughters have done wisely, but you have excelled them all.*

I WILL only add, that every thing the 'Squire order'd, is just upon the Point of being finished. And when the good Time comes, that we shall be again favoured with his Presence and yours, what a still greater Joy will this afford to the already overflowing Hearts of

*Your ever loving Father and Mother,*

J. and E. ANDREWS!

LET-

## LETTER XXVII.

*My dear Miss DARNFORD,*

THE Interest I take in every thing that concerns you, makes me very importunate to know how you approve the Gentleman, whom some of his best Friends and Well-wishers have recommended to your Favour. I hope he will deserve your good Opinion, and then he must excel most of the unmarried Gentlemen in *England*.

YOUR Papa, in his humourous Manner, mentions his large Possessions and Riches: But, indeed, were he as rich as *Cræsus*, he should not have my Consent, if he has no *greater* Merit; tho' that is what the Generality of Parents look out for first: And indeed an easy Fortune is so far from being to be disregarded, that, when attended with *equal* Merit, I think it ought to have a *Preference* given to it, supposing Affections disingaged. For 'tis certain, that a Gentleman or Lady may stand as good a Chance for Happiness in Marriage with a Person of Fortune, as with one who has not that Advantage; and notwithstanding I had neither Riches nor Descent to boast of, I must be of Opinion with those, who say, that they never knew any body despise either, that had them. But to permit Riches to be the *principal* Inducement, to the Neglect of superior Merit, that is the Fault which many a one smarts for, whether the Choice be their own, or imposed upon them by those who have a Title to their Obedience.

HERE



HERE is a saucy Body, might some, who have not Miss *Darnford's* kind Consideration for her Friend, be apt to say, who being thus meanly descended, presumes, nevertheless, to give her Opinion, in these high Cases, unasked. But I have one thing, my dear Miss, to say; and that is, that I think myself so intirely divested of Partiality to my own Case, that, as far as my Judgment shall permit, I will never have that in View, when I am presuming to hint my Opinion of general Rules. For, most surely, the Honours I have received, and the Debasement to which my best Friend has subjected himself, have, for their principal Excuse, that the Gentleman was intirely independent; had no Questions to ask, and had a Fortune sufficient to make himself, as well as the Person he chose, happy, tho' she brought him nothing at all; and that he had, moreover, such a Character for good Sense, and Knowledge of the World, that nobody could impute to him any other Inducement, but that of a noble Resolution to reward a Virtue he had so frequently, and, I will say, so wickedly, try'd, and could not subdue.

BUT why do I thus run on to Miss *Darnford*, whose partial Friendship attributes to me Merits I cannot claim? I will, therefore, quit this Subject, as a needless one to her, and proceed to what was principally in my View, when I began to write; and that is, to complain of your Papa, who has, let me say it, done his Endeavour to set at Variance a Gentleman and his Wife.

I WILL

I WILL not enter into the Particulars, because the Appeal is to *Cæsar*, and it would look like invading his Prerogative, to take it into my own Hands. But I can tell Sir *Simon*, that he is the only Gentleman, I hope, who, when a young Person of my Sex asked him to make her a Present of a Book, would put such a mischievous Turn as he has done upon it, to her Husband! — Indeed, from the *Beginning*, I had Reason to call him a \* Tell-tale — But, no more of that — Yet I must say, I had rather he should have flung this Book at *my* Head too, than to have made a so much worse Use of it. But I came off tolerably, no Thanks to Sir *Simon*, however! — And *but* tolerably neither: For, Mr. *B.* kept me in Suspense a good while, and put me in great Flutters, before he let me into the Matter.

BUT I was very much concerned, my dear Miss, at first, till you gave a Reason I better liked afterwards, for Sir *Simon's* denying your Company to me, after I had obtain'd the Favour of your Mamma's Consent, and you were kindly inclin'd yourself to oblige me: And that was, that Sir *Simon* had a bad Opinion of the Honour of my dear Mr. *B.* For, as to that Part of his Doubt, which reflected Dishonour upon his dear Daughter, it was all but the Effect of his strange free Humour, on purpose to vex you.

THAT Gentleman must be the most abandon'd of Men, who would attempt any thing

\* See Vol. I. p. 312. l. 13.

against the Virtue of a Lady intrusted to his Protection: And I am grieved, methinks, that the dear Gentleman, who is the better Part of myself, and has, to his own Debasement, acted so honourably by me, should be thought capable of so much Vileness. But, forgive me, Miss; it is only Sir *Simon*, I dare say, who could think so hardly of him: And I am in great Hope, for the Honour of the *present* Age, (quite contrary to the Aspersions, that every Age grows worse and worse) that the *last*, if it produc'd People capable of such Attempts, was wickedder than this.

BAD as Mr. *B.*'s Designs and Attempts were upon me, I can, now I am set above fearing them, and am enabled to reflect upon them with less Terror and Apprehension, be earnest, for his own dear sake, to think him not, even *then*, the worst of Men, tho' bad enough in all Conscience: For have we not heard of those who have had no Remorse or Compunction at all, and have actually executed all their vile Purposes, when a poor Creature was in their Power? Yet (indeed, after sore Trials, that's true!) did not God turn his Heart? And altho' I was still helpless, and without any Friend in the World, and in the Hands of a poor vile Woman, who, to be sure, was worse than he, provoking him to ruin me, and so wholly in his Power, that I durst not disobey him, whether he bid me come to him, or be gone from him, as he was pleased, or displeased with me; yet, I say, for all this, did he not overcome his criminal Passion, and  
entertain



entertain an honourable one, tho' to his poor Servant Girl; and brave the World, and the World's Censures, and marry me?

AND does not this shew, that the Seeds of Honour were kept alive in his Heart, tho' choaked or kept from sprouting forth, for a Time, by the Weeds of Sensuality, Pride, and youthful Impetuosity? And by cutting down the latter, have not the former taken Root, have they not shot out, and, in their turn, *kept down* at least, the depressed Weeds? And who now lives more virtuously than Mr. B.?

LET me tell you, my dear Miss, that I have not heard of many Instances of Gentlemen, who, having designed vilely, have stopt short, and acted so honourably; and who continue to act so nobly: And I have great Confidence, that he will, in time, be as pious, as he is now moral; for tho' he has a few bad Notions, which he talks of now-and-then, as Polygamy, and such-like, which indeed give me a little serious Thought sometimes, because a Man is too apt to practise what he has persuaded himself to believe is no Crime; yet, I hope, they are owing more to the Liveliness of his Wit, (a wild Quality, which does not always confine itself to proper Exercises) than to his Judgment. And if I can but see the first Three or Four Months Residence over in that wicked *London*, (which, they say, is so seducing a Place) without adding to my Apprehensions, how happy shall I be!

So much, slightly, have I thought proper to say in behalf of my dear Mr. B. For a good Wife cannot

cannot but hope for a sweeter and more elevated Companionship, (if her presumptuous Heart makes her look upward with Hope herself) than this transitory State can afford us. And what a sad Case is hers, who being as exemplary as human Frailty will permit her to be, looks forward upon the Partner of her adverse and of her prosperous Estate, the Husband of her Bosom, the Father of her Children, the Head of her Family, as a poor unhappy Soul, destin'd to a separate and a miserable Existence for ever! — O my dear Miss! — How can such a Thought be supportable! — But what high Consolation, what Transport rather, at times, must hers be, who shall be bless'd with the Hope of being an humble Instrument to reclaim such a dear, dear, thrice dear Partner! — And that, Heart in Heart, and Hand in Hand, they shall one Day issue forth from this incumber'd State into a blessed Eternity, benefited by each other's Example! — I will lay down my Pen, and enjoy the rich Thought for a few Moments.

Now, my dear Miss, let me, as a Subject very pleasing to me, touch upon your kind Mention of the worthy Mr. *Peters's* Sentiments in relation to that Part of his Conduct to me, which (oppress'd by the Terrors and Apprehensions to which I was subjected) once indeed I censured; and so much the readier, as I had ever so great an Honour for his Cloth, that I thought, to be a Clergyman, and all that was compassionate, good and virtuous, was the same thing.

BUT

BUT when I came to know Mr. *Peters*, I had a high Opinion of his Worthiness; and as no one can be perfect in this Life, thus I thought to myself: How hard was then my Lot, to be a Cause of Stumbling to so worthy a Heart! To be sure, a Gentleman, who knows so well, and practises so well, his Duty, in every other Instance, and preaches it so efficaciously to others, must have been *one Day* sensible, that it would not have misbecome his Function and Character, to have afforded that Protection to oppressed Innocence, which was requested of him; and how would it have grieved his considerate Mind, had my Ruin been completed, that he did not!

BUT as he had once a Name-sake, as one may say, that failed in a much greater Instance, let not my Want of Charity exceed his Fault; but let me look upon it as an Infirmary, to which the most perfect are liable: I was a Stranger to him; a Servant Girl carry'd off by her Master, a young Gentleman of violent and lawless Passions; who, in this very Instance, shew'd how much in Earnest he was set upon effecting all his vile Purposes; and whose Heart altho' *God* might touch, it was not probable any lesser Influence could.

THEN he was not sure, that tho' he might assist my Escape, I might not afterwards fall into the Hands of so determin'd a Violator; and that Difficulty would not, with such a one, inance his Resolution to overcome all Obstacles.

MOREOVER, he might think, that the Person, who was moving him to this worthy Measure,

sure,



sure, might possibly be seeking to gratify a View of his own; and that while he was endeavouring to save, to outward Appearance, a Virtue in Danger, he was, in reality, only helping another to a Wife, at the Hazard of exposing himself to the Vindictiveness of a violent Temper, and a rich Neighbour, who had Power as well as Will to resent; for such was his \* Apprehension, groundless, intirely groundless as it was, tho' not improbable, as it might seem to him.

THEN again, the sad Examples set by too many *European* Sovereigns, in whom the *Royal* and *Priestly Offices* are united (for are not Kings the *Lord's Anointed?*); and the little Scruple which many Persons, Right Reverend by their Functions and Characters, too generally make, to pay sordid Court and Visits (far from bearing their Testimony against such Practices) even to Concubines, who have Interest to promote them †, are no small Discouragements to a private Clergyman, to do his Duty, and to make himself Enemies among his powerful Neighbours, for the Cause of Virtue. And especially (forgive me, dear Sir *Simon Darnford*, if you should see this) when an eminent Magistrate, one of the principal Gentlemen of the County, of an independent Fortune, who had fine young Ladies to his Daughters, (who had nothing but their superior Conditions, not their Sex, to exempt them from like Attempts) a Justice of

\* Vol. I. p. 220. l. 20.

† That these Arguments were pleaded by Mr. Peters, see Vol. I. p. 220, 221.

Peace, and of the *Quorum*; refused to BE a \* Justice, tho' such a Breach of the *Peace* was made, and such a Violation of Morals plainly intended. This, I say, must add to the Discouragement of a Gentleman a little too diffident and timorous of himself: And who having no one to second him, had he afforded me his Protection, must have stood alone in the Gap, and made to himself, in an active Gentleman, an Enemy, who had a thousand desirable Qualities to make one with him for a Friend.

FOR all these Considerations, I think myself obliged to pity, rather than too rigorously to censure, the worthy Gentleman. And I must and will always respect him: And thank him a thousand times, my dear Miss, in my Name, for his Goodness, in condescending to acknowledge, by your dear Hand, his Infirmary, as such: For this gives an excellent Proof of the natural Worthiness of his Heart; and that it is beneath him to seek to extenuate a Fault, when he thinks he has committed one.

INDEED, my dear Friend, I have so much Honour for the Clergy of all Degrees, that I never forget in my Prayers, one Article, That God will make them burning and shining Lights to the World; since so much depends on their Ministry and Examples, as well with respect to our publick as private Duties. Nor shall the Faults of a Few make Impression upon me to the Disadvantage of the Order. For I am afraid

\* See Vol. I. p. 220.

a very censorious Temper, in this respect, is too generally the Indication of an uncharitable, and perhaps a profligate Heart, levelling Characters, in order to cover some inward Pride, or secret Enormities, which they are ashamed to avow, and will not be instructed to amend.

FORGIVE, my dear Miss, this tedious Scribble. I cannot for my Life write short Letters to those I love. And let me hope, that you will favour me with an Account of your new Affair, and how you proceed in it; and with such of your Conversations, as may give me some Notion of a polite Courtship. For, alas! my dear Miss, your poor Friend knows nothing of this. All her Courtship was sometimes a hasty Snatch of the Hand, a black and blue Gripe of the Arm, and, Whither now! — Come, to me, when I bid you! — And Saucy-face, and Creature, and such-like, on his Part — with Fear and Trembling on mine; and — I will, I will! — Good Sir, have Mercy! At other times, a Scream, and nobody to hear or mind me; and with uplift Hands, bent Knees, and tearful Eyes — For God's sake, pity your poor Servant!

THIS, my dear Miss, was the hard Treatment that attended my Courtship. — Pray, then, let me know, how Gentlemen court their Equals in Degree; how they look when they address you, with their Knees bent, sighing, supplicating, and *all that*, as Sir *Simon* says, with the Words Slave, Servant, Admirer, continually at their Tongues Ends.

BUT,



BUT, after all, it will be found, I believe, that, be the Language and Behaviour ever so obsequious, it is all designed to end alike. — The *English*, the plain *English*, of the politest Address, is, I am now, dear Madam, your humble Servant: Pray be so good as to let me be your Master. Yes, and thank you too, says the Lady's Heart, tho' not her Lips, if she likes him. And so they go to Church together: And, in Conclusion, it will be happy, if these obsequious Courtships end no worse than my frightful one.

BUT I am convinc'd, that with a Man of Sense, a Woman of tolerable Prudence *must* be happy.

THAT whenever you marry, it may be to such a Man, who then must value you as you deserve, and make you as happy as I now am, notwithstanding all that's past, wishes and prays

*Your obliged Friend and Servant,*

P. B.

---

N. B. ALTHO' Miss *Darnford* could not receive the above Letter so soon as to answer it before others were sent to her by her fair Correspondent; yet we think it not amiss to dispense with the Order of Time, that the Reader may have the Letter and Answer at one View: And shall on other Occasions take the like Liberty.

## L E T T E R XXVIII.

*In Answer to the preceding.*

*My dear Mrs. B.*

**Y**OU charm us all, with your Letters. Mr. *Peters* says he will never go to bed, nor rise, but he will pray for you, and desires I will return his thankful Acknowledgements for your favourable Opinion of him, and kind Allowances. If there be an Angel on Earth, he says you are one. My Papa, altho' he has seen your stinging Reflection upon his Refusal to protect you, is delighted with you too; and says, when you come down to *Lincolnshire* again, he will be *undertaken* by you in good earnest; for he thinks it was wrong in him, to deny you his Protection.

WE are pleas'd with your Apology for Mr. *B.* 'Tis so much the Part of a good Wife to extenuate her Husband's Faults, and make the best of his bad Qualities, in order to give the World a good Opinion of him; that, together with the affecting Instances of your Humility, in looking back with so much true Greatness of Mind, to what you were, make us all join to admire you, and own, that nobody can deserve what you deserve.

YET I am sorry, my dear Friend, to find, notwithstanding your Defence of Mr. *B.* that you have any Apprehensions about *London*. 'Tis pity any thing should give you Concern. As to  
Mr.

Mr. *B.*'s talking in Favour of Polygamy, you cannot expect, that he can shake off all his bad Notions at once. And it must be a great Comfort to you, that his *Actions* do not correspond, and that his Liberties have been reduced to *Notions* only. In time, we hope that he will be every thing you wish him. If not, with such an Example before him, he will be the more culpable.

WE all smiled at the Description of your own uncommon Courtship. And as they say, the Days of Courtship are the happiest Part of Life, if we had not known, that your Days of Marriage are happier by far, than any other body's Courtship, we must needs have pity'd you. But as the one were Days of Trial and Temptation, the other are Days of Reward and Happiness: May the last always continue to be so, and you will have no Occasion to think any body happier than Mrs. *B.*

I THANK you heartily for your good Wishes as to the Man of Sense. Mr. *Murray* has been here, and continues his Visits. He is a lively Gentleman, well enough in his Person, has a tolerable Character, yet loves Company, and will take his Bottle freely; my Papa likes him ne'er the worse for that: He talks a good deal; dresses gay, and even richly, and seems to like his own Person very well: No great Pleasure this for a Lady to look forward to; yet he falls far short of that genteel Ease, and graceful Behaviour, which distinguish your Mr. *B.* from any body I know.



I WISH Mr. *Murray* would apply to my Sister. She is an ill-natur'd Girl; but would make a good Wife, I hope; and I fancy she'd like him well enough. I can't say I do. He laughs too much; has something boisterous in his Conversation; his Complaisance is not a pretty Complaisance: He is, however, well vers'd in Country Sports; and my Papa loves him for that too, and says, He is a most accomplish'd Gentleman: Yes, Sir, cry I, as Gentlemen go — You *must* be faucy, says Sir *Simon*, because the Man offers himself to your Acceptance; a few Years hence, perhaps, if you remain single, you'll alter your Note, *Polly*, and be willing to jump at a much less worthy Tender.

I COULD not help answering, That altho' I paid due Honour to every thing that my Papa was pleased to say, I could not but hope he would be mistaken in this.

BUT I have broken my Mind to my dear, my indulgent Mamma, who tells me, she will do me all the Pleasure she can; but would be loth the youngest Daughter should *go first*, as she calls it. But if I could come and live with you a little now-and-then, I did not care who marry'd, unless such a one offer'd, as I never expect.

I HAVE great Hope, the Gentleman will be easily persuaded to quit me for *Nancy*; for I see he has not Delicacy enough to love with any great Distinction. He says, as my Mamma tells me by the bye, that I am the handsomest and best humour'd; and he has found out, as he thinks, that I have some Wit, and have Ease and Freedom (and he racks Innocence to them) in my

my Address and Conversation. 'Tis well for me, *he* is of this Opinion; for if he thinks justly, which I much question, *any body* may think so still much more; for I have been far from taking Pains to engage his good Word, having been under more Reserve to him, than ever I was before to any body.

INDEED, I can't help it; for the Gentleman is forward without Delicacy; and (pardon me, Sir *Simon*) my Papa has not one bit of it neither: But is for pushing Matters on, with his rough Raillery, that puts me out of Countenance, and has already adjusted the sordid Part of the Preliminaries, as he tells me.

YET I hope *Nancy's* 3000 *l.* Fortune more than I am likely to have \*, will give her the wish'd-for Preference with Mr. *Murray*; and then, as to a Brother-in-law, in Prospect, I can put off all Restraint, and return to my usual Freedom.

THIS is all that occurs worthy of Notice from us: But from you, we expect an Account of Lady *Davers's* Visit, and of the Conversations that offer among you; and you have so delightful a way of making every thing momentous, either by your Subject or Reflections, or both, that we long for every Post-Day, in hopes of the Pleasure of a Letter. — And yours I will always carefully preserve, as so many Testimonies of the Honour I receive in this Correspondence:

\* See Vol. II. p. 59. l. 16.

Which will be always esteemed, as it deserves,  
by, my dear Mrs. B.

*Your obliged and faithful*

POLLY DARNFORD.

Mrs. *Peters*, Mrs. *Jones*, my Papa, Mamma, and Sister, present their Respects. Mr. *Peters* I mentioned before. He continues to give a very good Account of poor *Jewkes*; and is much pleased with her.

## LETTER XXIX.

*My dear Miss* DARNFORD,

**A**T your Desire, and to oblige your honoured Mamma, and your good Neighbours, I will now acquaint you with the Arrival of Lady *Davers*, and will occasionally write what passes among us: I will not say worthy of Notice; for were I only to do so, I should be more brief, perhaps, by much, than you seem to expect. But as my Time is pretty much taken up, and I find I shall be obliged to write a Bit now, and a Bit then, you must excuse me, if I dispense with some Forms, which I ought to observe, when I write to one I so dearly love; and so I will give it Journal-wise, as it were, and have no Regard, when it would fetter or break in upon my Freedom of Narration, to Inscription or Subscription; but send it as I have Opportunity: And if you please

to



to favour me so far, as to lend it me, after you have read the Stuff, for the Perusal of my Father and Mother, to whom my Duty and Promise require me to give an Account of my Proceedings, it will save me Transcription, for which I shall have no Time; and then you will excuse Blots and Blurs, and I will trouble myself no further for Apologies on that score, but this one for all.

If you think it worth while, when they have read it, you shall have it again.

*Wednesday Morning, Six o' Clock.*

FOR my dear Friend permits me to rise an Hour sooner than usual, that I may have Time to scribble; for he is always pleased to see me so employ'd, or in Reading; often saying, when I am at my Needle, (as his Sister once wrote) \* Your Maids can do this, *Pamela*; but they cannot write as you can. And yet, as he tells me, when I chuse to follow my Needle, as a Diversion from too intense Study, as he is pleased to call it, (but, alas! I know not what Study is, as may be easily guessed by my hasty writing, putting down every thing as it comes) I shall then do as I please. But you must understand I promised at setting out, what a good Wife I'd endeavour to make †: And every honest body should try to be as good as her Word, you know; and such Particulars as I then mention'd,

\* See this Vol. p. 50, 51.

† See Vol. II. p. 34. to 39.

I think

I think I ought to dispense with as little as possible; especially as I promised no more than what was my Duty to perform, if I had *not* promised. — But what a Preamble is here! — Judge by it what Impertinencies you may expect as I proceed.

YESTERDAY about Six in the Evening arrived here my Lord and Lady *Davers*, their Nephew, and the Countess of C. Mother of Lady *Betty*, whom we did not expect, but took it for the greater Favour. It seems her Ladyship long'd, as she said, to see *me*; and this was her principal Inducement. The Two Ladies, and their Two Women, were in Lord *Davers's* Coach and Six, and my Lord and his Nephew rode on Horseback, attended with a Train of Servants.

WE had expected them to Dinner; but they could not reach Time enough; for the Countess being a little incommoded with her Journey, the Coach travelled slowly. My Lady would not suffer her Lord, nor his Nephew, to come hither before her, tho' on Horseback, because she would be present, she said, when his Lordship first saw me, he having quite forgot *her Mother's Pamela*, that was her Word.

It rained when they came in; so the Coach drove directly to the Door, and Mr. *B.* receiv'd them there: But I was in a little Sort of Flutter, which Mr. *B.* observing, made me sit down in the Parlour to compose myself. Where's *Pamela*? said my Lady, as soon as she alighted.

I STEPT

I STEPT out, lest she should take it amiss; and she took my Hand, and kissed me: Here, my Lady Countess, said she, presenting me to her — Here's the Girl: See if I said too much in Praise of her Person.

THE Countess saluted me with a visible Pleasure in her Eye, and said, Indeed, Lady *Davers*, you have not. 'Twould have been strange, (excuse me, Mrs. *B.* for I know your Story) if such a fine Flower had not been transplanted from the Field to the Garden.

I MADE no Return, but by a low Court'sy, to her Ladyship's Compliment. Then Lady *Davers*, taking my Hand again, presented me to her Lord: See here, my Lord, my Mother's *Pamela!* — And see here, my Lord, said her generous Brother, taking my other Hand most kindly, see here your Brother's *Pamela* too!

MY Lord saluted me: I do, said he to his Lady: I do, said he to his Brother; and I see the first Person in her, that has exceeded my Expectation, when every Mouth had *prepared* me to expect a Wonder.

MR. *H.* whom every one calls Lord *Jackey*, after his Aunt's Example when she is in good Humour with him, and who is a very young Gentleman, tho' about as old as my best Friend, came to me next, and said, Lovelier and lovelier, by my Life! — I never saw your Peer, Madam.

WILL you excuse me, Miss, all this seeming Vanity, for the sake of repeating exactly what passed?

WELL



WELL but, said my Lady, taking my Hand, in her free Quality Way, which quite dash'd me, and holding it at Distance, and turning me half-round, with her Eye fixed to my Waist, Let me observe you a little, my sweet-fac'd Girl! — I hope I am right: — I hope you will do Credit to my Brother, as he has done you Credit. — Why do you let her lace so tight, Mr. B.?

I WAS unable to look up, as you may believe, Miss: My Face, all over Scarlet, was hid in my Bosom, and I looked so silly! —

AY, said my naughty Lady, you may well look down, my good Girl: For, Works of this Nature will not long be hidden. And, O my Lady (to the Countess) see how like a pretty *Thief* she looks!

DEAR my Lady! said I — for still she kept looking at me: And her good Brother, seeing my Confusion, in Pity to me, press'd my blushing Face a Moment to his generous Breast; and said, Lady *Davers*, you should not be thus hard upon my dear Girl, the Moment you see her, and before so many Witnesses: But look up, my best Love, take your Revenge of my Sister, and tell her, You wish her in the same Way.

It is so then, said my Lady! I'm glad of it with all my Heart. I will now love you better and better: but I almost doubted it, seeing her still so slender. But if, my good Child, you lace too tight, I'll never forgive you. And so she gave me a Kiss of Congratulation, as she said.

Do

Do you think, Miss, I did not look very silly?—My Lord smiling and gazing at me from Head to Foot, Lord *Jackey* grinning and laughing, like an Oaf, as I then, in my Spite, thought. Indeed the Countess said, encouragingly to me, but severely on Persons of Birth,—Lady *Davers*, you are as much too teizing, as Mrs. *B.* is too bashful. But you're a happy Man, Mr. *B.* that your Lady's Bashfulness is the principal Mark by which we can judge she is not of Quality. Lord *Jackey*, in the Language of some Character in a Play, cry'd out, *Appal-pable Hit*, by Jupiter! and laughed egregiously, running about from one to another, repeating the same Words.

WE talked only upon common Topicks till Supper-time, and I was all Ear, as I thought it became me to be; for the Countess had by her first Compliment, and by an Aspect as noble as intelligent, over-aw'd me, as I may say, into a respectful Silence, to which Lady *Davers's* free, though pleasant Raillery, (which she could not help carrying on now-and-then) contributed. Besides Lady *Davers's* Letters had given me still greater Reason to reverence her Wit and Judgment, than I had before, when I reflected on her passionate Temper, and such Parts of the Conversation I had had with her Ladyship in your Neighbourhood; which (however to be admired) fell short of her Letters.

WHEN we were to sit down at Table, I looked, I suppose, a little diffidently; for I really then thought of my Lady's Anger at the Hall, when she  
would

would not have permitted me to sit at Table with her \*. And Mr. B. saying, Take your Place, my Dear; you keep our Friends standing; I sat down in my usual Seat. And my Lady said, None of your reproaching Eye, *Pamela*; I know what you hint at by it: And every Letter I have receiv'd from you, has help'd to make me censure myself for my *Lady-Airs*, as you call 'em, you Sauce-box you: I told you, I'd *Lady-Airs* you, when I saw you; and you shall have it all in good Time.

I'm sure, said I, I shall have nothing from your Ladyship, but what will be very agreeable: But indeed I never meant any thing particular by that, or any other Word that I wrote; nor could I think of any thing but what was highly respectful to your Ladyship.

LORD *Davers* was pleased to say, that it was impossible I should either write or speak any thing that could be taken amiss.

LADY *Davers*, after Supper, and the Servants were withdrawn, began a Discourse on Titles, and said, Brother, I think you should hold yourself obliged to my Lord *Davers*; for he has spoken to Lord S. who made him a Visit a few Days ago, to procure you a Baronet's Patent. Your Estate, and the Figure you make in the World, are so considerable, and your Family, besides, is so antient, that, methinks, you should wish for some Distinction of that Sort.

\* See Vol. II. p. 316.



YES, Brother, said my Lord, I did mention it to Lord *S.* and told him, withal, That it was without your Knowledge or Desire, that I spoke about it; and I was not very sure you would accept of it: But 'tis a thing your Sister has wish'd for a good while.

WHAT Answer did my Lord *S.* make to it? said Mr. *B.*

HE said, We, meaning the Ministers, I suppose, should be glad to oblige a Gentleman of Mr. *B.*'s Figure in the World; but you mention it so slightly, that you can hardly expect Courtiers will tender it to any Gentleman that is so indifferent about it; for, Lord *Davers*, we seldom grant Honours without a View, I tell you that, added he, smiling.

MY Lord *S.* might mention this as a Jest, return'd Mr. *B.* but he spoke the Truth. But your Lordship said well, that I was indifferent about it. 'Tis true, 'tis an hereditary Title: But the rich Citizens, who used to be satisfied with the Title of Knights, (till they made it so common, that it is brought into as great Contempt almost as that of the \* *French* Knights of St. *Michael*, and nobody cares to accept of it) now are ambitious of this; and, as I apprehend, it is hastening apace into like Disrepute. Besides, 'tis a novel Honour, and what the Ancestors of our Family, who lived at its Institution, would never accept of. But were it a Peerage they

\* This Order was become so scandalously common in France, that, in order to suppress it, the Hangman was vested with the Ensigns of it, which effectually abolished it.

would

would give me, which has some essential Privileges and Splendors annex'd to it, that would make it desirable to some Men, I would not enter into Conditions for it. Titles at best, added he, are but Shadows; and he that has the Substance should be above valuing them; for who that has the whole Bird, would pride himself upon a single Feather?

BUT, said my Lady, altho' I acknowledge, that the Institution is of late Date, yet, as abroad, as well as at home, it is regarded as a Title of Dignity, and it is supposed, that the best Families among the Gentry are distinguish'd by it, I should be glad you would accept of it. And as to Citizens, who have it, they are not many; and some of this Class of People, or their immediate Descendants however, have bought themselves into the Peerage itself of the one Kingdom or the other.

As to what it is looked upon Abroad, said Mr. B. that is of no Weight at all; for when an *Englishman* travels, be he of what Degree he will, if he has an Equipage, and squanders his Money away, he is a Lord of course, with Foreigners: And therefore Sir *Such-a-one* is rather a Diminution to him, as it fixes him down to a lower Title than his Vanity would perhaps make him aspire to be thought in the Possession of. Then, as to Citizens, in a Trading Nation like this, I am not displeased in the main, with seeing the over-grown ones creeping into nominal Honours; and we have so many of our first Titled Families who have ally'd themselves to Trade,

Trade, (whose Inducements were Money only) that it ceases to be either a Wonder as to the Fact, or a Disgrace to the Honour.

WELL, Brother, said my Lady, I will tell you further, the Thing may be had for asking for: If you will but go to Court, and desire to kiss the King's Hand, that will be all the Trouble you'll have; and pray now oblige me in it.

IF a Title would make me either a better or a wiser Man, reply'd Mr. *B.* I would embrace it with Pleasure. Besides, I am not so intirely satisfied with some of the Measures now pursuing, as to owe any Obligation to the Ministers. Accepting of a small Title from them, is but like putting on their Badge, or listing under their Banners; like a certain Lord we all know, who accepted of one Degree more of Title to shew he was theirs, and would not have a higher, lest it should be thought a Satisfaction tantamount to half the Pension he demanded: And could I be easy to have it supposed, that I was an ingrateful Man for voting as I pleased, because they gave me the Title of a Baronet?

THE Countess said, The World always thought Mr. *B.* to be a Gentleman of steady Principles, and not attached to any Party; but it was her Opinion, that it was far from being inconsistent with any Gentleman's Honour and Independency, to accept of a Title from a Prince he acknowledged as his Sovereign.

'TIS very true, Madam, reply'd Mr. *B.* that I am attach'd to no Party, nor ever will; and I have a mean Opinion of many of the Heads of



both: Nay, I will say further, that I wish at my Heart, the Gentlemen in the Administration would pursue such Measures, that I could give them every Vote, as I always will every one that I can; and I have no very high Opinion of those who, right or wrong, would distress or imbarass a Government. For this is certain, that our Governors cannot be always in the wrong; and he therefore who never gives them a Vote, must sometimes be in the wrong, as well as they, and must, moreover, have some View he will not own. But in a Country like ours, where each of the Legislative Powers is, in a manner, independent, and where they are designed as mutual Checks upon one another, I have, notwithstanding, so great an Opinion of the Necessity of an Opposition sometimes, that I am convinc'd it is that which must preserve our Constitution. I will therefore be a *Country Gentleman*, in the true Sense of the Word, and will accept of no Favour that shall make any one think I would *not* be of the Opposition when I think it a necessary one; as, on the other hand, I should scorn to make myself a Round to any Man's Ladder of Preferment, or a Caballer for the sake of my own.

You say well, Brother, return'd Lady *Dawers*; but you may undoubtedly keep your own Principles and Independency, and yet pay your Duty to the King, and accept of this Title; for your Family and Fortune will be a greater Ornament to the Title, than the Title to you.

THEN,

THEN, what Occasion have I for it, if that be the Case, Madam?

WHY, I can't say but I should be glad you had it, for your Family's sake, as it is an hereditary Honour. Then it would mend the Style of your Spouse here; for the good Girl is at such a Loss for an Epithet when she writes, that I see the Constraint she lies under. It is, *My dear Gentleman, My best Friend, My Benefactor, My dear Mr. B.*; whereas Sir *William* would turn off her Periods more roundly, and no other softer Epithet would be wanting.

To me, reply'd he, who always desire to be distinguished as my *Pamela's* best Friend, and think it an Honour to be called *her dear Mr. B.* and *her dear Gentleman*, this Reason weighs very little, unless there were no other Sir *William* in the Kingdom than *her Sir William*; for I am very emulous of her Favour, I can tell you, and think it no small Distinction.

I BLUSHED at this too great Honour, before such Company, and was afraid my Lady would be a little piqu'd at it. But, after a Pause, she said, Well then, Brother, will you let *Pamela* decide upon this Point?

RIGHTLY put, said the Countess. Pray let Mrs. B. chuse for you, Sir. My Lady has hit the Thing.

VERY good, very good, by my Soul, says Lord *Jackey*; let my *young Aunt*, that was his Word, chuse for you, Sir.

WELL then, *Pamela*, said the dear Gentleman, give us *your* Opinion, as to this Point.

BUT, first, said Lady *Davers*, say you will be determin'd by it; or else she will be laid under a Difficulty.

WELL then, reply'd he, be it so. I will be determined by your Opinion, my Dear: Give it me freely.

LORD *Jackey* rubb'd his Hands together, Charming, charming, as I hope to live! By *Jove*, this is just as I wish'd!

WELL, now, *Pamela*, said my Lady, speak your true Heart without Disguise: I charge you do.

WHY then, Gentlemen and Ladies, said I, if I must be so bold as to speak on a Subject, upon which, on several Accounts, it would become me to be silent, I should be *against* the Title: But perhaps my Reason is of too private a Nature, to weigh any thing; and if so, it would not become me to have any Choice at all.

THEY all called upon me for my Reason; and I said, looking down, a little abash'd, It is this: Here my dear Mr. *B.* has disparag'd himself by distinguishing, as he has done, such a low Body as me; and the World will be apt to say, he is seeking to repair *one way* the Honour he has lost *another*; and then, perhaps, it will be attributed to *my* Pride and Ambition: Here, they will be apt to say, the proud Cottager will needs be a Lady, in Hopes to conceal her Descent; whereas, had I such a vain Thought, it would be but making it the more remember'd against both Mr. *B.* and myself. And indeed, as to my own

Part,  
1



Part, I take too much Pride in having been lifted up into this Distinction, for the Causes to which I owe it, your Brother's *Bounty* and *Generosity*, than to be ashamed of what I *was*: Only now-and-then I am concerned for his own sake, lest he should be too much censur'd. — But this would not be prevented, but rather be promoted by the Title. — So I am humbly of Opinion against the Title.

THE dear Gentleman had hardly Patience to hear me out, but came to me, and folding his Arms about me, said, Just as I wish'd, have you answer'd, my beloved *Pamela*: I was never yet deceiv'd in you; no, not once.

MY Lady Countess, my Lord *Davers*, my Lady *Davers*, continued he, do we want any Titles, think you, to make us happy, but what we can confer upon ourselves? And he press'd my Hand to his Lips, as he always honours me most in Company; and went to his Place, highly pleas'd; while his fine Manner drew Tears from my Eyes, and made his noble Sister's and the Countess's glisten too.

MY Lady said, Well, for my Part, thou art a strange Girl! Where, as my Brother once said\*, gottest thou all this? Then, pleasantly humorous, as if she was angry, she changed her Tone, What signify thy *meek* Words, and *humble* Speeches, when by thy *Actions*, as well as *Sentiments*, thou reflectest upon us all! — *Pamela*, said she, have less Merit, or take care to conceal

\* See Vol. I. p. 49.

it better: I shall otherwise have no more Patience with thee, than thy Monarch has just now shewn.

THE Countess was pleased to say, You're a happy Couple indeed! And I must needs repeat to you, Mr. B. Four Lines, made by Sir *William Davenant* upon a Lady, who could not possibly deserve them so much as yours does:

*She ne'er saw Courts; but Courts could have out-done,  
With untaught Looks, and an unpractis'd Heart:  
Her Nets the most prepar'd could never shun;  
For Nature spread them in the Scorn of Art.*

BUT, my dear Miss, how lucky one sometimes is, in having what one says well accepted! Ay, that is all in all: Since the Reason for the Answer I gave, was so obvious, that one in my Circumstances could not have miss'd it. Yet what Compliments had I upon it! 'Tis a Sign they were prepared to think well of me; and that's my great Pleasure and Happiness.

SUCH sort of Entertainment as this you are to expect from your Correspondent. I cannot do better than I can; and it may appear such a Mixture of Self-praise, Vanity and Impertinence, that I expect you will tell me freely, as soon as this comes to your Hand, whether it be tolerable to you. Yet I must write on, for my dear Father and Mother's sake, who require it of me, and are prepared to approve of every thing that comes from me, for no other Reason but that: And I think you ought to leave me to write to them

them only, as I cannot hope it will be entertaining to any body else, without expecting as much Partiality and Favour from others, as I have from my dear Parents. Mean time I conclude here my first Conversation-piece; and am, and will be,

*Always Yours, &c.*

P. B.

## L E T T E R   X X X .

*Thursday Morning, Six o' Clock.*

OUR Breakfast Conversation Yesterday, (at which only Mrs. *Worden*, my Lady's Woman, and my *Polly* attended) was so whimsically particular, (tho' I doubt some of it, at least, will appear too trifling) that I cannot help acquainting my dear Miss *Darnford* with it, who is desirous of knowing all that relates to Lady *Davers's* Conduct towards me.

You must know then, that I have the Honour to stand very high in the Graces of Lord *Davers*, who on every Occasion is pleased to call me his *good Sister*, his *dear Sister*, and sometimes his *charming Sister*; and he tells me, he will not be out of my Company for an Hour together, while he stays here, if he can help it.

My Lady seems to relish this very well in the main, tho' she cannot quite so readily, y<sup>e</sup>r, frame her Mouth to the Sound of the Word



*Sister*, as my Lord does ; of which this that follows is one Instance.

HIS Lordship had called me by that tender Name twice before, and saying, I will drink another Dish, I think, my *good Sister* ; my Lady said, Your Lordship has got a Word by the End, that you seem mighty fond of : I have taken Notice, that you have called *Pamela, Sister, Sister, Sister*, no less than Three times in a Quarter of an Hour.

MY Lord looked a little serious : I shall one Day or other, said he, be allow'd to chuse my own Words and Phrases, I hope : Your Sister, Mr. *B.* added he, often questions whether I am at Age or not, tho' the House of Peers made no Scruple of admitting me among them some Years ago.

MR. *B.* said, severely, but with a smiling Air, 'Tis well she has such a Gentleman as your Lordship for a Husband, whose affectionate Indulgence to her, makes you overlook all her saucy Sallies. I am sure, when you took her out of our Family into your own, we all thought ourselves bound to pray for you.

I THOUGHT this a great Trial of my Lady's Patience : But it was from Mr. *B.* And she said, with a half-pleasant, half-serious Air, How now, Confidence ! — None but my Brother could have said this, whose violent Spirit was always much more intolerable than mine : But I can tell you, Mr. *B.* I was always thought very good-humour'd, and obliging to every body, till your Impudence came from College, and  
from

from your Travels; and then, I own, your provoking Ways made me now-and-then a little out of the Way.

WELL, well, Sister, we'll have no more of this Subject; only let us see, that my Lord *Davers* wants not his proper Authority with you, altho' you used to keep me in Awe formerly.

KEEP you in Awe! — That nobody could ever do yet, Boy or Man — But, my Lord, I beg your Pardon; for this Brother will make Mischief betwixt us, if he can. — I only took Notice of the Word *Sister* so often us'd, which look'd more like Affectation than Affection.

PERHAPS, Lady *Davers*, said my Lord, gravely, I have Two Reasons for using the Word so frequently.

I'd be glad to hear them, said the dear taunting Lady; for I don't doubt they're mighty good ones. What are they, my Lord?

ONE is, Because I love, and am fond of, my new Relation: The other, that you are so sparing of the Word, that I call her so for us both.

YOUR Lordship says well, reply'd Mr. *B.* smiling; and Lady *Davers* can give Two Reasons why she does *not*.

WELL, said my Lady, now we are in for't, let us hear *your* Two Reasons likewise: I doubt not they're wise ones too.

IF they are *yours*, Lady *Davers*, they must be so: One is, that every Condescension, to speak in a proud Lady's Dialect, comes with as much Difficulty from her, as a Favour from the  
House

House of *Austria* to the petty Princes of *Germany*. The second, Because those of your Sex, (excuse me, my Lady Countess) who having once made Scruples, think it inconsistent with themselves to be over-hasty to alter their own Conduct, chusing rather to persist in an Error, than own it to be one.

THIS proceeded from the dear Gentleman's Impatience to see me in the least slighted by my Lady: And I said to Lord *Davers*, to soften Matters, Never, my Lord, were Brother and Sister so loving in Earnest, and yet so satirical upon each other in Jest, as my good Lady and Mr. *B.* But your Lordship knows their Way.

MY Lady frown'd at her Brother, but turn'd it off with an Air: I love the Mistress of this House, said she, very well; and am quite reconcil'd to her: But methinks there is such a hissing Sound in the Word *Sister*, that I cannot abide it. 'Tis a true *English* Word, but a Word I have not been used to, having never had a Sif-f-f-ter before, as you know. Speaking the first Syllable of the Word with an emphatical Hiss.

MR. *B.* said, Observe you not, Lady *Davers*, that you used a Word (to avoid that) which had twice the Hissing in it, that *Sister* has? — and that was, Mis-f-f-trefs, with Two other hissing Words to accompany it, of this-s-s Houf-f-fe: But to what childish Follies does not Pride make one stoop! Excuse, my Lady, (to the Countess) such poor low Conversation as we are dwindled into.

O SIR,



O SIR, said her Ladyship, the Conversation is very agreeable; and I think, Lady *Davers*, you're fairly caught.

WELL, said my Lady, then help me, good *Sister*, there's for you! to a little Sugar. Will that please you, Sir?

I AM always pleas'd, reply'd her Brother, smiling, when Lady *Davers* acts up to her own Character, and the good Sense she is Mistress of.

AY, ay, return'd she, my good Brother, like other wise Men, takes it for granted, that it is a Mark of good Sense to approve of whatever *he* does. — And so, for this one Time, I am a very sensible Body with him. — And I'll leave off, while I have his good Word. Only one thing I must say to you, my Dear, turning to me, That tho' I call you *Pamela*, and *Pamela*, as I please, I do assure you, I love you as well as if I called you *Sister*, *Sister*, as Lord *Davers* does, at every Word.

YOUR Ladyship gives me great Pleasure, said I, in this kind Assurance; and I don't doubt but I shall have the Honour of being called by that tender Name, if I can be so happy as to deserve it; and I'll lose no Opportunity that shall be afforded me, to shew how sincerely I will endeavour to do so.

SHE was pleased to rise from her Seat: Give me a Kiss, my dear Girl: You deserve every thing: And permit me to say *Pamela* sometimes, as the Word occurs; for I am not used to speak in Print; and I will call you *Sister* when I think

of it, and love you as well as ever Sister loved another.

THESE proud and passionate Folks, said Mr. *B.* how good they can be, when they reflect a little on what becomes their Characters !

So then, rejoin'd my Lady, I am to have no Merit of my own, I see, do what I will. This is not quite so generous in my Brother, as one might expect.

WHY, you saucy Sister, excuse me, Lord *Davers*, what Merit *would* you assume? Can People merit by doing their Duty? And is it so great a Praise, that you think fit to own for a Sister, so deserving a Girl as this, whom I take Pride in calling my Wife?

THOU art what thou always wert, return'd my Lady; and were I in this my imputed Pride to want an Excuse, I know not the Creature living that ought so soon to make one for me, as you.

I DO excuse you, said he, for *that* very Reason, if you please: But it little becomes either your Pride, or mine, to do any thing that wants Excuse.

MIGHTY moral! mighty grave, truly! — *Pamela*, Friend, Sister, — there's for you! — thou art a happy Girl to have made such a Reformation in thy honest Man's way of *Thinking*, as well as *Acting*. But now we are upon this Topick, and none but Friends about us, I am resolv'd to be even with thee, Brother. *Jackey*, if you are not for another Dish, I wish you'd withdraw. *Polly Barlow*, we don't want you.

you. *Beck*, you may stay. Mr. *H.* obey'd; and *Polly* went out: For you must know, Miss, that my Lady *Davers* will have none of the Men-Fellows, as she calls them, to attend upon us at Tea. And I cannot say but I think her intirely in the right, for several Reasons that might be given.

WHEN they were withdrawn, my Lady repeated, Now we are upon this Topick of Reclaiming and Reformation, tell me, thou bold Wretch; for you know I have seen all your Rogueries in *Pamela's* Papers; tell me, if ever Rake but thyself made such an Attempt as thou didst, on this dear good Girl, in the Presence of a virtuous Woman, as Mrs. *Jervis* always was noted to be? — As to the other vile Creature *Jewkes*, 'tis less Wonder, altho' in *that* thou hadst the Impudence of him who set thee to Work: But to make thy Attempt before Mrs. *Jervis*, and in spite of *her* Struggles and Reproaches, was the very Stretch of shameless Wickedness.

THE dear Gentleman seem'd a little disconcerted, and said, Surely, surely, Lady *Davers*, this is going too far! Look at *Pamela's* blushing Face, and down-cast Eye, and wonder at yourself for this Question, as much as you do at me for the Actions you speak of.

THE Countess said to me, My dear Mrs. *B.* I wonder not at this sweet Confusion on so affecting a Question; but, indeed, since it has come in so naturally, I must say, Mr. *B.* that we have all, and my Daughters too, wonder'd



at this, more than at any Part of your Attempts; because, Sir, we thought you one of the most civiliz'd Gentlemen in *England*, and that you could not but wish to have saved Appearances a little.

THO' this, said Mr. *B.* is to *you*, my *Pamela*, the Renewal of Grievs; yet hold up your dear Face. — You may — the Triumph was yours — the Shame and the Blushes ought to be mine. — And I will humour my saucy Sister in all she would have me say.

NAY, said Lady *Davers*, you know the Question; I cannot put it stronger.

THAT'S very true, reply'd he. — But what would you have me say? Do you expect I should give you a *Reason* for an Attempt that appears to you so very shocking?

NAY, Sir, said the Countess, don't say *Appears to Lady Davers*; for (excuse me) it will appear so to every one who hears of it.

I THINK my Brother is too hardly used, said Lord *Davers*: He has made all the Amends he could make; and *you*, my Sister, who were the Person offended, forgive him now, I hope? don't you?

I COULD not answer; for I was quite confounded; and made a Motion to withdraw: But Mr. *B.* said, Don't go, my Dear: Tho' I ought to be ashamed of an Action set before me in so full a Glare, in Presence of Lord *Davers* and the Countess; — yet I will not have you stir, because I forget how you represented it, and you must tell me.

INDEED,

INDEED, Sir, I cannot, said I: Pray, my dear Ladies, pray, my good Lord, and dear Sir, don't thus *renew my Griefs*, as you were pleased justly to phrase it.

I HAVE the Representation of that Scene in my Pocket, said my Lady; for I was resolved, as I told Lady *Betty*, to shame the wicked Wretch with it, the first Opportunity I had; and I'll read it to you: Or, rather, you shall read it yourself, Boldface, if you can.

So she pulled those Leaves out of her Pocket, wrapp'd up carefully in a Paper. — Here, — I believe, he who could act thus, must read it; and, to spare *Pamela's* Confusion, read it to yourself; for we all know how it was.

I THINK, said he, taking the Papers, I can say something that will abate the Heinousness of this heavy Charge, or else I should not stand thus at the insolent Bar of my Sister, answering her Interrogatories.

I SEND you, my dear Miss, a Transcript of the Charge, as follows: — To be sure, you'll say, he was a very wicked Gentleman.

[ See Vol. I. p. 90. & seq. ]

MR. *B.* read this to himself, and said, This is a dark Affair, as it is here stated; and I can't say, but *Pamela*, and Mrs. *Jervis* too, had a great deal of Reason to apprehend the worst: But surely Readers of it, who were less Parties in the supposed Attempt, and who were not determined at all Events to condemn me, might have made a more favourable Construction for me, than you, Lady *Davers*, have done, in the strong

strong Light in which you have set this heinous Matter before us.

HOWEVER, since my Lady Countess, and Lord *Davers*, seem to expect, that I shall particularly answer to this black Charge, I will, at a proper Time, if it will be agreeable, give you a brief History of my Passion for this dear Girl, how it commenc'd, and increas'd, and my own Struggles with it: And this will introduce, with some little Advantage to myself perhaps, what I have to say, as to this supposed Attempt; and at the same time enable you the better to account for some Facts which you have read in my pretty Accuser's Papers.

THIS pleased every one, and they begg'd him to begin *then*: But he said, It was Time we should think of Dressing, the Morning being far advanc'd; and if no Company came in, he would, in the Afternoon, give them the Particulars they desired to hear.

THE Three Gentlemen rode out, and returned just Time enough to dress before Dinner; and my Lady and the Countess also took an Airing in the Chariot. Just as they returned, Compliments came from several of the neighbouring Ladies to our noble Guests, on their Arrival in these Parts; and, to as many as sent, Lady *Davers* desir'd their Companies for To-morrow in the Afternoon, to drink Tea: But Mr. *B.* having fallen in with some of the Gentlemen likewise, he told me, we should have most of our visiting Neighbours at Dinner, and desired Mrs. *Jervis* might prepare accordingly for them.

AFTER



AFTER Dinner Mr. *H.* took a Ride out attended with Mr. *Colbrand*, of whom he is very fond, ever since he frighten'd Lady *Davers's* Footmen at the Hall, threatening \* to chine them, if they offer'd to stop his Lady; for, he says, He loves a Man of Courage; very probably knowing his own Defects that way; for my Lady often calls him a Chicken-hearted Fellow. And then Lord and Lady *Davers*, and the Countess, reviv'd the Subject of the Morning; and Mr. *B.* was pleas'd to begin in the Manner I shall mention by-and-by. For here I am oblig'd to break off.

Now, my dear Miss, I will proceed.

' I NEED not, said the dear Gentleman, observe to any body who knows what Love is, (or rather that violent Passion which we mad young Fellows are apt to miscall Love) what mean Things it puts one upon; how it unmans, and levels with the Dust, the proudest Spirit. In the Sequel of my Story you will observe several Instances of this Truth.

' I BEGAN very early to take Notice of this lovely Girl, even when she was hardly Thirteen Years old; for her Charms increased every Day, not only in my Eye, but in the Eyes of every one who beheld her. My Mother, as *you*, Lady *Davers*, know, took the greatest Delight in her, always calling her, Her *Pamela*, her good Child: And her Waiting-maid, and her Cabinet of Rarities, were her Boasts, and

\* See Vol. II. p. 268.

‘ equally shewn to every Visitor: For, besides  
 ‘ the Beauty of her Figure, and the genteel Air  
 ‘ of her Person, the dear Girl had a surprising  
 ‘ Memory, a Solidity of Judgment above her  
 ‘ Years, and a Docility so unequall’d, that she  
 ‘ took all Parts of Learning, which her Lady, as  
 ‘ fond of instructing her, as she of improving by  
 ‘ Instruction, crouded upon her; insomuch that  
 ‘ she had Masters to teach her to dance, to sing,  
 ‘ and to play on the Spinnet, whom she every  
 ‘ Day surpris’d by the Readiness wherewith she  
 ‘ took every thing.

‘ I REMEMBER once, my Mother praising  
 ‘ her Girl before me, and my Aunt *B.* (who is  
 ‘ since dead) I could not but take Notice to her  
 ‘ of her Fondness for her, and said, What do you  
 ‘ design, Madam, to do *with*, or to do *for*, this  
 ‘ *Pamela* of yours? The Accomplishments you  
 ‘ give her will do her more Hurt than Good:  
 ‘ For they will set her so much above her Degree,  
 ‘ that what you intend as a Kindness, may prove  
 ‘ her Ruin.

‘ MY Aunt join’d with me, and spoke in a  
 ‘ still stronger Manner against giving her such an  
 ‘ Education; and added, as I well remember,  
 ‘ Surely, Sister, you do wrong. One would  
 ‘ think, if one knew not my Nephew’s discreet  
 ‘ Pride, that you design her for something more  
 ‘ than your own Waiting-maid.

‘ AH! Sister, said the old Lady, there is no  
 ‘ Fear of what you hint at: His Family Pride,  
 ‘ and stately Temper, will secure my Son: He  
 ‘ has too much of his Father in him. — And as  
 ‘ for

‘ for *Pamela*, you know not the Girl. She has  
‘ always in her Thoughts, and in her Mouth too,  
‘ her Parents mean Condition; and I shall do no-  
‘ thing for *them*, at least at present, tho’ they  
‘ are honest Folks, and deserve well, because I  
‘ will keep the Girl humble.

‘ BUT what can I do with the little Bag-  
‘ gage? continued my Mother: She conquers  
‘ every thing so fast, and has such a Thirst after  
‘ Knowledge, and the more she knows, I verily  
‘ think, the humbler she is, that I cannot help  
‘ letting go, as my Son, when a little Boy,  
‘ used to do to his Kite, as fast as she pulls; and  
‘ to what Height she’ll soar, I can’t tell.

‘ I INTENDED, proceeded the good Lady, at  
‘ first, only to make her Mistress of some fine  
‘ Needle-works, to qualify her (as she has a  
‘ Delicacy in her Person that makes it a Pity she  
‘ should ever be put to hard Work) for a gen-  
‘ teel Place: But she masters that so fast, that  
‘ now, as my Daughter is marry’d, and gone  
‘ from me, I am desirous to qualify her to divert  
‘ and entertain me in my thoughtful Hours: And  
‘ were *you*, Sister, to know what she is capable  
‘ of, and how diverting her innocent Prattle is to  
‘ me, and her natural Simplicity, which I encour-  
‘ age her to preserve amidst all she learns, you  
‘ would not, nor my Son neither, wonder at the  
‘ Pleasure I take in her. — Shall I call her in?

‘ I DON’T want, said I, to have the Girl called  
‘ in: If you, Madam, are diverted with her,  
‘ that’s enough. — To be sure *Pamela* is a bet-  
‘ ter Companion for a Lady, than a Monkey or



‘ a Harlequin : But I fear you’ll set her above herself, and make her vain and pert ; and that at last, in order to support her Pride, she may fall into Temptations which may be fatal to herself, and others too.

‘ I’m glad to hear this from my *Son*, reply’d the good Lady. But the Moment I see my Favour puffs her up, I shall take other Measures.

‘ WELL, thought I to myself, I want only to conceal my Views from your penetrating Eye, my good Mother ; and I shall one Day take as much Delight in your Girl, and her Accomplishments, as you now do : So, go on, and improve her as fast as you will. I’ll only now-and-then talk against her, to blind you ; and doubt not that all you bestow upon her, will qualify her the better for my Purpose. — Only, thought I, fly swiftly on, Two or Three more tardy Years, and I’ll nip this Bud by the Time it begins to open, and place it in my Bosom for a Year or Two at least ; for so long, if the Girl behaves worthy of her Education, I doubt not, she’ll be new to me. Excuse me, Ladies, excuse me, Lord *Davers* : If I am not ingenuous, I had better be silent.’

I WILL, as little as possible, my dear Miss, interrupt this affecting Narration, by mentioning my own alternate Blushes, Confusions, and Exclamations, as the naughty Gentleman went on ; nor the Censures and many *Out-upon-you’s* of the attentive Ladies, and *Fie, Brother’s*, of Lord *Davers* ; nor yet

yet with Apologies for the Praises on myself, so frequently intermingled — contenting myself to give you, as near as I can recollect, the very Sentences of the dear Relater. And as to our occasional Exclaimings and Observations, you may suppose what they were.

‘ So, continued Mr. *B.* I went on dropping  
 ‘ Hints against her now-and-then; and whenever  
 ‘ I met her, in the Passages about the House, or  
 ‘ in the Garden, avoiding to look at her, or to  
 ‘ speak to her, as she pass’d me, court’ying, and  
 ‘ putting on a thousand bewitching Airs of  
 ‘ Obligingness and Reverence; while I (who  
 ‘ thought that the best way to demolish the  
 ‘ Influence of such an Education, would be to  
 ‘ avoid alarming her Fears on one hand, or to  
 ‘ familiarize myself to her on the other, till I  
 ‘ came to strike the Blow) looked haughty and  
 ‘ reserved, and passed by her with a stiff Nod,  
 ‘ at most. Or, if I spoke, How does your Lady  
 ‘ this Morning, Girl? — I hope she rested well  
 ‘ last Night: Then, cover’d with Blushes, and  
 ‘ court’ying at every Word, as if she thought  
 ‘ herself unworthy of answering my Questions,  
 ‘ she’d trip away in a kind of Hurry and Confu-  
 ‘ sion, as soon as she had spoken. And once I  
 ‘ heard her say to Mrs. *Fervis*, Dear Sirs, my  
 ‘ young Master spoke to me, and called me by  
 ‘ my Name, saying, How slept your Lady last  
 ‘ Night, *Pamela*! Was not that very good;  
 ‘ Mrs. *Fervis*! was it not? — Ay, thought I,  
 ‘ I’m in the right way, I find: This will do in

‘ proper Time. Go on, my dear Mother;  
 ‘ improving as fast as you will: I’ll engage to  
 ‘ pull down in Three Hours what you’ll be  
 ‘ building up in as many Years, in spite of all  
 ‘ the Lessons you can teach her.

‘ ’Tis enough for me, that I am establishing  
 ‘ in you, Ladies, and in you, my Lord, a higher  
 ‘ Esteem for my *Pamela*, (I am but too sensible  
 ‘ I shall lose a good deal of my own Reputation)  
 ‘ in the Relation I am now giving you. Every  
 ‘ one but my Mother, who, however, had no  
 ‘ high Opinion of her Son’s Virtue, used to look  
 ‘ upon me as a Rake; and I got the Name, not  
 ‘ very much to my Credit, you’ll say, as well  
 ‘ Abroad as in *England*, of *The sober Rake*;—  
 ‘ some would say *The genteel Rake*; nay, for that  
 ‘ matter, some pretty Hearts, that have smarted  
 ‘ for their good Opinion, have called me *The*  
 ‘ *handsome Rake*;—But whatever other Epithet  
 ‘ I was distinguish’d by, it all concluded in *Rake*  
 ‘ or *Libertine*: Nor was I very much offended at  
 ‘ the Character; for, thought I, if a Lady knows  
 ‘ this, and will come into my Company, half the  
 ‘ Ceremony between us is over; and if she *calls*  
 ‘ me so, I shall have an excellent Excuse to punish  
 ‘ her Freedom, by greater of my own.

‘ So I dress’d, grew more and more confi-  
 ‘ dent, and became as insolent withal, as if, tho’  
 ‘ I had not Lady *Davers’s* Wit and Virtue, I  
 ‘ had all her Spirit (excuse me, Lady *Davers*);  
 ‘ and having a pretty bold Heart, which rather  
 ‘ put me upon courting than avoiding a Danger  
 ‘ or Difficulty, I had but too much my Way  
 ‘ with



‘ with every body; and many a menac’d Com-  
 ‘ plaint have I *look’d down* with a haughty Air,  
 ‘ and a Promptitude like that of *Colbrand’s* to  
 ‘ your Footmen at the Hall, to clap my Hand to  
 ‘ my Side: Which was of the greater Service to  
 ‘ my bold Enterprizes, as Two or Three Gen-  
 ‘ tlemen had found I knew how to be in Ear-  
 ‘ nest.

HA! said my Lady, thou wast ever an impu-  
 dent Fellow; and many a vile Roguery have I  
 kept from my poor Mother. — Yet, to my  
 Knowledge, she thought you no Saint.

‘ A Y, poor Lady, continued he, she used now-  
 ‘ and-then to catechize me; and was *sure* I was  
 ‘ not so good as I ought to be: — For, Son,  
 ‘ she would cry, these late Hours, these all-night  
 ‘ Works, and to come home so *sober*, cannot be  
 ‘ right. — I am not sure, if I were to know all,  
 ‘ (and yet I’m afraid of inquiring after your Ways)  
 ‘ whether I should not have Reason to wish you  
 ‘ were brought home in Wine, rather than to  
 ‘ come in so sober, and so late, as you do.

‘ ONCE, I remember, in the Summer-time, I  
 ‘ came home about Six in the Morning, and met  
 ‘ the good Lady unexpectedly by the Garden  
 ‘ Back-Door, of which I had a Key to let myself in  
 ‘ at all Hours. I started, and would have avoided  
 ‘ her, as soon as I saw her: But she called me to  
 ‘ her; and then I approach’d her with an Air,  
 ‘ What brings you, Madam, into the Garden at  
 ‘ so early an Hour? turning my Face from her;  
 ‘ for I had a few Scratches on my Forehead, —  
 ‘ with a Thorn, or so, — which I feared she

‘ would be more inquisitive about than I cared  
‘ she should.

‘ AND what makes you, said she, so early  
‘ here, *Billy*? — What a rakish Figure dost  
‘ thou make? — One time or other these  
‘ Courses will yield you but little Comfort, on  
‘ Reflection: Would to God thou wast but hap-  
‘ pily marry’d!

‘ So, Madam, the old Wish! — I’m not so  
‘ bad as you think me: — I hope I have not  
‘ merited so great a Punishment.

‘ THESE Hints I give, not as Matter of Glory,  
‘ but Shame: Yet I ought to tell you all the  
‘ Truth, or nothing. Mean time, thought I,  
‘ (for I used, as I mentioned in the Morning,  
‘ to have some Compunction for my vile Pra-  
‘ ctices, when cool Reflection, brought on by  
‘ Satiety, had taken hold of me) I wish this  
‘ sweet Girl were grown to Years of Susceptibi-  
‘ lity, that I might reform this wicked Course  
‘ of Life, and not prowl about, disturbing honest  
‘ Folks Peace, and endangering myself. And  
‘ as I had by a certain very daring and wicked  
‘ Attempt, in which however I did not succeed,  
‘ set a Horner’s Nest about my Ears, which I  
‘ began to apprehend would sting me to Death;  
‘ having once escap’d an Ambush, by dint of  
‘ mere good Luck; I thought it was better to  
‘ remove the Seat of my Warfare into another  
‘ Kingdom, and to be a little more discreet for  
‘ the future in my Amours. So I went to *France*  
‘ a second time, as you know, Sister; and passed  
‘ a Twelvemonth there in the best of Company,  
‘ and

and with some Improvement both to my  
 Morals and Understanding; and had very few  
 Sallies, considering my Love of Intrigue, and  
 the ample Means I had to prosecute successfully all the Desires of my Heart.

WHEN I return'd, several Matches were  
 proposed to me, and my good Mother often requested me to make her so happy, as she call'd it, as to see me marry'd before she dy'd: But I could not endure the Thoughts of the State; For I never saw a Lady whose Temper and Education I liked, or with whom I thought I could live tolerably \*. She used in vain therefore to plead Family Reasons to me: Like most young Fellows, I was too much a Self-lover, to pay so great a Regard to Posterity; and, to say Truth, had very little Solitude at that time, whether my Name were continued or not, in my own Descendants. However, upon my Return, I look'd upon my Mother's *Pamela* with no small Pleasure, and I found her so much improv'd, as well in Person as Behaviour, that I had the less Inducement either to renew my intriguing Life, or to think of a marry'd State.

YET, as my Mother had all her Eyes about her, as the Phrase is, I affected great Shyness, both before her, and to the Girl; for I doubted not, my very Looks would be watch'd by them both; and what the one discover'd, would not be a Secret to the other; and lay-

\* See, for his particular Reasons against Marrying, Vol. II. p. 345, & seq.



‘ ing myself open to too early a Suspicion, I  
 ‘ thought would but ice the Girl over, and make  
 ‘ her Lady more watchful.

‘ So I used to go into my Mother’s Apart-  
 ‘ ment, and come out of it, without taking the  
 ‘ least Notice of her, but put on stiff Airs; and  
 ‘ as she always withdrew when I came in, I  
 ‘ never made any Pretence to keep her there.

‘ ONCE indeed, my Mother, on my looking  
 ‘ after her, when her Back was turn’d, said, My  
 ‘ dear Son, I don’t like your Eye following my  
 ‘ Girl so intently. Only I know that spark-  
 ‘ ling Lustre natural to it, or I should have some  
 ‘ Fear for my *Pamela*, as she grows older.

‘ I LOOK after her, Madam! — *My* Eyes  
 ‘ sparkle at such a Girl as that! No indeed! —  
 ‘ She may be your Favourite, as a Waiting-  
 ‘ maid; but I see nothing but clumsy Court’sies  
 ‘ in her, and aukward Airs about her. A little  
 ‘ rustick Affectation of Innocence, that to such as  
 ‘ cannot see into her, may pass well enough.

‘ NAY, my Dear, reply’d my Mother, don’t  
 ‘ say that, of all things. She has no Affectation,  
 ‘ I am sure.

‘ YES, she has, in my Eye, Madam; and I’ll  
 ‘ tell you how it comes about: You have taught  
 ‘ her to assume the Airs of a Gentlewoman, to  
 ‘ dance, and to enter a Room with a Grace; and  
 ‘ yet bid her keep her low Birth and Family in  
 ‘ View: And between the one Character, which  
 ‘ she wants to get into, and the other she dares not  
 ‘ get out of, she trips up and down mincingly, and  
 ‘ knows not how to set her Feet: So ’tis the same

‘ in

‘ in every Gesture; her Arms she knows not whe-  
 ‘ ther to swim with, or to hold before her; nor  
 ‘ whether to hold her Head up or down; and  
 ‘ so does neither, but hangs it on one Side; a  
 ‘ little aukward Piece of One-and-t’other, I  
 ‘ think her. — And indeed, Madam, you’d do  
 ‘ the Girl more Kindness to put her into your  
 ‘ Dairy, than to keep her about your Person;  
 ‘ for she’ll be utterly spoil’d, I doubt, for any  
 ‘ useful Purpose.

‘ AH! Son! said she, I fear, by your Descri-  
 ‘ ption, you have minded her too much in one  
 ‘ Sense, tho’ not enough in another. ’Tis not  
 ‘ my Intention to recommend her to your No-  
 ‘ tice, of all Men: And I doubt not, if it please  
 ‘ God I live, and she continues to be a good  
 ‘ Girl, but she will make a Man of some mid-  
 ‘ dling, genteel Business very happy.

‘ PAMELA came in just then, with an Air so  
 ‘ natural, so humble, and yet so much above  
 ‘ herself, that I was forc’d to turn my Head from  
 ‘ her, lest my Mother should watch my Eye  
 ‘ again, and lest I should be inclin’d to do her  
 ‘ that Justice, which my Heart assented to, but  
 ‘ which my Lips had just before deny’d her.

‘ ALL my Difficulty, in Apprehension, was,  
 ‘ my good Mother: The Effect of whose Lessons  
 ‘ to her Girl, I was not, however, so much afraid  
 ‘ of, as her Vigilance. For, thought I, I see by  
 ‘ the Delicacy of her Person, the Brilliancy of  
 ‘ her Eye, and the sweet Apprehensiveness that  
 ‘ plays about every Feature of her Face, that she  
 ‘ must have Tinder enough in her Constitution;

‘ to

‘ to catch a well-struck Spark; and I’ll warrant  
 ‘ I shall know how to set her in a Blaze, in a  
 ‘ few Months more.

‘ YET I wanted, as I pass’d, to catch her  
 ‘ Attention too: I expected her to turn after  
 ‘ me, and look so, as to shew a beginning Like-  
 ‘ ing towards me; for, you must know, I had a  
 ‘ great Opinion of my Person and Air, which  
 ‘ had been fortunately distinguish’d by Ladies,  
 ‘ whom, of course, my Vanity made me allow  
 ‘ to be very good Judges of these outward  
 ‘ Advantages.

‘ I’LL give your Ladyships an Instance of this  
 ‘ my Vanity, in a Catch I made *extempore*, to  
 ‘ a Lady whom I had been urging to give me  
 ‘ some Proofs of a Love, that, I had the Confi-  
 ‘ dence to tell her, I was sure she had in her  
 ‘ Heart for me: She was a lively Lady; and  
 ‘ laughing, said, Whoever admir’d me, it must  
 ‘ be for my Confidence, and nothing else: But  
 ‘ urging her farther, Why, said she, brazen  
 ‘ Man, (for she’d call Names like Lady *Davers*)  
 ‘ what would you have me say? I would love  
 ‘ you, if I *could* — But — Here interrupting  
 ‘ her, and putting on a free Air, I half said, and  
 ‘ half sung,

*You’d love me, you say, if you cou’d!*

*Why, thou mak’st me a very odd Creature;*

*I pr’ythee survey me again;*

*What canst thou object to my Feature?*

‘ THIS shew’d my Vanity; And I answer’d  
 ‘ for the Lady,

Why



Why nothing. --- *Very well* --- *Then I'm sure you'll admit,*

*That the Choice I have made, is a Sign of my WIT.*

‘ B U T, to my great Disappointment, *Pamela*  
‘ never, by any favourable Glance, gave the  
‘ least Encouragement to my Vanity. Well,  
‘ thought I, this Girl has certainly nothing ethe-  
‘ real in her Mould : All unanimated Clay !—  
‘ But the Dancing and Singing Airs my Mother is  
‘ teaching her, will make her better qualify’d in  
‘ time, and another Year will ripen her into my  
‘ Arms, no doubt of it. Let me only go on in  
‘ my present way, and make her *fear* me : That  
‘ will inhanche in her Mind, every Favour I shall  
‘ afterwards vouchsafe to shew her; and never  
‘ question, old *humdrum* Virtue, thought I, but  
‘ the Tempter *without*, and the Tempter *with-*  
‘ *in*, will be too many for the perversest Nicety  
‘ that ever the Sex boasted.

‘ Y E T, tho’ I could not once attract her Eye  
‘ towards me, she never fail’d to draw mine  
‘ after her, whenever she went by me, or where-  
‘ ever I saw her, except, as I said, in my Mother’s  
‘ Presence; and particularly, when she had passed  
‘ me, and could not see me look at her, with-  
‘ out turning her Head, as I expected so often  
‘ from her in vain.

‘ Y O U will wonder, Lord *Davers*, who, I  
‘ I suppose, was once in Love, or you’d never  
‘ have marry’d such a hostile Spirit, as my Sister’s  
‘ there’ —

Go

Go on, Sauce-box, said she, I won't interrupt you.

' You will wonder how I could behave so coolly as to escape all Discovery so long from a Lady so watchful as my Mother, and from the Apprehensiveness of the Girl; for, high or low, every Individual of the Sex is quick as Lightning to Imaginations of this Kind: And besides, well says the Poet:

*Men without Love, have oft so cunning grown,  
That something like it, they have shown;  
But none who had it, e'er seem'd to have none.  
Love's of a strangely open, simple Kind,  
Can no Arts or Disguises find;  
But thinks none sees it, 'cause itself is blind.*

' BUT, to say nothing of her tender Years, and that my Love was not of this bashful Sort, I was not absolutely determin'd, so great was my Pride, that I ought to think her worthy of being my *Mistress*, when I had not much Reason, as I thought, to despair of prevailing upon Persons of higher Birth (were I disposed to try) to live with me upon my own Terms. My Pride therefore kept my Passion at Bay, as I may say: So far was I from imagining I should ever be brought to what has since happen'd! But to proceed:

' HITHERTO my Mind was taken up with the Beauties of her Person only. My EYE had drawn my HEART after it, without giving myself any Trouble about that Sense and Judgment

‘ ment which my Mother was always praising  
‘ in her *Pamela*, as exceeding her Years, and  
‘ Opportunities: But an Occasion happen’d,  
‘ which, tho’ slight in itself, took the HEAD  
‘ into the Party, and made me think of her,  
‘ young as she was, with a Distinction, that  
‘ before I had not had for her. It was this:

‘ BEING with my Mother in her Closet, who  
‘ was talking to me on the old Subject, *Matri-*  
‘ *mony*, I saw *Pamela’s* Common-place Book,  
‘ as I may call it: In which, by her Lady’s Di-  
‘ rection, from time to time, she had transcribed  
‘ from the Bible, and other good Books, such  
‘ Passages as made most Impression upon her, as  
‘ she read. A Method, I take it, my Dear, *turn-*  
‘ *ing to me*, that was of great Service to you, as  
‘ it initiated you into Writing with that Free-  
‘ dom and Ease, which shine in your saucy Let-  
‘ ters and Journals; and to which my present  
‘ Fetters are not a little owing: Just as Pedlars  
‘ catch Monkeys in the Baboon Kingdoms, pro-  
‘ voking the attentive Fools, by their own  
‘ Example, to put on Shoes and Stockens, till  
‘ the Apes of Imitation, trying to do the like,  
‘ intangle their Feet, and so cannot escape upon  
‘ the Boughs of the Tree of Liberty, on which  
‘ before they were wont to hop and skip about,  
‘ and play a thousand puggish Tricks.

‘ I OBSERV’D the Girl wrote a pretty Hand,  
‘ and very swift and free; and affixed her Points,  
‘ or Stops, with so much Judgment, (her Years  
‘ consider’d) that I began to have a high Opinion  
‘ of her Understanding. Some Observations



‘ likewise upon several of the Passages, were so  
‘ just and solid, that I could not help being  
‘ tacitly surpris’d at them.

‘ MY Mother watched my Eye, and was  
‘ silent : I seem’d not to observe, that she did ;  
‘ and after a while, laid down the Book, shut-  
‘ ting it, with great Indifference, and talking  
‘ of another Subject.

‘ UPON this, my Mother said, Don’t you  
‘ think *Pamela* writes a pretty Hand, Mr. B.?

‘ I DID not mind it much, said I, with a care-  
‘ less Air. This is her Writing, is it? Taking  
‘ the Book, and opening it again, at a Place of  
‘ Scripture. The Girl is mighty pious, said I.

‘ I WISH you were so, Child.

‘ I WISH so too, Madam, if it would please *you*.

‘ I WISH so, for your *own* sake, Child.

‘ So do I, Madam. And down I laid the Book  
‘ again, very carelessly.

‘ LOOK once more in it, said she, and see if  
‘ you can’t open it upon some Place, that may  
‘ strike you.

‘ I OPEN’d it at, *Train up a Child in the*  
‘ *Way it should go*, &c. I fancy, said I, when  
‘ I was at *Pamela’s* Age, I was pretty near as  
‘ good as she.

‘ NEVER, never, said my Mother : I am sure  
‘ I took great Pains with you; but, alas! to  
‘ very little Purpose. You had always a violent  
‘ headstrong Will.

‘ SOME Allowances for Boys and Girls, I  
‘ hope, Madam : But you see I am as good for  
‘ a Man, as my Sister for a Woman.

‘ NO

‘ No indeed you are not, I do assure you.

‘ I AM sorry for that, Madam: You give me  
‘ a sad Opinion of myself.

BRAZEN Wretch! said my Lady: But go on.

‘ TURN to one of the Girl’s Observations on  
‘ some Text, said my Mother.

‘ I DID; and was pleased with it more than  
‘ I would own. The Girl’s well enough, said  
‘ I, for what she is; but let’s see what she’ll be a  
‘ few Years hence. Then will be the Trial.

‘ SHE’LL be always good, I doubt not.

‘ So much the better for her. — But can’t  
‘ we talk of any other Subject than this foolish  
‘ Girl? You complain how seldom I attend you,  
‘ Madam; and indeed, when you are always  
‘ talking of Matrimony, or of this low-born  
‘ raw Girl, it must needs lessen the Pleasure of  
‘ approaching you.

‘ BUT now, as I hinted to you, Ladies, and  
‘ my Lord, I had a still higher Opinion of  
‘ *Pamela*; and esteem’d her more worthy of  
‘ my Attempts: For, thought I, the Girl has  
‘ good Sense; and it will be some Pleasure to  
‘ watch by what Gradations she may be made  
‘ to rise into Love, and into a higher Life, than  
‘ that to which she was born. And so I began  
‘ to think she would be worthy in time of being  
‘ my *Mistress*; which till now, as I said before,  
‘ I had been a little scrupulous about.

‘ I TOOK a little Tour soon after this, in  
‘ Company of some Friends, with whom I had  
‘ contracted an Intimacy Abroad, into *Scotland*  
‘ and *Ireland*, they having a Curiosity to see

‘ those Countries; and we spent Six or Eight  
 ‘ Months on this Expedition; and when I had  
 ‘ landed them in *France*, I returned home, and  
 ‘ found my good Mother in a very indifferent  
 ‘ State of Health; but her *Pamela* arrived to  
 ‘ a Height of Beauty and Perfection, that ex-  
 ‘ ceeded all my Expectations. I was so much  
 ‘ taken with her Charms, the first time I saw her  
 ‘ after my Return, which was in the Garden,  
 ‘ with a Book in her Hand, just come out of a  
 ‘ little Summer-house, that I then thought of  
 ‘ obliging her to go back again, in order to begin  
 ‘ a Parley with her: But while I was resolving,  
 ‘ she tript away, with her Courtesies and Reve-  
 ‘ rences, and was out of my Sight before I could  
 ‘ determine.

‘ I WAS resolved, however, not to be long  
 ‘ without her; and Mrs. *Jewkes* having been  
 ‘ recommended to me a little before, by a Bro-  
 ‘ ther-Rake, as a Woman of try’d Fidelity, I  
 ‘ ask’d her, If she would be faithful, if I should  
 ‘ have Occasion to commit a pretty Girl to her  
 ‘ Care?

‘ SHE hoped, she said, it would be with the  
 ‘ Lady’s own Consent, and she should make no  
 ‘ Scruple of obeying me.

‘ So I thought I would way-lay the Girl, and  
 ‘ carry her first to a little Village in *Northamp-*  
 ‘ *tonshire*, to an Acquaintance of Mrs. *Jewkes*’s.  
 ‘ And when I had brought her to be easy and  
 ‘ pacify’d a little, I design’d that *Jewkes* should  
 ‘ attend her to \* *Lincolnshire*: For I knew there

\* See Vol. I. p. 171. l. 7.



‘ was no coming at her here, under my Mother’s  
‘ Wing, by her own Consent; and that to offer  
‘ Terms to her, would be to blow up my Pro-  
‘ ject all at once. Besides, I was sensible, that  
‘ Mrs. *Jervis* would stand in the way of my Pro-  
‘ ceedings, as well as my Mother.

‘ THE Method I had contriv’d, was quite easy,  
‘ as I imagin’d, and such as could not have failed  
‘ to answer my Purpose, as to carrying her off;  
‘ and I doubted not of making her well satisf-  
‘ fy’d in her good Fortune very quickly; for,  
‘ having a Notion of her affectionate Duty to  
‘ her Parents, I was not displeased, that I could  
‘ make the Terms very easy and happy to them  
‘ all.

‘ WHAT most stood in my way, was my  
‘ Mother’s Fondness for her: But, on the Sup-  
‘ position, that I had got her Favourite into my  
‘ Hands, which appeared to me, as I said, a  
‘ Task very easy to be conquered, I had actually  
‘ form’d a Letter for her to transcribe, acknow-  
‘ leging a Love-Affair, and laying her Withdraw-  
‘ ing herself so privately, to the implicit Obe-  
‘ dience she ow’d to her Husband’s Commands,  
‘ to whom she was marry’d that Morning, and  
‘ who, being a young Gentleman of a genteel  
‘ Family, and dependent on his Friends, was  
‘ desirous of keeping it all a profound Secret;  
‘ and begging, on that Account, her Lady not  
‘ to divulge it, so much as to Mrs. *Jervis*.

‘ AND to prepare for this, and make her  
‘ Escape the more probable, when Matters  
‘ were ripe for my Plot, I came in one Night,

‘ and examined all the Servants, and Mrs. *Jervis*,  
‘ the latter in my Mother’s Hearing, about a gen-  
‘ teel young Man, whom I pretended to find  
‘ with a Pillion on the Horse he rode upon,  
‘ waiting about the Back-Door of the Garden,  
‘ for somebody to come to him; and who rode  
‘ off, when I came up to the Door, as fast as he  
‘ could.

‘ NOBODY knew any thing of the Matter,  
‘ and they were much surpris’d at what I told  
‘ them: But I begg’d *Pamela* might be watched,  
‘ and that no one would say any thing to her  
‘ about it.

‘ MY Mother said, She had Two Reasons not  
‘ to speak of it to *Pamela*; one, to oblige me;  
‘ the other and chief, because it would break  
‘ the poor innocent Girl’s Heart, to be suspected.  
‘ Poor dear Child! said she, whither can she go,  
‘ to be so happy as with me? Would it not be  
‘ inevitable Ruin to her to leave me? There is no-  
‘ body comes after her: She receives no Letters,  
‘ but now-and-then one from her Father and  
‘ Mother, and those she shews me.

‘ WELL, reply’d I, I hope she can have no  
‘ Design; ’twould be strange if she had formed  
‘ any to leave so good a Mistress: But you  
‘ can’t be *sure* all the Letters she receives, are  
‘ from her Father; and her shewing to you,  
‘ Madam, those he writes, looks like a Cloak  
‘ to others she may receive from another Hand.  
‘ But it can be no Harm, to have an Eye upon  
‘ her. You don’t know, Madam, what Tricks  
‘ there are in the World.

‘ NOT

‘ NOT I, indeed; but only this I know, that  
 ‘ the Girl shall be under no Restraint, if she is  
 ‘ resolv’d to leave me, well as I love her.

‘ MRS. *Jervis* said, She would have an Eye  
 ‘ upon *Pamela*, in Obedience to my Command;  
 ‘ but she was sure there was no need; nor would  
 ‘ she so much wound the poor Child’s Peace, as  
 ‘ to mention the Matter to her.

‘ THIS I suffered to blow off, and seem’d to  
 ‘ my Mother to have so good an Opinion of her  
 ‘ *Pamela*, that I was sorry, as I told her, I had  
 ‘ had such a Surmize: Saying, that tho’ the Fel-  
 ‘ low and the Pillion were an odd Circum-  
 ‘ stance, yet, I dar’d to say, there could be nothing  
 ‘ in it; for I doubted not, the Girl’s Duty and  
 ‘ Gratitude would hinder her from doing a fool-  
 ‘ ish or rash thing.

‘ THIS my Mother heard with Pleasure;  
 ‘ altho’ my Motive to it was but to lay her *Pa-  
 ‘ mela* on the thicker to her, when she was to be  
 ‘ told she had escaped.

‘ SHE said, She was glad I was not an Enemy  
 ‘ to the poor Child. *Pamela* has no Friend but  
 ‘ me, continued the good Lady; and if I don’t  
 ‘ provide for her, I shall have done her more  
 ‘ Harm than Good, (as you, and your Aunt *B.*  
 ‘ have often said) in the Accomplishments I have  
 ‘ given her: And yet the poor Girl, I see that,  
 ‘ added she, would not be backward to turn her  
 ‘ Hand to any thing, for the sake of an honest  
 ‘ Livelihood, were she put to it; which, if it  
 ‘ please God to spare me, and she continues good,  
 ‘ she never shall be.



‘ I WONDER not, *Pamela*, at your Tears  
 ‘ on this Occasion : Your Lady was an excellent  
 ‘ Woman, and deserv’d this Tribute to her Me-  
 ‘ mory. All my Pleasure now is, that she knew  
 ‘ not half my wicked Pranks, and that I did not  
 ‘ vex her worthy Heart in the Prosecution of  
 ‘ this Scheme; which would have given me a  
 ‘ severe Sting, inasmuch as I might have appre-  
 ‘ hended, with too much Reason, that I had  
 ‘ shortened her Days by the Knowledge of the  
 ‘ one and the other.

‘ I HAD thus in Readiness every thing neces-  
 ‘ sary for the Execution of my Project : But my  
 ‘ Mother’s ill State of Health gave me too much  
 ‘ Concern, to permit me to proceed. And,  
 ‘ now-and-then, as my frequent Attendance up-  
 ‘ on her in her Illness gave me an Opportunity of  
 ‘ observing more and more of the Girl, and her  
 ‘ affectionate Duty, and continual Tears, (find-  
 ‘ ing her frequently on her Knees praying for her  
 ‘ Mistress) I was moved to pity her : And often  
 ‘ did I, while those Scenes of my Mother’s Ill-  
 ‘ ness and Decline were before me, resolve to  
 ‘ conquer, if possible, my guilty Passion, as  
 ‘ those Scenes taught me, while their Impres-  
 ‘ sions held, justly to call it; and I was much  
 ‘ concerned I found it a more difficult Task than  
 ‘ I imagin’d : For, till now, I thought it princi-  
 ‘ pally owing to my usual enterprising Temper,  
 ‘ and a Love of Intrigue; and that I had nothing  
 ‘ to do but to resolve against it, and to subdue  
 ‘ it.

‘ BUT

‘ B U T I found I was greatly mistaken; for  
‘ I had insensibly brought myself to admire her in  
‘ every thing she said or did; and there was so  
‘ much Gracefulness, Humility, and Innocence  
‘ in her whole Behaviour; and I saw so many  
‘ melting Scenes between her Lady and her, that  
‘ I found I could not master my Esteem for her.

‘ M Y Mother’s Illness increasing beyond  
‘ Hopes of Recovery, and having settled all her  
‘ greater Affairs, she talked to me of her Ser-  
‘ vants: I asked her, What she would have done  
‘ for *Pamela* and Mrs. *Jervis*?

‘ M A K E Mrs. *Jervis*, my dear Son, said she,  
‘ as happy as you can: She is a Gentlewoman  
‘ born, you know; let her always be treated as  
‘ such: But, for your own sake, don’t make  
‘ her independent; for then you’ll want a faith-  
‘ ful Manager. Yet, if you marry, and your  
‘ Lady should not value her as she deserves,  
‘ allow her a Competency for the rest of her  
‘ Life, and let her live as she pleases.

‘ A s for my *Pamela*, I hope you will be her  
‘ Protector; I hope you will! — She is a good  
‘ Girl: I love her next to you, and your dear  
‘ Sister. She is just arrived at a trying Time of  
‘ Life. I don’t know what to say for her. What  
‘ I had design’d was, that if any Man of a genteel  
‘ Calling should offer, I would have given her  
‘ a little pretty Portion, had God spared my  
‘ Life till then. But if she should be made inde-  
‘ pendent, some idle Fellow perhaps might snap  
‘ her up; for she is very pretty: Or, if she should  
‘ carry what you give her to her poor Parents,

‘ as her Duty would lead her to do, they are so  
 ‘ unhappily involv’d, that a little Matter would  
 ‘ be nothing to them, and the poor Girl might  
 ‘ be to seek again. Perhaps Lady *Davers* will  
 ‘ take her. But I wish she was not so pretty.  
 ‘ She will be likely to be the Bird for which  
 ‘ some wicked Fowler will spread his *Snares*;  
 ‘ or, it may be, every Lady will not chuse to  
 ‘ have such a Waiting-maid. You are a young  
 ‘ Gentleman, and, I am sorry to say it, not bet-  
 ‘ ter than I wish you to be — Tho’ I hope my  
 ‘ *Pamela* would not be in Danger from her  
 ‘ Master, who owes to all his Servants Protection,  
 ‘ as much as a King does to his Subjects. Yet I  
 ‘ don’t know how to wish her to stay with you---  
 ‘ for your own Reputation’s sake, my dear Son;  
 ‘ for the World will censure as it lists. — Would  
 ‘ to God! said she, the dear Girl had the Small-  
 ‘ pox in a mortifying manner: She’d be lovely  
 ‘ enough in the Genteelness of her Person, and  
 ‘ the Excellencies of her Mind; and more out of  
 ‘ Danger of suffering from the transient Beauties  
 ‘ of Countenance! Yet I think, added she, she  
 ‘ might be safe and happy under Mrs. *Fervis*’s  
 ‘ Care; and if you marry, and your Lady parts  
 ‘ with Mrs. *Fervis*, let ’em go together, and  
 ‘ live as they like. — I think that will be the  
 ‘ best for both. — And you have a generous  
 ‘ Spirit enough: I will not direct you in the  
 ‘ *Quantum*. But, my dear Son, remember,  
 ‘ that I am the less concerned, that I have not  
 ‘ done for the poor Girl myself, because I de-  
 ‘ pend upon you: The Manner how fitly to pro-  
 ‘ vide



‘ vide for her, has made me defer it till now,  
‘ that I have so much more important Concerns  
‘ on my Hands; Life and Strength ebbing so fast,  
‘ that I am hardly fit for any thing, or to wish  
‘ for any thing, but to receive the last releasing  
‘ Stroke.’

HERE the dear Gentleman stopp’d, being  
under some Concern himself, and we in  
much more. At last he resum’d the Sub-  
ject:

‘ You will too naturally think, my Lord,  
‘ and you my good Ladies, that the Mind must  
‘ be truly diabolical, that could break thro’  
‘ the Regards due to the solemn Injunctions  
‘ and Recommendations of a dying Parent.  
‘ They did hold me a good while indeed; and  
‘ as fast as I found any Emotions of a contrary  
‘ Nature rise in my Breast, I endeavoured for  
‘ some time to suppress them, and to think  
‘ and act as I ought: But the dear bewitching  
‘ Girl every Day rose in her Charms upon me:  
‘ And, finding she still continued the Use of her  
‘ Pen and Ink, I could not help entertaining a  
‘ Jealousy, that she was writing to somebody  
‘ who stood well in her Opinion; and my Love  
‘ for her, and my own Spirit of Intrigue, made it  
‘ a Sweetheart of course. And I could not help  
‘ watching her Motions; and seeing her once  
‘ putting a Letter she had just folded up, into  
‘ her Bosom, at my Entrance into my Mother’s  
‘ Dressing-room, I made no doubt of detecting  
‘ her,

‘ her, and her Correspondent; and so I took the  
 ‘ Letter from her Stays, the trembling and courte-  
 ‘ sying \* with a sweet Confusion; and highly  
 ‘ pleased I was, to find it contained nothing but  
 ‘ Innocence and Duty to the deceased Mistress,  
 ‘ and the living Parents, expressing her Joy,  
 ‘ that in the midst of her Grief for losing the one,  
 ‘ she was not obliged to return to be a Burden  
 ‘ to the other: And I gave it her again, with  
 ‘ Words of Encouragement; and went down  
 ‘ much better satisfy’d, than I had been with her  
 ‘ Correspondents.

‘ BUT when I reflected upon the innocent  
 ‘ Simplicity of her Style, I was still more in  
 ‘ Love with her, and form’d a Stratagem, and  
 ‘ succeeded in it, to come at her other Letters†,  
 ‘ which I sent forward, after I had read them,  
 ‘ all but Three or Four, which I kept back,  
 ‘ when my Plot began to ripen for Execution;  
 ‘ altho’ the little Slut was most abominably free  
 ‘ with my Character to her Father and Mother.

‘ YOU will censure me, no doubt, that my  
 ‘ Mother’s Injunctions made not a more lasting  
 ‘ Impression upon me. But really I struggled  
 ‘ hard with myself to give them their due Force;  
 ‘ and the dear Girl, as I said, every Day grew  
 ‘ lovelier and more accomplish’d. Her Letters  
 ‘ were but so many Links to the Chains she had  
 ‘ bound me in; and tho’ once I had resolv’d  
 ‘ to part with her ‡ to Lady *Davers*, and you,

\* See Vol. I. p. 4. l. 3.

† Ibid. p. 131, 145.

‡ Ibid. p. 10.

‘ my Lady, had an Intention to take her, I could  
‘ not for my Life give her up; and thinking at  
‘ that time more honourably of the State of a  
‘ Mistress than I have done since, I could not  
‘ persuade myself, (since I intended to do as  
‘ handsomely by her, as ever Man did to a Lady  
‘ in that Situation) but that I should do better  
‘ for her than my Mother had wished me to do,  
‘ and so *more* than answer all her Injunctions,  
‘ as to the providing for her: And I could not  
‘ imagine I should have met with a Resistance  
‘ from her, that I had seldom encounter’d from  
‘ Persons much her Superiors as to Descent; and  
‘ was amaz’d at it; for it confounded me in all  
‘ the Notions I had of her Sex, which, like a  
‘ true Libertine, I supposed wanted nothing but  
‘ *Importunity* and *Opportunity*, a bold At-  
‘ tempter, and a Mind not ungenerous.

‘ SOMETIMES I admir’d her for her Virtue;  
‘ at other times, impetuous in my Temper, and  
‘ unus’d to Controul, I could have beat her.  
‘ She well, I remember, describes the Tumults  
‘ of my Soul, when she repeats what once  
‘ passed between us, in Words like these \* :  
“ Take the little Witch from me, Mrs. *Jervis*.---  
“ I can neither bear nor forbear her. — But  
“ stay — you shan’t go — Yet begone! —  
“ No, come back again.” — ‘ She thought I  
‘ was mad, I remember she says in her Papers.  
‘ Indeed I was little less.

\* See Vol. I. p. 86.



‘ SHE says, ’ “ I took her Arm, and grip’d it  
 “ black and blue, to bring her back again; and  
 “ then sat down and look’d at her as silly as  
 “ such a poor Girl as she!”

“ WELL did the dear Slut describe the Pas-  
 ‘ sion I struggled with; and no one can conceive  
 ‘ how much my Pride made me despise myself  
 ‘ at times, for the little Actions my Love for  
 ‘ her put me upon, and yet to find that Love in-  
 ‘ creasing every Day, as her Charms and Resist-  
 ‘ ance increased.

‘ I HAVE caught myself in a raging Fit, some-  
 ‘ times, vowing I would have her; and at others,  
 ‘ jealous, that, to secure herself from my At-  
 ‘ tempts, she would throw herself into the Arms  
 ‘ of some Menial or Inferior, whom otherwise  
 ‘ she would not have thought of.

‘ SOMETIMES I soothed her, sometimes  
 ‘ threatened her; but never was such Courage,  
 ‘ when she apprehended her Virtue was in Dan-  
 ‘ ger, mix’d with so much Humility, when her  
 ‘ Fears gave way to her Hopes of a juster Treat-  
 ‘ ment.

‘ THEN I would think it impossible, (so  
 ‘ slight an Opinion had I of Woman’s Virtue)  
 ‘ that such a Girl as this, Cottage-born, who  
 ‘ owed every thing to my Family, and had an  
 ‘ absolute Dependence upon my Pleasure; my-  
 ‘ self not despicable in Person or Mind, as I  
 ‘ supposed; she unprejudic’d in any Man’s Fa-  
 ‘ vour; at an Age susceptible of Impressions;  
 ‘ and a Frame and Constitution not Ice nor  
 ‘ Snow: Surely, thought I, all this Frost must  
 ‘ be

‘ be owing to the Want of Fire in my Attempts  
‘ to thaw it: I used to dare more, and succeed  
‘ better. Shall such a Girl as *this* awe me by  
‘ her rigid Virtue? No, she shall not.

‘ THEN I would resolve to be more in Ear-  
‘ nest. Yet my Love was a Traitor to me: That  
‘ was more faithful to *her* than to *me*; it had  
‘ more Honour in it at Bottom, than I had de-  
‘ signed it should have. Aw’d by her unaffected  
‘ Innocence, and a Virtue I had never before  
‘ encounter’d so uniform and immoveable, the  
‘ Moment I *saw* her, I was half disarmed; and  
‘ I courted her Consent to that, which tho’ I  
‘ was not likely to obtain, yet it went against  
‘ me to think of extorting by Violence. Yet  
‘ Marriage was never in my Thoughts; I scorn’d  
‘ so much as to promise it.

‘ WHAT numberless mean Things did not  
‘ this unmanly Passion subject me to? — I used  
‘ to watch for her Letters, tho’ mere Prattle-prat-  
‘ tle and Chit-chat; receiv’d them with burning  
‘ Impatience, and read them with Delight, tho’  
‘ myself was accused in them, and stigmatiz’d as  
‘ I deserv’d.

‘ I WOULD listen meanly at her Chamber-  
‘ door; try to overhear her little Conversations;  
‘ in vain attempted to suborn Mrs. *Jervis* to  
‘ my Purposes, inconsistently talking of Honour,  
‘ when no one Step I took, or Action I attempted,  
‘ shew’d any thing like it; lost my Dignity among  
‘ my Servants; made a Party in her Favour against  
‘ me, of every body, but whom my Money cor-  
‘ rupted, and that hardly sufficient to keep my  
‘ Parti-

‘ Partisans steady to my Interest; so greatly did  
 ‘ the Virtue of the Servants triumph over the  
 ‘ Vice of the Master, when confirmed by such  
 ‘ an Example!

‘ I HAVE been very tedious, Ladies, and my  
 ‘ Lord *Davers*, in my Narration: But I am  
 ‘ come within View of the Point for which I  
 ‘ now am upon my Trial at your dread Tribunal  
 ‘ (*bowing to us all*):

‘ AFTER several Endeavours of a smooth and  
 ‘ a rough Nature, in which my Devil constantly  
 ‘ fail’d me, and her good Angel prevail’d, I had  
 ‘ talk’d to Mrs. *Jervis* to induce the Girl (to  
 ‘ whom, in hopes of frightening her, I had given  
 ‘ Warning, but which she rejoiced to take, to  
 ‘ my great Disappointment) to desire to stay \*;  
 ‘ and suspecting Mrs. *Jervis* play’d me Booty,  
 ‘ and rather confirm’d her in her Coyness, and  
 ‘ her Desire of leaving me, I was mean enough  
 ‘ to conceal myself in the Closet in Mrs. *Jervis*’s  
 ‘ Room, in order to hear their private Con-  
 ‘ versation: But really not designing to make  
 ‘ any other Use of my Concealment, than to  
 ‘ teize her a little, if she should say any thing I  
 ‘ did not like; which would give me a Pretence  
 ‘ to treat her with greater Freedoms than I had  
 ‘ ever yet done, and would be an Introduction to  
 ‘ take off from her unprecedented Apprehensive-  
 ‘ ness another time: And I had the less Scruple  
 ‘ as to Mrs. *Jervis*’s Presence, because, I was  
 ‘ sensible, she knew as bad of me as she could

\* See Vol. I. p. 92.

‘ know,



‘ know, from *Pamela’s* Apprehensions, as  
‘ well as her own; and would find me, if I  
‘ kept within any decent Bounds, better than  
‘ either of them expected. But I had no Design  
‘ of proceeding to Extremities, altho’ I had little  
‘ Hope of making any Impression upon her by  
‘ Gentleness.

‘ So, like a benighted Traveller, who having  
‘ strayed out of his Knowledge, and, despairing  
‘ to find his Way, throws the Reins upon his  
‘ Horse’s Neck, to be guided at its uncertain  
‘ Direction, I resolv’d to take my Chance for  
‘ the Issue which the Adventure should produce.

‘ But the dear Prattler, not knowing I was  
‘ there, as she undress’d herself, began such a  
‘ bewitching Chit-chat with Mrs. *Jervis*, who,  
‘ I found, but ill kept my Secret, that I never  
‘ was at such a Loss in my Life what to resolve  
‘ upon. One while I wish’d myself, unknown  
‘ to them, out of the Closet into which my in-  
‘ considerate Passion had meanly led me; another  
‘ time I was incens’d at the Freedom with which  
‘ I heard myself treated: But then, rightly con-  
‘ sidering, that I had no Business to hearken to  
‘ their private Conversation, and that it was such  
‘ as became *them*, while I ought to have been  
‘ ashamed to give Occasion for it, I excus’d them  
‘ both, and admir’d still more and more the  
‘ dear Prattler.

‘ In this Suspense, the undesigned Rustling  
‘ of my Night-gown, from changing my Posture  
‘ as I stood, giving Alarm to the watchful *Pa-*  
‘ *mela*, she in a Fright came towards the Closet

‘ to see who was there, so that I could be no longer conceal’d.

‘ WHAT could I then do, but bolt out upon the apprehensive Charmer? and having so done, and she running to the Bed, screaming to Mrs. *Jervis*, would not any Man have follow’d her thither, detected as I was? But yet I said, If she forbore her Screaming, I would do her no Harm; but if not, she should take the Consequence.

‘ I FOUND by their Exclamations, that this would pass with both for an Attempt of the worst Kind; but really I had no such Intentions as they feared. — When, indeed, I found myself detected; when the dear frighten’d Girl ran to the Bed; when Mrs. *Jervis* threw herself about her; when they would not give over their hideous Squallings; when I was charg’d by Mrs. *Jervis* with the worst Designs; it was enough to make me go farther than I design’d; and could I have prevailed upon Mrs. *Jervis* to go up and quiet the Maids, who were rising, as I heard by the Noise they made over-head, upon the others’ Screamings, I believe, had *Pamela* kept out of her Fit, I should have been a little freer with her, than ever I had been: But as it was, I had no Thought but of making as honourable a Retreat as I could, and to save myself from being expos’d to my whole Family; and I was not guilty of any Freedoms, that her Modesty, unaffrighted, could reproach itself with having suffered;

suffered; and the dear Creature's fainting Fits gave *me* almost as great Apprehensions as I could give *her*.

Thus, Ladies, and my Lord, have I tediously, and little enough to my own Reputation, given you a Character of myself, and told you more against myself, than any *one* Person could accuse me of. Whatever redounds to the Credit of my *Pamela*, redounds in Part to my own; and so I have the less Regret to accuse myself, since it exalts her. But as to a form'd Intention to hide myself in the Closet, in order to attempt the Girl by Violence, and in the Presence of a good Woman, as Mrs. *Fervis* is, which you impute to me, indeed, bad as I was, I was not so vile, so abandon'd as that.

Love, as I said before, subjects its inconsiderate Votaries to innumerable Meannesses; and unlawful Passion to many more. I could not live without this dear Girl. I hated the Thoughts of Matrimony with any body; and to be brought to the Stake by my Mother's Waiting-maid, forbid it, Pride! thought I; forbid it, Example! forbid it, all my past Sneers, and constant Ridicule, both on the Estate, and on those who descended to Inequalities in it! and, lastly, forbid it, my Family Spirit, so visible in Lady *Davers*, as well as in myself; to whose Insults, and those of all the World, I shall be obnoxious, if I make such a Step!



‘ ALL this tends to demonstrate the Strength  
 ‘ of my Passion: I could not conquer my Love;  
 ‘ so I conquer’d a Pride, which every one thought  
 ‘ unconquerable; and since I could not make an  
 ‘ innocent Heart vicious, I had the Happiness to  
 ‘ follow so good an Example; and by this means,  
 ‘ a vicious Heart is become virtuous; and I have  
 ‘ the Pleasure of rejoicing in the Change, and  
 ‘ hope I shall still more and more rejoice in  
 ‘ it; for I really look back with Contempt upon  
 ‘ my past Follies; and it is now a greater Won-  
 ‘ der to me, how I could act as I did, than that  
 ‘ I should detest those Actions, which made me  
 ‘ a Curse, instead of a Benefit, to Society. In-  
 ‘ deed I am not, yet, so pious as my *Pamela*:  
 ‘ but that is to come; and it is one good Sign,  
 ‘ that I can truly say, I delight in every Instance  
 ‘ of her Piety and Virtue: And now I will con-  
 ‘ clude my tedious Narration with the Poet;

*Our Passions gone, and Reason in her Throne,  
 Amaz’d, we see the Mischiefs we have done:  
 After a Tempest, when the Winds are laid,  
 The calm Sea wonders at the Wrecks it made,*

THUS ended my dear Mr. B. his affecting  
 Relation; which in the Course of it gave me a  
 thousand different Emotions; and made me often  
 pray for him, (as I constantly do) that God will  
 intirely convert a Heart so generous and worthy  
 as his is, on most Occasions. And if I can but  
 find him not deviate, when we go to *London*, I  
 shall

shall have great Hopes, that nothing will affect his Morals again.

I HAVE just read over again the foregoing Account of himself. As near as I remember, (and my Memory is the best Faculty I have) it is pretty exact; only he was fuller of beautiful Similitudes, and spoke in a more flowery Style, as I may say. Yet, don't you think, Miss, (if I have not done Injustice to his Spirit) that the Beginning of it, especially, is in the saucy Air of a Man too much alive to such Notions? For so the Ladies observed in his Narration. — Is it very like the Style of a true Penitent? — But indeed he went on better, and concluded best of all.

BUT don't you observe what a dear good Lady I had? Blessings, a thousand Blessings, on her beloved Memory! Were I to live to see my Childrens Children, they should be all taught to lisp her Praises, before they could speak. *My* Gratitude should always be renew'd in *their* Mouths; and GOD, and my dear Father and Mother, my Lady, and my Master that was, my best Friend that is, but principally, as most due, the FIRST who inspired all the rest, should have their Morning, their Noon-tide, and their Evening Praises, as long as I lived!

I WILL only observe further, as to this my Third Conversation-piece, That my Lord *Davers* offer'd to extenuate some Parts of his dear Brother-in-law's Conduct, which he did not himself vindicate; and Mr. *B.* was pleased to observe, that my Lord was always very candid to him, and kind in his Allowances for the Sal-

lies of an ungovernable Youth. Upon which my Lady said, a little tartly, Yes, and for a very good Reason, I doubt not: For who cares to condemn himself?

NAY, said my Lord, pleasantly, don't put us upon a Foot neither: For what Sallies I made, before I knew your Ladyship, were but like those of a Fox, which now-and-then runs away with a straggling Pullet, when nobody sees him: Whereas those of my Brother were like the Invasions of a Lion, breaking into every Man's Fold, and driving the Shepherds, as well as the Sheep, before him. — Ay, said my Lady, but I can look around me, and have Reason perhaps to think the invading Lion has come off, little as he deserv'd it, better than the creeping Fox, who, with all his Cunning, sometimes suffers for his pilfering Theft.

O MISS, these Gentlemen are strange Creatures! — What can they think of themselves? for they say, There is not One virtuous Man in Five! — But I hope for our Sex's sake, as well as for the World's sake, ail is not true that evil Fame reports; for, you know, every Man-trespasser must *find* or *make* a Woman-trespasser! — And if so, what a World is this! — And how must the Innocent suffer from the Guilty! — Yet, how much better is it to suffer one's self, than to be the Cause of another's Suffering?

I LONG to hear of you: And must shorten my future Accounts, or I shall do nothing but write, and tire *you* into the Bargain, tho' I cannot



not my dear Father and Mother. I am, my  
 dear Miss,

*Always Yours,*

P. B.

## LETTER XXXI.

*From Miss DARNFORD to Mrs. B.*

*My dear Mrs. B.*

EVERY Post you more and more oblige us to  
 admire and love you: And, let me tell you,  
 I will gladly receive your Letters upon your own  
 Terms\*: Only when your worthy Parents have  
 perused them, see that I have every Line of  
 them again.

YOUR Account of the Arrival of your noble  
 Guests, and their Behaviour to you, and yours  
 to them; your Conversation, and wise Deter-  
 mination, on the offer'd Title of Baronet; the  
 just Applauses conferr'd upon you by all, parti-  
 cularly the good Countess; your Breakfast Con-  
 versation, and the Narrative of your saucy abo-  
 minable *Master*, tho' amiable *Husband*; all  
 delight us beyond Expression.

Do, go on, dear excellent Lady, with your  
 charming Journals, and let us know all that  
 passes.

As to the State of Matters with us, I have  
 desired my Papa to allow me to decline Mr. *Mur-*

\* See p. 200.

ray's Addressees. The good Man lov'd me most violently, nay, he could not live without me; Life was no Life, unless I favour'd him: But yet, after a few more of these Flights, he is trying to sit down satisfy'd without my Papa's foolish perverse Girl, as Sir *Simon* calls me, and to transpose his Affections to a worthier Object, my Sister *Nancy*; and it would make you smile to see how, a little while before he *directly* apply'd to her, she screw'd up her Mouth to my Mamma, and, Truly, she'd have none of *Polly's* Leavings; no, not she! — But no sooner did he declare himself in Form, than the *gaudy Wretch*, as he was before with her, became a *well-dress'd* Gentleman; — the *chattering Magpye*, (for he talks and laughs much) *quite conversible*, — and has something *agreeable* to say, upon *every Subject*. Once, He would make a good Master of the Buck-hounds; but now, Really, the *more* one is in his Company, the *more polite* one finds him.

THEN, on his Part, — Indeed, he happened to see Miss *Polly* first; and, Truly he could have thought himself very happy in so agreeable a young Lady: Yet there was always something of Majesty (what a stately Name is that for Ill-Nature!) in Miss *Nanny*; something so awful, that while Miss *Polly* engaged the Affections at first Sight, Miss *Nanny* struck a Man with Reverence; insomuch that the one might be loved as a Woman, but the other revered as something more: A Goddess, no doubt!

I DO

I do but think, that when he comes to be lifted up to her Celestial Sphere, as her Fellow Constellation, what a Figure *Nancy* and her *Ursus Major* will make together; and how will they glitter and shine to the Wonder of all Beholders!

THEN she must make a brighter Appearance by far, and a more pleasing one too; for why? She has 3000 *Satellites*, or little Stars, in her Train more than poor *Polly* can pretend to. Won't there be fine Twinkling and Sparkling, think you, when the Greater and Lesser Bear-stars are joined together?

BUT excuse me, dear Mrs. *B.* this saucy Girl has vex'd me just now, by her ill-natur'd Tricks; and I am even with her, having thus vented my Spite, tho' she knows nothing of the Matter.

So, fancy, my dear Friend, you see *Polly Darnford* abandon'd by her own Fault; her Papa angry at her; her Mamma pitying her, and calling her silly Girl; Mr. *Murray*, who is a rough Lover, growling over his Mistress, as a Dog over a Bone he fears to lose; Miss *Nancy*, putting on her prudish Pleasantry, and snarling out a kind Word, and breaking thro' her sullen Gloom, for a Smile now-and-then in Return; and I laughing at both in my Sleeve, and thinking, that in a while I shall get Leave to attend you in Town, and that will be better than Twenty humble Servants of Mr. *Murray's* Cast: Or, if I can't, that I shall have the Pleasure of your Correspondence here, and shall enjoy unrivalled the Favour of my dear Papa and Mamma,



264 PAMELA; or,

which this ill-temper'd Girl is always envying me.

FORGIVE all this Nonsense. I was willing to write something, tho' worse than nothing, to shew how desirous I would be to oblige you, had I Capacity or Subject, as you have. But nobody can love you better, or admire you more; of this you may be assured, (however unequal in all other respects) than

Your POLLY DARNFORD.

I send you up some of your Papers for the good Couple in *Kent*. Pray, my Respects to them; and beg they'll let me have 'em again as soon as they can, by your Conveyance.

Our *Stamford* Friends desire their kindest Respects: They mention you with Delight in every Letter.

---

LETTER XXXII.

*The JOURNAL continued.*

Thursday, Friday Evening.

*My dearest Miss* DARNFORD,

I AM retired from a very busy Day, having had no less than Fourteen of our Neighbours, Gentlemen and Ladies, to Dinner with us: The Occasion, principally, to welcome our noble Guests into these Parts; Mr. *B.* having, as I mentioned

mentioned in a former, turn'd the intended Visit into an Entertainment, after his usual generous Manner.

MR. *B.* and Lord *Davers* are gone Part of the Way with them home; and Mr. *H.* or Lord *Jackey*, (as we call the Gentleman, who will always be young) mounted, with his Favourite *Colbrand*, as an Escorte to the Countess and Lady *Davers*, who are gone to take an Airing in the Chariot. They offer'd to take the Coach, if I would have gone; but being fatigu'd, I desir'd to be excus'd. So I retir'd to my Closet, and Miss *Darnford*, who is seldom out of my Thoughts, coming into my Mind, I had a new Recruit of Spirits, which enabled me to resume my Pen, and thus I proceed with my Journal:

OUR Company was, \* the Earl and Countess of *D.* who are so fashionable a marry'd Couple, that the Earl made it his Boast, and his Countess bore it like one accustomed to such Treatment, that he had not been in his Lady's Company an Hour abroad before for Seven Years. You know his Lordship's Character: Every body does; and there is not a worse, as Report says, in the Peerage.

SIR *Thomas Atkyns*, a single Gentleman, not a little finical and ceremonious, and a mighty Beau, tho' of the tawdry Sort, and affecting foreign Airs, as if he was afraid it would not be judg'd by any other Mark, that he had travell'd.

\* For the Characters of most of these Gentlemen and Ladies, see Vol. I. p. 72 to 76; and Vol. II. p. 395 to 400, and 421 to 427.

MR. *Arthur*, and his Lady, a moderately happy Couple, who seem always, when together, to behave as if they were upon a Compromise; that is, that each would take it in Turn to say free Things of the other — tho' some of their Freedoms are of so cutting a Nature, that it looks as if they intended to divert the Company at their own Expence. The Lady, being of a noble Family, takes great Pains to let every one know, that she values herself not a little upon that Advantage: But otherwise has many good Qualities.

MR. *Brooks*, and his Lady. The Gentleman is a free Joker on serious Subjects, but a good-natur'd Man, and says sprightly Things with no ill Grace. The Lady is a little reserved, and of a haughty Turn, tho' To-day she happened to be freer than usual; as was observed at Table by

LADY *Towers*, who is a Maiden Lady of Family, noted for her Wit and Repartee, and who says many good Things, with so little Doubt, and really so good a Grace, that one cannot help being pleas'd with her. This Lady is generally gallanted by

MR. *Martin* of the Grove, as he is called, to distinguish him from a rich Citizen of that Name, who is settled in these Parts; but being covetous and proud, is seldom admitted among the Gentry in their Visits or Parties of Pleasure. Mr. *Martin* is a shrewd Gentleman, but has been a little too much of the Libertine Cast, and has lived freely as to Women; and for that Reason



son has not been receiv'd by Mrs. *Towers*, who hates free Actions, tho' she'll use free Words, modestly free, as she calls them; that is to say, the Double Entendre, in which Sir *Simon Darnford*, a Gentleman you are not unacquainted with, takes great Delight; tho', by the way, what that worthy Gentleman calls innocent, Lady *Towers* would blush at.

MR. *Dormer*, a Gentleman of a very courteous Demeanour, a Widower, was another, who always speaks well of his deceased Lady, and of all the Sex for her sake.

MR. *Chapman*, and his Lady, a well-behav'd Couple, who are not ashamed to be very tender and observing to one another, but without that censurable Fondness which sits so ill upon some married Folks in Company.

THEN there was the *Dean*, our good Minister, whom I name last, because I would close with one of the worthiest; and his *Daughter*, who came to supply her Mamma's Place, who was indispos'd; a well-behav'd prudent young Lady. And here were our Fourteen Guests.

THE Countess of C. Lady *Davers*, Lord *Davers*, Mr. H. my dear Mr. B. and your humble Servant, made up the rest of the Company. So we had a capacious and brilliant Circle, you may imagine; and all the Avenues to the House were crouded with their Equipages.

THE Subjects of Discourse at Dinner were various, as you may well suppose, and the Circle was too large to fall upon any regular or very remarkable Topicks. A good deal of sprightly Wit,

Wit, however, flew about, between the Earl of *D.* Mrs. *Towers* and Mr. *Martin*, in which that Lord suffered as he deserved; for he was by no means a Match for the Lady, especially as the Presence of the Dean was a very visible Restraint upon him, and upon Mr. *Brooks* too: So much Awe will the Character of a good Clergyman always have upon even forward Spirits, where he is known to have had an inviolable Regard to it himself.

BESIDES, the good Gentleman has naturally a genteel and inoffensive Vein of Raillery, and so was too hard for them at their own Weapons.

BUT after Dinner was over, and the Servants were withdrawn, Mr. *Martin* singled me out, as he loves to do, for a Subject of Encomium, and made some high Compliments to my dear Mr. *B.* upon his Choice; and wished (as he often does) he could find just such another Person for himself.

LADY *Towers* told him, That it was a Thing as unaccountable, as it was unreasonable, that every Rake, who loved to destroy Virtue, should expect to be rewarded with it: And if his *Brother B.* had come off so well, she thought no one else ought to expect it.

LADY *Davers* said, It was a very just Observation; and she thought 'twas pity there was not a Law, that every Man who made a Harlot of an honest Woman, should be obliged to marry one of another's making.

THAT would be too severe, Mr. *B.* said; it would be Punishment enough, if he was to marry

marry his own; and especially if he had not seduced her under Promise of Marriage.

T H E N you'd have a Man be obliged to stand to his Promise, I suppose, Mr. *B.* reply'd Lady *Davers*?

Y E S, Madam.

B U T, said she, the Proof would be difficult perhaps; and the most unguilty Heart of our Sex, might be least able to make it out. But what say you, my Lord *D.* continued her Ladyship, will you, and my Lord *Davers*, join to bring a Bill into the House of Peers, for the Purposes I mentioned? I fancy my Brother would give it all the Assistance he could in the Lower House.

Y O U R Ladyship, said Mr. *Martin*, is highly unreasonable, I think, to propose that: It would be enough, surely, that a Man should be obliged, as Mr. *B.* says, to marry the Woman he himself seduced.

T H E Earl said, That he thought neither the one nor the other should be imposed upon any Man; for that when Womens Virtue was their Glory, and they were brought up with that Notion, and to avoid the Snares of Men, he thought, if they yielded, they ought to pay the Forfeit, and take the Disgrace of it to themselves.

M A Y I ask your Lordship, said I, How it comes to pass, that a Woman's Virtue is her Glory, and that a Man's shall not be his? — Or, in other Words, Why you think Virtue in a Man is not as requisite as in a Woman?

C U S T O M,



CUSTOM, Madam, reply'd the Earl, has made it very different; and those Things which are scandalous in a Lady, are not so in a Gentleman.

WILL your Lordship argue, that it should be so, because it is so? Does not the Gentleman call himself the Head of his Family? Is it not incumbent upon him, then, to set a good Example? And will he plead it as a Fashion, that he may do by the dearest Relatives of another Man's Family, what, if any one should attempt to do by his, he would mortally resent?

VERY well observed, Madam, said the Dean: There is not a Free-liver in the World, I believe, who can answer that Argument.

MR. B. said the Earl, pray speak to your Lady: She is too close upon *us*. And where Sentiments have been so well supported by a Conduct so uniform and exemplary, I chuse not to enter the Lists with such an Antagonist.

WELL, well, said Mr. B. since your Lordship will speak in the Plural Number *US*, let me say, We must not pretend to hold an Argument on this Subject. — But, however, I think, my Lord, you should not call upon a Man to defend it, who, bad as he has been, never committed a Fault of this Nature, that he was not sorry for, tho' the Sorrow generally lasted too little a while.

MR. B. (said Lady *Towers*) has some Merit with me for that Answer: And he has still a greater on another Account; and that is, that he

he has seen his Error so early, and has left his Vices before they have left him.

SHE looked, as every one did, on the Earl, who appeared a little disconcerted, as one conscious, that he deserved the Reflection. And the Dean said, Lady *Towers* observes very well: For, altho' I presume not to make personal Applications, yet I must say, That the Gentleman who sees his Error in the Prime of Life, before he is overtaken by some awakening Misfortune, may be called one of the happiest of those who have erred.

AY, Mr. Dean, said Lady *Towers*, I can tell you one thing, that such another Buttress, as you know who, taken away from Libertinism, and such another Example as a certain Lady every Day gives, would go near in a few Years to ruin the Devil's Kingdom in *Bedfordshire*.

THE Gentlemen looked round upon one another upon this home Push: And the Lady would not let them recover it. See, said she, how the Gentlemen look upon one another, as who should say, each to his Companion, I'm not so bad as you!

AY, said Lady *Davers*, I see, my Lord *Davers*, and the Earl of *D.* and Mr. *Martin*, look most concerned.

FAITH, Ladies, said Mr. *Martin*, this is too severely personal: A Man who contends with a Lady, has a fine Time of it; for we are under Restraint, while you say any thing you please. But let me tell you, there's not a Man of us all, 'tis my Opinion, that could have attempted  
what

what a certain Renegado has attempted, tho' he is so readily acquitted.

NOR so hasty, my good Friend, said Mr. *B.* You don't consider well what you say, nor of whom: For did *I* take upon myself to censure *you*? But tho' I may challenge you to say the worst you can, because I always dealt upon my own Stock, while other People I could name enter'd into a Society and clubb'd for Mischief; yet I see you deal with a Brother Rake, when he reforms, as Highwaymen with one of their Gang, who would fain withdraw and be honest, but is kept among them by Fear of an Impeachment.

BUT is not this, Ladies, said Mrs. *Arthur*, a sad thing, that so many fine Gentlemen as think themselves concern'd in this Charge, should have no way to clear themselves but by Recrimination?

EGAD, Gentlemen, said Sir *Thomas Atkins*, I know not what you're about! You make but sorry Figures, by my Faith! — I have heard of many *queer* Pranks among my *Bedfordshire* Neighbours; but I bless my Stars, I was in *France* and *Italy* all the Time.

SAID Mr. *Martin*, Mrs. *Arthur* spoke the Words *fine Gentlemen*, and Sir *Thomas* thought himself obliged to enter upon his own Defence.

AY, said the Earl, and the best of it is, Sir *Thomas* pleads not his *Virtue* neither, that he did not join in these *queer* Pranks with his *Bedfordshire* Neighbours, but his *Absence*.

GAD



GAD take me, return'd he, taking a Pinch of Snuff with an Air, you're plaguy sharp, Gentlemen: I believe in my Conscience, you're in a Confederacy, as Mr. *B.* says, and would swear an honest Man into the Plot, that would not care for such Company. What say you, Mr. *H.*? Which Side are you of?

EVERY Gentleman, reply'd he, who is not of the Lady's Side, is deem'd a Criminal; and I was always of the Side that had the Power of the Gallows.

THAT shews, return'd Lady *Towers*, that Mr. *H.* is more afraid of the *Punishment*, than of *deserving* it.

'TIS well, said Mr. *B.* that any Consideration deters a Gentleman at Mr. *H.*'s Time of Life. What may be *Fear* now, may improve to *Virtue* in Time.

AY, said Lady *Davers*, *Jackey* is one of his Uncle's *Foxes*: He'd be glad to snap up a straggling Pullet, if he was not well look'd after, perhaps.

PRAY, my Dear, said Lord *Davers*, forbear: You ought not to introduce Two different Conversations into different Companies.

I THINK, truly, said Mr. *B.* you should take the Dean's Hint, my good Friends; else you'll be less *polite* than *personal*.

WELL, but Gentlemen, said Lady *Arthur*, since you seem to have been so hard put to it, as *single* Gentlemen, What's to be done with the marry'd Man, who ruins an innocent Body? What Punishment, Mrs. *Towers*, shall we find

out for such an one? And what Reparation to the Injured? This, it seems, was said with a particular View to the Earl, on a late scandalous Occasion: But I knew it not till afterwards.

As to the Punishment of the Gentleman, reply'd Mrs. *Towers*, where the Law has not provided for it, it must be left, I believe, to his Conscience. It will then one Day be heavy enough. But as to the Reparation to the Woman, so far as it can be made, it will be determinable as the unhappy Person *may* or *may not* know, that her Seducer is a marry'd Man: If she knows he is, I think *she* neither deserves Redress nor Pity, tho' it alleviates not *his* Guilt. But if the Case be otherwise, and *she* had no Means of informing herself that he was marry'd, and he promised to make her his Wife, to be sure, tho' *she* cannot be acquitted, *he* deserves the severest Punishment that can be inflicted. What say you, Mrs. *B.*?

If I must speak my Mind, reply'd I, I think, that since Custom, as the Earl said just now, exacts so little Regard to Virtue from Men, and so much from Women, and since the Designs of the former upon the latter are so flagrantly avow'd and known, the poor Creature, who suffers herself to be seduced, either by a *single* or *marry'd* Man, *with* Promises, or *without*, has nothing to do, but to sequester herself from the World, and devote the Remainder of her Days to Penitence and Obscurity. As to the Gentleman, added I, he must, I doubt, be left to his Conscience, as you say, Mrs. *Towers*, which

which he will one Day have enough to do to pacify.

EVERY young Lady has not your angelick Perfection, Madam, said Mr. *Dormer*. And there are Cases, in which the Fair Sex deserve Compassion, ours Execration. Love may insensibly steal upon a soft Heart: When once admitted, the Oaths, Vows, and Protestations of the favour'd Object, who perhaps, on all Occasions, declaims against the Deceivers of his Sex, confirm her good Opinion of him; till, having lull'd asleep her Vigilance, in an unguarded Hour he takes Advantage of her unsuspecting Innocence. Is not such a poor Creature to be pity'd? And what Punishment does not such a Seducer deserve?

YOU have put, Sir, said I, a moving Case, and in a generous manner. What, indeed, does not such a Deceiver deserve?

AND the more, said Mrs. *Chapman*, as the most innocent Heart is generally the most credulous.

VERY true, said my Countess; for such a one as would do no Harm *to* others, seldom suspects any *from* others: And her Lot is very unequally cast; admir'd for that very Innocence, which tempts some brutal Ravager to ruin it.

YET, What is that Virtue, said the Dean, which cannot stand the Test?

BUT, said Mrs. *Towers*, very satirically, Whither, Ladies, are we got? We are upon the Subject of Virtue and Honour. Let us talk of something, in which the *Gentlemen* can join with us.



This is such a one, you see, that none but the Dean and Mr. *Dormer* can discourse upon.

LET us then, retorted Mr. *Martin*, to be even with *one* Lady at least, find a Subject that will be *new* to her. And that is CHARITY.

DOES what I said concern Mr. *Martin* more than any other Gentleman, returned Mrs. *Towers*, that he is disposed to take Offence at it ?

YOU must pardon me, Mrs. *Towers*, said Mr. *B.* but I think a Lady should never make a Motion to wave such Subjects as those of Virtue and Honour; and less still, in Company, where there is so much Occasion, as she seems to think, for inforcing them.

I DESIRE not to wave the Subject, I'll assure you, reply'd she. And if, Sir, you think it may do good, we will continue it, for the sakes of all *you*, Gentlemen, (looking round her archly) who are of Opinion, you may be benefited by it.

WE are going into Personals again, Gentlemen and Ladies, said the Earl.

AND that won't bear, my Lord, you seem to think, retorted Lady *Davers*.

A HEALTH to the King and Royal Family brought on Publick Affairs, and Politicks; and the Ladies withdrawing to Coffee and Tea, I have no more to say as to this Conversation, having repeated all that I remember was said to any Purpose; for such large Companies, you know, Miss, don't always produce the most agreeable and edifying Talk. But this I was the more willing to recite, because I thought the Characters of some of our Neighbours would  
be

be thereby made more familiar to you, if ever I should have the Happiness to see you in these Parts.

I WILL only add, that Miss *L.* the Dean's Daughter, is a very modest and agreeable young Lady, and a perfect Mistress of Musick; in which the Dean takes great Delight also, and is a fine Judge of it. The Gentlemen coming in, to partake of our Coffee and Conversation, as they said, obtain'd of Miss to play several Tunes on the Harpsichord; and would have me play too. But really, Miss *L.* so very much surpass'd me, that had I regarded my Reputation for playing above the Desire I had (as I said, and truly said) to satisfy the good Company, I ought not to have pretended to touch a Key after such a Mistress of it. Miss has no Voice, which is great Pity; and, at the Request of every one, I sung to her *Accompaniment*, twice or thrice; as did Mrs. *Towers*, whose Voice exceeds her Taste. But here, Miss, will I end my Fourth Conversation-Piece.

---

SATURDAY *Morning.*

THE Countess being a little indispos'd, Lady *Davers* and I took an Airing this Morning in the Chariot, and had a great deal of Discourse together. Her Ladyship was pleas'd to express great Favour and Tenderness towards me; gave me a great deal of good Advice, as to the Care she would have me take of myself; and told me,

That her Hopes, as well as her Brother's, all centred in my Welfare; and that the Way I was in, made her love me better and better.

SHE was pleased to tell me, how much she approv'd of the domestick Management; and to say, That she never saw such Regularity and Method in any Family in her Life, where was the like Number of Servants: Every one, she said, knew their Duty, and did it without speaking to, in such Silence, and with so much apparent Chearfulness and Delight, without the least Hurry or Confusion, that it was her Surprize and Admiration. But kindly would have it, that I took too much Care upon me: Yet, said she, I don't see, but you are always fresh and lively, and never seem tir'd or fatigu'd; and are always dress'd and easy, so that no Company find you unprepar'd, or unfit to receive them, come when they will, whether it be to Breakfast or Dinner.

I TOLD her Ladyship, I owed all this, and most of the Conduct for which she was pleased to praise me, to her dear Brother, who, at the Beginning of my Happiness, gave me several Cautions \* and Instructions for my Behaviour; which had always been the Rule of my Conduct ever since, and I hoped ever would be: To say nothing, added I, which yet would be very unjust, of the Assistance I receive, from worthy Mrs. *Jervis*, who is an excellent Manager.

GOOD Creature, *sweet* Pamela, and *charming* Girl, were her common Words; and she

\* See Vol. II. p. 214, & seq.



was pleased to attribute to me a graceful and unaffected Ease, and would have it, that I have a natural Dignity in my Person and Behaviour, which command Love and Reverence at the same time: So that, my dear Miss, I am in Danger of being as proud as any thing. For you must believe, that her Ladyship's Approbation gives me great Pleasure; and the more, as I was afraid, before she came, I should not have come off near so well in her Opinion.

As the Chariot passed along, she took great Notice of the Respects paid me by People of different Ranks, and of the Blessings bestow'd upon me, by several, as we proceeded; and said, She should fare well, and be rich in good Wishes, for being in my Company.

THE good People, who know us, *will* do so, Madam, said I; but I had rather have their silent Prayers, than their audible ones; and I have caused some of them to be told so. But they say, They cannot help it: And one honest Man said, That every body's Hearts sprang to their Lips as soon as I appeared, and they could not keep their Words in.

WHAT I apprehend, Madam continued I, is, that you will be more uneasy To-morrow, when at Church you'll see a good many People in the same way. Indeed, added I, my Story, and your dear Brother's Tenderness to me, are so much talked of, that many Strangers are brought thither to see us. 'Tis the only thing, continued I, (and so it is, Miss) that makes me desirous to

go to *London*; for, by the Time we return, the Novelty, I hope, will cease.

THEN I mention'd some Verses of Mr. Cowley, which had been laid under my Cushion in our Seat at Church, Two *Sundays* ago, by some unknown Hand; and how uneasy they have made me. I will transcribe them, Miss, and give you the Particulars of our Conversation on that Occasion. The Verses are these:

*Thou robb'st my Days of Bus'ness and Delights,*

*Of Sleep thou robb'st my Nights.*

*Ab! lovely Thief! what wilt thou do?*

*What! rob me of Heav'n too!*

*Thou ev'n my Pray'rs dost steal from me,*

*And I with wild Idolatry,*

*Begin to God, and end them all to thee.*

*No, to what Purpose should I speak?*

*No, wretched Heart, swell till you break:*

*She cannot love me, if she would;*

*And, to say Truth, 'twere pity that she should.*

*No, to the Grave thy Sorrows bear,*

*As silent as they will be there:*

*Since that lov'd Hand this mortal Wound does give,*

*So handsomely the Thing contrive,*

*That she may guiltless of it live:*

*So perish, that her killing thee*

*May a Chance-medley, and no Murder be!*

I HAD them in my Pocket, and read them to my Lady; who ask'd me, If her Brother had

seen them? I told her, It was he that found them under the Cushion I used to sit upon; but did not shew them to me, till I came home; and that I was so vexed at them, that I could not go to Church in the Afternoon.

WHAT should you be vex'd at, my Dear? said she: How could you help it? — My Brother was not disturb'd at them, was he?

No, indeed, reply'd I: He chid *me* for being so; and was pleas'd to make me a fine Compliment upon it; that he did not wonder, that every body who saw me, lov'd me. — But I said, This was all that wicked Wit was good for, to inspire such Boldness in bad Hearts, which might otherwise not dare to set Pen to Paper to affront any one.

BUT pray, Madam, added I, don't own I have told you of them, lest the least Shadow of a Thought should arise, that I was prompted by some vile, secret Vanity, to tell your Ladyship of them: When, I am sure, they have vex'd me more than enough. For is it not a sad thing, that the Church should be profan'd by such Actions, and such Thoughts, as ought not to be brought into it?

THEN, Madam, to have any wicked Man *dare* to think of one with impure Notions, it gives me the less Opinion of myself, that I should be so much as *thought of* as the Object of any wicked Body's Wilhes. I have called myself to Account upon it, Whether any Levity in my Looks, my Dress, my Appearance, could embolden such an affrontive Insolence. And I have  
thought



thought upon this Occasion better of *Julius Cæsar's* Delicacy, than I did when I read of it; who, upon an Attempt made on his Wife, to which, however, it does not appear she gave the least Encouragement, said, to those who pleaded forher against the Divorce he was resolved upon, *That the Wife of Cæsar ought not to be suspected.*

INDEED, Madam, continued I, it would extremely shock me, but to know, that any wicked Heart had conceived a Design upon me; Upon *me*, give me Leave to repeat, whose only Glory and Merit is, that I have had the Grace to withstand the greatest of Trials and Temptations, from a Gentleman more worthy to be beloved both for Person and Mind, than any Man in *England*.

YOUR Observation, my Dear, is truly delicate, and such as becomes your Mind and Character. And I really think, if any Lady in the World is secure from vile Attempts, it must be you; not only from your Story, so well known, and the Love you bear to your Man, and his Merit to you, but from the Prudence, and natural *Dignity*, I will say, of your Behaviour; which, tho' easy and chearful, is what would strike dead the Hope of any presumptuous Libertine, the Moment he sees you.

How can I enough, return'd I, and kissed her Hand, acknowledge your Ladyship's polite Goodness in this Compliment! But, my Lady, you see, by the very Instance I have mention'd, that a Liberty *is* taken, which I cannot think of without Pain.

'TIS

'TIS such a Liberty, reply'd my Lady, as shews more Despair than Hope, and is a Confirmation of my Sentiments on the Prudence and Dignity which not only I, but every body attributes to you.

KIND, kind Lady *Davers!* said I, again pressing her Hand with my Lips. But I think I will turn my Quarrel, since I know not, and hope I never shall, the vile Transcriber, upon the Author of the Verses; for had they not been written, I should not have been thus insulted, perhaps.

COWLEY, reply'd my Lady, is my favourite Poet: He has a beautiful Imagination, a vast deal of brilliant Wit, and a Chastity too in most of his Pieces, that hardly any of the Tribe can boast.

I ONCE liked him better too, said I, than I have done since this; for he was one of the Poets that my Lady would permit me to read sometimes; and his Pieces in Praise of the Country Life, and those charming Lines against Ambition, used to delight me much:

*If e'er Ambition should my Fancy cheat  
With any Wish so mean as to be great,  
Continue, Heav'n, still from me to remove  
The humble Blessings of the Life I love.*

I HAVE taken Notice of these Lines often, said my Lady, and been pleased with them. But I think you have no Reason to be out of Conceit with Cowley, for the ill Use made of his Verses.

Verses. He but too naturally describes the Influence of Love, which frequently interferes with our best Duties. And there is something very natural, and easy, and witty, in the first Lines: And shews that the Poet *laments* the too engaging Impressions which Love made upon his Mind, even on the most solemn Occasions — *What! rob me of Heav'n too!* — A bad Heart, *Pamela*, could not have so lamented, or so written.

AH! but, Madam, return'd I, I have seen, in your dear Brother's Collection of Manuscripts, a Poem in which this very Point, nice as it is, is touch'd with much greater Propriety.

CAN you repeat it, my Dear?

THE Lines I *mean*, I can. Your Ladyship must know, It was upon a Quarrel between a beloved Couple, where the Gentleman had been wild, and the Lady's ill-natur'd Uncle, who wanted to break the Match, (altho' it was design'd by her deceased Parents) had fomented it, so that she would not look upon her Lover, nor see him, nor receive a Letter of Excuse from him, tho' they were betrothed, and she lov'd him dearly. This oblig'd him to throw himself in her Way at Church, and thus he writes:

*But, O! forgive me, Heav'n, if oft my Fair  
Robs thee of my Devoir, disturbs my Pray'r,  
Confounds my best Resolves, and makes me prove,  
That she's too much a Rival in thy Love!*

THESE now, Madam, continued I, are the Lines I admire:

*But*



*But better Thoughts my happier Hopes suggest,  
When once this stormy Doubt's expell'd my Breast;  
When once this agitated Flame shall turn  
To steadier Heat, and more intensely burn,  
My dear MARIA then, thought I, will join,  
And we, one Heart, one Soul, shall all be THINE!*

AY, *Pamela*, these are very pretty Lines. But you must not think ill of my Favourite *Cowley*, however; for I say, with a Gentleman, whose Judgment, and good Heart, have hardly any Equal, That tho' *Cowley* was going out of Fashion with some, yet he should always suspect the Head or the Heart of him or her, who could not taste, and delight in, his Beauties. The Words,

*She cannot love me, if she would,  
And, to say Truth, 'twere pity that she should;*

Shew the *Goodness* of the *Poet's Heart*; and even, that the Transcriber himself, be he who he will, had not the *worst*, that he could single out *these*; when, if he would be shining with borrow'd Rays, he might have chosen a much worse Poet to follow.

OH! Madam, reply'd I, say not one Word in behalf of the wicked Transcriber. For a Wretch to entertain the Shadow of a Wish for a marry'd Person, is a Degree of Impurity that ought not to be excus'd: But to commit such Thoughts to Writing, to put that Writing under the Seat of the marry'd Person at Church, where her Heart should

should be engag'd *wholly* in her first Duties; where, too, it might be more likely to be seen by the Pew-keepers than her, and so be spread over the whole Parish, to the Propagation of bad Ideas, whenever I appeared; and, moreover, might come to the Hands of one's Husband, who, from his own free Life formerly, and high Passions, as far as the Transcriber knew, might be uneasy at, and angry with, the innocent Occasion of the Insult — Besides the Apprehension it must give one, that the Man who could take this vile Step, might proceed to greater Lengths, which my busy Fears could improve to Duelling and Murder — Then the Concern it must fill me with, to the diverting of my Mind from my first Regards, when *any one* looked at me wistfully, that *he* might be the Transcriber, which must always give me Confusion of Thought — Dearest Madam, can one forbear being vex'd, when all these Imaginations dart in upon a Mind apprehensive as mine? — Indeed this Action has given me great Uneasiness at times ever since, and I cannot help it.

I AM pleas'd with your Delicacy, my Dear, as I said before. — You can never err, while thus watchful over your Conduct; — and I own you have the more Reason for it, as you have marry'd a mere *Julius Cæsar*, an open-ey'd Rake, that was her Word, who would on the least Surmises, tho' ever so causeless on your Part, have all his Passions up in Arms, in Apprehension of Liberties that might be offer'd like those he has not scrupled to take.

OH!

O BUT, Madam, said I, your dear Brother has given me great Satisfaction in one Point; for you must think, I should not love him as I ought, if I had not a Concern for his future Happiness, as well as for his present; and that is, he has assured me, that in all the Liberties he has taken, he never attempted a marry'd Lady, but always abhorred the Thought of so great an Evil.

'Tis pity, said her Ladyship, that a Man who could conquer his Passions *so far*, could not subdue them intirely. This shews it was in his own Power to do so; and increases his Crime: And what a Wretch is he, who scrupling, under Presence of Conscience or Honour, to attempt Ladies *within* the Pale, boggles not to ruin a poor Creature *without*; altho' he knows, - he thereby, most probably, for ever, deprives her of that Protection, by preventing her Marriage, which, even among such Rakes as himself, is deemed, he owns, inviolable, and so casts the poor Creature headlong into the Jaws of Perdition?

AH, Madam, reply'd I, this was the very Inference I made upon the Occasion.

AND what could he say?

HE said, My Inference was just; but call'd me *pretty Preacher*; — and once having caution'd me \* not to be over-serious with him, so as to cast a Gloom over our innocent Enjoyments, I never dare to urge Matters further, when he calls me by that Name.

\* See Vol. II. p. 151.

WELL,



WELL, said my Lady, thou'rt an admirable Girl! God's Goodness was great to our Family, when it gave thee to it.

No Wonder, continu'd her Ladyship, as my Brother says, every body that sees you, and has heard your Character, loves you: And this is some Excuse for the inconsiderate Folly even of this unknown Transcriber.

AH! Madam, reply'd I; but is it not a sad thing, that People, if they must take upon them to like one's Behaviour in general, should have the *worst* instead of the *best* Thoughts upon it? If I were as good as I *ought* to be, and as some *think* me, must they wish to make me bad for that Reason? and so to destroy the Cause of that Pleasure, which they pretend to take in seeing a body set a good Example? For what, my dear Lady, could a Wretch mean, even by the Words your Ladyship thinks most innocent,

*She cannot love me, if she would;  
And, to say Truth, — (as if this Truth were  
extorted rather by his Fears than his Wishes)  
— 'twere pity that she should.*

BUT why then, if this be the Case, and that he would bear his *Sorrows*, as the Poet calls them, to the Grave, should he not keep them to *himself*? make that very *Mind* their Grave, which gave them their *Birth*? If the bold Creature, whoever he be, had not thought this might be a Hint that might some-how be improved, and a vile Foundation for some viler Superstructure, would

would he have transcribed them, and caused them to be placed where they were found? — Then, in my humble Opinion, the Thought that is contained in these Lines,

*Since that lov'd Hand this mortal Wound does give,  
So handsomely the Thing contrive,  
That she may guiltless of it live :  
So perish, that her killing thee  
May a Chance-medley, and no Murder be ;*

Is rather a *Conceit*, or *Prettiness*, that won't bear Examination, than that true Wit in which this fine Poet excels: — For, if she cannot love him *if she would*, and if it were *pity*, that she *should* love him; this implies she was a Lady under previous Obligation, whether Marriage or Betrothment, is the same thing to him: Then, need the Thing to be so *handsomely contrived*, need any Pains be taken (if her Repulse *had killed*, as Poetical Licence makes him say, this Invader of another's Right) to bring it in *Chance-medley*; — since no Jury could have brought it in *Murder*, except that Sort of Murder which is called *Felo de se* (you know, my Lady, what a Scholar your Brother has made me)? So that I presume to think, the Poet himself is not so blameless in this, as he has taken care to be in most of his Pieces. And permit me to make one Observation, my good Lady, that if the chastest Writers (supposing *Cowley* meant ever so well) may have their Works and their Thoughts turn'd to be Panders and Promoters of the Wickedness

of coarse Minds, whose grosser Ideas could not be cloathed in a Dress fit to appear in decent Company, without *their* Assistance, how careful ought a good Author to be, whose Works are likely to live to the End of Time, how he propagates the worst of Mischiefs, to such a Duration, when he himself is dead and gone, and incapable of antidoting the Poison he has spread ?

HER Ladyship was pleased to kiss me, as we sat. My charming *Pamela*, my *more than Sister*, — (Did she say ? — Yes, she did say so ! and made my Eyes overflow with Joy to hear the sweet Epithet ! —) How your Conversation charms me ! — I charge you, when you get to Town, let me have your Remarks on the Diversions you will be carried to by my Brother. Now I know what to expect from *you*, and *you* know how acceptable every thing will be *to me* that comes from you, I promise great Pleasure as well to myself as to my worthy Friends, particularly to Lady *Betty*, in your unrestrained free Correspondence.

INDEED, *Pamela*, I must bring you acquainted with Lady *Betty* : She is one of the Worthies of our Sex, and has a fine Understanding. — I'm sure you'll like her. — But (for the World say it not to my Brother, nor let Lady *Betty* know I tell you so, if ever you should be acquainted---) I had carry'd the Matter so far by my officious Zeal to have my Brother marry'd to so fine a Lady, not doubting his joyful Approbation, that it was no small Disappointment to *her*, I can tell  
you,



you, when he marry'd you: And this is the best Excuse I can make for my furious Behaviour to you at the Hall. For tho' I am naturally very hasty and passionate, yet then I was almost mad. Indeed my Disappointment had given me so much Indignation both against you and him, that it is well I did not do some violent thing by you. \* I believe you *did* feel the Weight of my Hand: — But what was that! — 'Twas well I did not *kill you dead* — these were her Ladyship's Words — For how could I think the wild Libertine capable of being engag'd by such noble Motives, or Thee what thou art? — So this will account to thee a little for my Violence then.

YOUR Ladyship, said I, all these Things consider'd, had but too much Reason to be angry at your dear Brother's Proceedings, so well as you always lov'd him, so high a Concern as you always had to promote his Honour and Interest, and so far as you had gone with Lady *Betty*.

I TELL thee, *Pamela*, said she, that the old Story of *Eleanor* and *Rosamond* run in my Head all the Way of my Journey, and I almost wished for a Potion to force down thy Throat: And when I came, and found thy lewd Paramour absent, (for little did I think thou wast marry'd to him, tho' I expected thou wouldst endeavour to persuade me to believe it) apprehending that his Intrigue with thee would effectually frustrate my

\* Compare this Part of the Conversation with Lady Davers's Behaviour to Pamela, Vol. II. p. 238 to 267.

Hopes as to Lady *Betty* and him; Now, thought I, all happens as I wish!—Now will I confront this brazen Girl!—Now will I try her Innocence as I please, by offering to take her with me out of his Hands; if she refuses, take that Refusal for a Demonstration of her Guilt; and then, thought I, I will make the Creature provoke me, in the Presence of my Nephew and my Woman (and I hoped to have got that Woman *Jewkes* to testify for me too); and I cannot tell what I might have done, if thou hadst not got out of the Window as thou didst, especially after thou hadst told me, Thou wast as much marry'd as I was, and hadst shewn me his tender Letter to thee, which had a quite different Effect upon me than thou hadst hoped for. But if I had committed any Act of Violence, what Remorse should I have had, when I came to reflect, and had known what an Excellence I had injured! Thank God, thou didst escape me! thank God, thou didst! And then her Ladyship folded her Arms about me, and kissed me.

THIS was a sad Story, you'll say, my dear Miss: And I wonder what her Ladyship's Passion would have made her do! Surely she would not have *killed me dead* indeed! Surely she would not!—Let it not, however, Miss, nor you, my dear Father and Mother,—when you see it,—go out of your own Hands, nor be read, for my Lady's sake, to any body else—No, Miss, not to your own dear Mamma.—It made me tremble a little, even at this Distance, to think what a sad thing Passion is, when Way  
is

is given to its ungovernable Tumults, and how it deforms and debases the noblest Minds!

WE returned from this agreeable Airing but just Time enough to dress before Dinner; and then I attended my Lady, and we went together into the Countess's Apartment, where I received abundance of Compliments from both. As this brief Conversation will give you some Notion of that Management and Oeconomy for which they heaped upon me their kind Praises, I will recite to you what passed in it, and hope you will not think me too vain; and the less, because what I underwent formerly from my Lady's Indignation, half intitles me to be proud of her present Kindness and Favour.

LADY *Davers* said, Your Ladyship must excuse us, that we have lost so much of your Company; but here, this sweet Girl has entertained me in such a manner, that I could have staid out with her all Day; and several times did I bid the Coachman prolong his Circuit.

MY good Lady *Davers*, Madam, said I, has given me inexpressible Pleasure, and has been all Condescension and Favour, and made me as proud as proud can be.

YOU, my dear Mrs. *B.* said she, may have given great Pleasure to Lady *Davers*; for it cannot be otherwise. —But I have no great Notion of her Ladyship's Condescension, as you call it, (pardon me, Madam, said she to her, smiling) when she cannot raise her Style above the Word *Girl*, coming off from a Tour you have made so delightful to her.



I PROTEST to you, my Lady C. reply'd her Ladyship, with great Goodness, that that Word which once indeed I us'd thro' Pride, as you'll call it, I now use for a very different Reason. I begin to doubt, whether to call her Sister is not more Honour to myself than to her; and to this Hour am not quite convinc'd. When I am, I will call her so with Pleasure.

I WAS quite overcome with this fine Compliment, but could not answer a Word: And the Countess said, I could have spared you longer, had not the Time of Day compell'd your Return. For I have been very agreeably entertained, as well as you, altho' but with the Talk of your Woman and mine: For here they have been giving me such an Account of Mrs. B.'s Oeconomy, and Family Management, as has highly delighted me. I never knew the like; and in so young a Lady too. We shall have strange Reformatations to make in our Families, Lady *Davers*, when we go home, were we to follow so good an Example.

WHY, my dear Mrs. B. continued her Ladyship, you out-do all your Neighbours. And indeed I am glad I live so far from you: — For were I to try to imitate you, it would still be *but* Imitation, and you'd have the Honour of it.

YET you hear, and you see by Yesterday's Conversation, said Lady *Davers*, how much her best Neighbours of both Sexes admire her: They all yield to her the Palm, unenvying.

THEN, my good Ladies, said I, it is a Sign I have most excellent Neighbours, full of Generosity,

rosity, and willing to encourage a young Person in doing right things: So it makes, considering what I was, more for their Honour than my own. For what Censures should not such a one as I deserve, who have not been educated to fill up my Time like Ladies of Condition, were I not to employ myself as I do? I, who have so little other Merit, and who brought no Fortune at all?

COME, come, *Pamela*, none of your self-denying Ordinances — that was Lady *Davers's* Word — You must know something of your own Excellence: — If you do not, I'll tell it you, because there is no Fear you will be proud or vain upon it. I don't see then, that there is the Lady in your Neighbourhood, or *any* Neighbourhood, that behaves with more Decorum, or better keeps up the Port of a Lady, than you do. How you manage it, I can't tell; but you do as much by a Look, and a pleasant one too, that's the Rarity! as I do by high Words, and passionate Exclamations. I have often nothing but Blunder upon Blunder, as if the Wretches were in a Confederacy to try my Patience.

PERHAPS, Madam, said I, the Awe they have of your Ladyship, because of your high Qualities, makes them commit Blunders; for I myself have always been more afraid of appearing before your Ladyship, when you have visited your honoured Mother, than of any body else, and have been the more sensibly awkward thro' that very awful Respect.

PSHA, psha! *Pamela*, that is not it: 'Tis all in yourself. I us'd to think my Mamma, and my Brother too, had as aukward Servants as I ever saw any-where — except Mrs. *Jervis*. — Well enough for a Batchelor, indeed! — But, here! — thou hast not parted with one Servant — Hast thou?

No, my Lady.

How! said the Countess; what Excellence is here! All of them, pardon me, Mrs. *B.* your Fellow-servants, as one may say, and all of them so respectful, so watchful of your Eye; and you, at the same time, so gentle to them, so easy, so chearful!

DON'T you think me, Miss, insufferably vain? But 'tis what they were pleased to say. 'Twas their Goodness to me, and shew'd how much they can excel in generous Politeness. So I will proceed:

WHY this, continued the Countess, must be *born* Dignity, — *born* Discretion. — Education cannot give it: — If it could, why should not *we* have it?

THE Ladies said many more kind things of me then; and after Dinner they mentioned all over again, with Additions, before my best Friend, who was kindly delighted with the Encomiums given me by Two Ladies of such distinguishing Judgment in all other Cases. They told him, How much they admired my Family Management: Then would have it, that my Genius was universal, for the Employments and Accomplishments of my Sex, whether they con-  
sider'd



sider'd it, they were pleas'd to say, as employ'd in Penmanship, in Needle-work, in paying or receiving Visits, in Musick, and I can't tell how many other Qualifications, which their Goodness made them attribute to me, over and above the Family Management; saying, that I had an Understanding which comprehended every thing, and an Eye that penetrated into the very Bottom of Matters in a Moment, and was never at a Loss for the *Should be*, the *Why* or *Wherefore*, and the *How*; these were their comprehensive Words — That I did every thing with Celerity, clearing all as I went, and left nothing, that was their Observation, to recur or come over again, that could be dispatched at once: By which means, they said, every Hand was clear to undertake a new Work, as well as my own Head to direct it; and there was no Hurry nor Confusion; but every coming Hour was fresh and ready, and unincumber'd, (so they said) for its new Employment; and to this they attributed that Ease and Pleasure with which every thing was performed, and that I could *do*, and *cause* to be done, so much Business without Hurry either to myself or Servants.

THESE things, they would have it, they observed in part themselves, and in part were beholden for to the Observations of their Women, who looked, they said, so narrowly into every Part of the Management, as if they were Spies upon it; but were such faithful ones, that it was like a good Cause brought to a strict Scrutiny, the brighter and fairer for it.

THUS,

THUS, my dear Miss, did their Ladyships praise me for what I *ought* to be; and I will endeavour to improve more and more by their kind Admonitions, which come cloathed in the agreeable and flattering Shape of Praise; the noblest Incitement to the doing of one's Duty.

JUDGE you how pleasing this was to my best Beloved, who found, in their kind Approbation, such a Justification of his own Conduct, as could not fail of being pleasing to him, especially as Lady *Davers* was one of the kind Praisers.

LORD *Davers* was so highly delighted, that he rose once, begging his Brother's Excuse, to salute me; and remained standing over my Chair, with a Pleasure in his Looks that cannot be expressed, now-and-then lifting up his Hands, and his good-natur'd Eye glistening with Joy, which a Pier-glass gave me the Opportunity of seeing, as sometimes I stole a bashful Glance towards it, not knowing how or which way to look. Even Mr. *H.* seem'd to be touch'd very sensibly; and recollecting his Behaviour to me at the Hall, he once cry'd out, What a sad Whelp was *I*, to behave as I formerly did, to so much Excellence!--- Not, Mr. *B.* that I was any thing uncivil, neither; — but in unworthy Sneers and Non-sense. — You know me well enough. — P—x on me for a Jackanapes! — You call'd me \* *Tinsel'd Toy*, tho', Madam; don't you remember that? and said, *Twenty or Thirty Years hence, when I was at Age, you'd give me an Answer.*----

\* See Vol. II. p. 251.

Egad! I shall never forget your Looks, nor your Words neither! — They were d — n'd severe Speeches, were they not, Sir?

O YOU see, Mr. *H.* reply'd my dear Gentleman, *Pamela* is not quite perfect. — We must not provoke her; for she'll call us both so, perhaps; for I wear a lac'd Coat, sometimes, as well as you.

NAY, Faith, I can't be angry, said he. I deserv'd it richly, that I did, had it been worse.

THY silly Tongue, said my Lady, runs on without Fear or Wit. What's past is past.

WHY, i'faith, Madam, I was plaguily wrong; and I said nothing of any body but *myself*: — And have been ready to hang myself since, as often as I have thought of my Nonsense.

MY Nephew, said my Lord, must bring in Hanging, or the Gallows, in every Speech he makes, or it will not be he.

MR. *B.* smiling, said, with Severity enough in his Meaning, as I could see by the Turn of his Countenance, — Mr. *H.* knows, that his Birth and Family intitle him more to the Block, than the Rope, or he would not make so free with the latter.

GOOD! very good, by *Jupiter*! said Mr. *H.* laughing. The Countess smil'd. Lady *Davers* shook her Head at her Brother, and said to her Nephew, Thou'rt a good-natur'd foolish Fellow, that thou art.

FOR what, Madam? Why the Word, *foolish*, Aunt? What have I said now?

NOTHING



NOTHING to any Purpose, indeed! said she; when thou dost, I'll write it down.

THEN, Madam, said he, have your Pen and Ink always about you, when I'm present. — The Devil's in't, if you won't put that down, to begin with!

THIS made every one laugh. What a happy thing is it, thought I, that Good-nature generally accompanies this Character; else, my dear Miss, how would some People be supportable?

BUT here I'll break off. 'Tis Time, you'll say.-- But you know to whom I write, as well as to yourself, and they'll be pleas'd with all my silly Scribble. — So excuse one Part for that, and another for Friendship's sake, and then I shall be wholly excusable to you.

NOW the Trifler again resumes her Pen. I am in some Pain, Miss, for To-morrow, because of the Rules we observe of late in our Family on *Sundays*, and of going through a Croud to Church; which will afford new Scenes to our noble Visitors, either for Censure or otherwise: But I will sooner be censured for doing what I think my Duty, than for the Want of it; and so will omit nothing of that we have been accustom'd to do.

I HOPE I shall not be thought ridiculous, or as one who aims at Works of Supererogation, for what I think is very short of my Duty. — Some Order, surely, becomes the Heads of Families;

Families; and besides, it would be discrediting one's own Practice, if one did not appear at one Time what one does at another. For that which is a Reason for discontinuing a Practice, for some Company, would seem to be a Reason for laying it aside for ever, especially in a Family visiting and visited as ours.

AND I remember well a Hint given me by my dearest Friend once on another Subject \*, That it is in every one's Power to prescribe Rules to himself, after a while; and Persons see what is one's Way, and that one is not to be put out of it.

BUT my only Doubt is, that to Ladies, who have not been accustomed perhaps to the *necessary* Strictness, I should make myself censurable, as if I aimed at too much Perfection: For, however one's Duty is one's Duty, and ought not to be dispensed with; yet when a Person who uses to be remiss, sees so hard a Task before them, and so many great Points to get over, all to be no more than tolerably regular, it is rather apt to frighten and discourage, than to allure; and one must proceed, as I have read Soldiers do in a difficult Siege, Inch by Inch, and be more studious to intrench and fortify themselves as they go on gaining upon the Enemy, than by rushing all at once upon an Attack of the Place, be repulsed, and perhaps obliged with great Loss to abandon an hopeful Enterprize.

\* See Vol. II. p. 217.

AND permit me to add, that, young as I am, I have often observed, that over-great Strictnesses all at once injoin'd, and insisted upon, are not fit for a beginning Reformation, but for stronger Christians only; and therefore generally do more Harm than Good, in such a Circumstance.

WHAT a miserable Creature am I, said a neighbouring Widow Gentlewoman, (whom I visited in her Illness, at her own Desire, tho' a Stranger to me but by Name) if all the Good *you* do, and the strict Life *you* live, is no more than absolutely necessary to Salvation!

I SAW the poor Gentlewoman, thro' Illness and low Spirits, was ready to despond; and, to comfort her, I said, Dear Madam, don't be cast down: God Almighty gives us all a Light to walk by in these our dark Paths; and 'tis my humble Opinion, He will judge us according to the *unforced* and *unbyassed* Use we make of that Light. I think it my Duty to do several Things, which, perhaps, the Circumstances of others will not permit *them* to do, or which they, on serious and disinterested Reflection, may not think absolutely necessary to be done: In each Case our Judgments are a Law to each; and I ought no more to excuse myself from doing such Parts as I think my Duty, than you to condemn yourself for not doing what does not appear to you so strictly necessary: And besides, Madam, you may do as much Good one way, as I another, and so both may be equally useful in the general System of Providence.

BUT



BUT shall I not be too grave, my dear Miss?-- Excuse me; for this is *Saturday* Night; and as it was a very good Method which the ingenious Authors of the *Spectators* took, generally to treat their more serious Subjects on this Day; so I think one should, when one can, consider it as the preparative Eve to a still better.

---

## S U N D A Y.

NOW, my dear Miss, by what I have already written, it is become in a manner necessary to acquaint you briefly with the Method my dear Mr. *B.* not only permits, but encourages me to take, in the Family he leaves to my Care, as to the *Sunday* Duty.

THE worthy Dean, at my Request, and by my Beloved's Permission, recommended to me, as a sort of Family Chaplain, for *Sundays*, a young Gentleman of great Sobriety, and Piety, and sound Principles, who having but lately taken Orders, has no other Provision. And this Gentleman comes, and reads Prayers to us about Seven in the Morning, in the lesser Hall, as we call it, a retired Apartment, next the little Garden; for we have no little Chapel with us here, as in your Neighbourhood: And this generally, with some suitable Exhortation, or Meditation out of some good Book, which the young Gentleman is so kind as to let me chuse now-and-then, when I please, takes up little more than half an Hour.

WE

WE have a great Number of Servants of both Sexes; and myself, my good Mrs. *Jervis*, and my *Polly Barlow*, are generally in a little Closet, which, when we open the Door, is but just a Separation, and that's all, from the Hall.

MR. *Adams* (for that is our young Clergyman's Name) has a Desk, at which sometimes Mr. *Jonathan* makes up his running Accounts to Mr. *Longman*; who is very scrupulous of admitting any body to the Use of his Office, because of the Writings in his Custody, and the Order he values himself upon having every thing in.

ABOUT Seven in the Evening the young Gentleman comes again, and I generally, let me have what Company I will, find Time to retire for about another Half-hour, and my dear Mr. *B.* connives at, and excuses my Absence, if inquir'd after; tho', for so short a time, I am seldom miss'd.

To the young Gentleman I shall present, every Quarter, Five Guineas; and Mr. *B.* presses him to accept of a Place at his Table, at his Pleasure: But as we have generally a good deal of Company, his Modesty makes him decline it, especially at those times.

MR. *Longman* is so kind as to join with us very often in our *Sunday* Office, and Mr. *Colbrand* seldom misses; and they tell Mrs. *Jervis*, That they cannot express the Pleasure they have to meet me there; and the Edification they receive, as they are so kind to say, from my Example, and from the chearful Temper I am always in, which  
does

does 'em good to look upon me : And they will have it, that I do Credit to Religion. But if they do but think so, it must have been of Service to me, in the Order I have now established, as I hope; and that thro' less Difficulties than I expected to meet with, especially from the \* Cook-maid; but she says, She comes with double Delight to have the Opportunity to see her *blessed* Lady, as it seems she calls me at every Word.

My best Beloved dispenses, as much as he can, with the Servants, for the Evening Part, if he has Company, or will be attended only by *John* or *Abraham*, perhaps, by turns; and sometimes looks upon his Watch, and says, 'Tis near Seven. And if he says so, they take it for a Hint they may be dispensed with for half an Hour; and this Countenance which the dear Gentleman gives me, has not contributed a little to make the Matter easy and delightful to me, and to every one.

I AM sure, my dear Miss, were only Policy to be considered, this Method must be laudable; for since I have begun it, there is not a more diligent, a more sober, nor more courteous Set of Servants in any Family in a great Way: We have no Broils, no hard Words, no Revilings, no Commandings, nor Complainings; and Mrs. *Jervis's* Government is made so easy, as she says, that she need not speak twice; and all the Language of the Servants is, Pray, *John*, or Pray, *Jane*, do so or so; and they say, Their dear Master's Service is a Heaven upon Earth.

\* See Vol. I. p. 159. Vol. II. p. 385.



WHEN I part from them, on the breaking up of our Assembly, they generally make a little Row on each Side to the Hall-door, and when I have made my Compliments, and paid my Thanks to Mr. *Adams*, one whispers, as I go out, God bless you, Madam! And so says another, and another, and indeed every one; and bow and court'fy with such Pleasure in their honest Countenances, as greatly delights me: And I say, (if it so happens) So, my good Friends! — I am glad to see you — Not one absent! — or but one — (as it falls out) — This is very obliging, I cry: And thus I shew them, that I take Notice, if any body be not there. And back again I go to pay my Duty to my Earthly Benefactor; and he is pleased to say sometimes, that I come to him with such a Radiance in my Countenance, as gives him double Pleasure to behold me; and often he tells me afterwards, that, but for appearing too fond before Company, he could meet me, as I enter, with Embraces as pure as my own Heart.

I HOPE, in time, I shall prevail upon the dear Gentleman to give me his Company. — But, thank God, I am enabled to go thus far already! I will leave the rest to his Providence. For I have a Point very delicate to touch upon in this Particular; and I must take care, not to lose the Ground I have gained, by too precipitately pushing at too much at once. This is my Comfort, that next to being uniform *himself*, is that Permission and Encouragement he gives *me* to be so, and the Pleasure he takes in seeing me so delighted.

delighted. — And besides the dear Gentleman always gives me his Company to Church. O how happy should I think myself, if he would be pleased to accompany me to the Divine Office, which yet he has not done, tho' I have urg'd him as much as I durst! One thing after another, he says: We shall be better and better, I hope: But nobody is good all at once. But, my dear Miss, as I consider this as the Seal of all the rest, and he himself has an awful Notion of it, I shall hardly think my dear Mr. *B.*'s Morals fully secur'd till then.

Mrs. *Jervis* ask'd me, on *Saturday* Evening, If I would be concerned to see a larger Congregation in the lesser Hall next Morning, than usual? I answer'd, No, by no means. She said, Mrs. *Worden*, and Mrs. *Lesley*, (the Two Ladies Women) and Mr. *Sidney*, my Lord *Davers's* Gentleman, and Mr. *H.*'s Servant, and the Coachmen and Footmen, belonging to our noble Visitors, who are, she says, all great Admirers of our Family Management, and good Order, having been told our Method, begg'd to join in it. I knew I should be a little dash'd at so large a Company; but the Men being pretty orderly, for Lords Servants, and Mrs. *Jervis* assuring me, that they were very earnest in their Request, I consented to it.

WHEN, at the usual Time, (attended by my *Polly*) I went down, I found Mr. *Adams* there, (to whom I made my first Compliments) and every one of our own People, waiting for me, Mr. *Colbrand* excepted, (whom Mr. *H.* had kept

up late the Night before) together with Mrs. *Worden*, and Mrs. *Lesley*, and Mr. *Sidney*, with the Servants of our Guests, who, as also worthy Mr. *Longman*, and Mrs. *Fervis*, and Mr. *Jonathan*, paid me their Respects; and I said, This is early rising, Mrs. *Lesley*, and Mrs. *Worden*; you are very kind to countenance us with your Companies in this our Family Order. —

Mr. *Sidney*, I am glad to see you. How do you, Mr. *Longman*? And looked round with Complacency on the Servants of our noble Visitors. And then I led Mrs. *Worden* and Mrs. *Lesley* to my little Retiring-place, and Mrs. *Fervis* and my *Polly* followed, and throwing the Door open, Mr. *Adams* began some select Prayers; and as the young Gentleman reads with great Emphasis and Propriety, and as if his Heart was in what he read, all the good Folks were exceedingly attentive.

AFTER Prayers, Mr. *Adams* read a Meditation, from a Collection made for private Use, which I shall more particularly mention by-and-by; and ending with the usual Benediction, I thank'd the worthy Gentleman, and gently chid him, in Mr. *B.*'s Name, for his Modesty, in declining our Table; and, thanking Mr. *Longman*, and Mrs. *Worden*, and Mrs. *Lesley*, receiv'd their kind Wishes, and hasten'd, blushing, thro' their Praises, to my Chamber; where, being alone, I pursued the Subject for an Hour, till Breakfast was ready, when I attended the Ladies, and my best Beloved, who had told them of the Verses plac'd under my Cushion at Church.

WE



WE set out, my Lord and Lady *Davers*, and myself, and Mr. *H.* in our Coach; and Mr. *B.* and the Countess, in the Chariot, both Ladies, and the Gentlemen, splendidly dress'd; but I avoided a Glitter as much as I could, that I might not seem to vie with the Two Peereffes. — Mr. *B.* said, Why are you not full-dress'd, my Dear? — I said, I hop'd he would not be displeas'd: If he was, I would do as he commanded. He kindly answer'd, As you like best, my Love. You are charming in every Dress.

THE Chariot first drawing up to the Church-Door, Mr. *B.* led the Countess into the Church. My Lord *Davers* did me that Honour; and Mr. *H.* handed his Aunt, thro' a Croud of Gazers, many of whom, as usual, were Strangers. The neighbouring Gentlemen and their Ladies paid us their silent Respects: But the Thoughts of the wicked Verses, or rather, as Lady *Davers* will have me say, wicked Action of the Transcriber of them, made me keep behind in the Pew: But, my Lady, with great Goodness, sat down by me, and whisperingly talked a good deal, between whiles, to me, with great Tenderness and Freedom in her Aspect; which I could not but take kindly, because I know she intended by it, to shew every one she was pleas'd with me.

AMONG 'other things, she said softly, Who would wish to be a King or Queen, *Pamela*, if it is so easy for Virtue and Beauty (so she was pleas'd to say) to attract so many sincere Admirers, without any of their Grandeur? — Look round, my dear Girl, and see what a solemn Respect,

and mingled Delight, appears in every Countenance: And, pressing my Hand, Thou art a charming Creature! such a natural Modesty, and such a becoming Dignity in thy whole Appearance — no wonder that every one's Eyes are upon thee, and that thou bringest to Church so many booted Gentlemen, as well as Neighbours, to behold thee!

AFTERWARDS she was pleased to add, taking my Hand, (and my dear Gentleman and the Countess heard her; for she raised her Voice to a more audible Whisper) I am proud to be in thy Company; and in this solemn Place, I take thy Hand, and acknowledge, with Pride, my *Sister*. I looked down; and indeed here at Church, I can hardly at any time look up; for who can bear to be gaz'd at so? — And softly said, O, my good Lady! how much you honour me, the Place, and these surrounding Eyes, can only hinder me from acknowledging as I ought.

My best Friend, with Pleasure in his Eyes, said, pressing his Hand upon both ours, as my Lady had mine in hers, you are Two beloved Creatures: Both excellent in your way. God bless you both! And you, too, my dear Brother! said my Lady.

THE Countess whisper'd, You should spare a body a little! You give one, Ladies, and Mr. *B.* too much Pleasure all at once. Such Company, and such Behaviour, adds still more Charms to Devotion; and were I to be here a Twelve-month, I would never miss once accompanying You to this good Place.

MR. *H.*

MR. *H.* thought he must say something, and addressing himself to his noble Uncle, who could not keep his good-natur'd Eye off me, I'll be *hang'd*, my Lord, if I know how to behave myself! — Why this out-does the Chapel! — I'm glad I put on my new Suit! And then he look'd upon himself, as if he would support, as well as he could, his Part of the general Admiration.

BUT think you not, my dear Miss, and my dearest Father and Mother, that I am now at the Height of my Happiness in this Life, thus favour'd by Lady *Davers*?

THE Dean preached an excellent Sermon; but I need not to have said that: Only to have mention'd, that *he* preached, was saying enough.

MY Lord led me out, when Divine Service was over (and being a little tender in his Feet, from a Gouty Notice, walked very slowly). Mr. *B.* led the Countess, and Mr. *H.* his Aunt. Lady *Towers* and Mrs. *Brooks* joined us in the Porch, and made us their Compliments; as did Mr. *Martin*. Will you favour us with your Company home, my old Acquaintance? said Mr. *B.* to that Gentleman. I can't, having a Gentleman my Relation to dine with me; but if it will be agreeable in the Evening, I will bring him with me to taste of your *Burgundy*; for we have not any such in the County. I shall be glad to see you, or any Friend of yours, reply'd Mr. *B.*

MR. *Martin* whisper'd, It is more, however, to admire your Lady, I can tell you that, than



your Wine. — Get into your Coaches, Ladies, said he, with his usual Freedom; our Maiden and Widow Ladies have a fine Time of it, wherever you come: By my Faith, they must every one of them quit this Neighbourhood, if you were to stay in it: But all the Hopes they have, are, that while you're in *London*, they'll have the Game in their own Hands.

SISTER, said Lady *Davers*, most kindly to me, in Presence of many, who (in a respectful manner) gather'd near us, Mr. *Martin* is the same Gentleman he us'd to be, I see.

MR. *Martin*, Madam, said I, smiling, has but one Fault: He is too apt to praise whom he favours, at the Expence of his absent Friends!

I AM always proud of your Reproofs, Mrs. *B.* reply'd he.

AY, said Lady *Towers*, that I believe: And therefore I wish, for all our sakes, you'd take him oftener to Task, Mrs. *B.*

LADY *Towers*, Lady *Arthur*, Mrs. *Brooks*, and Mr. *Martin*, all claim'd Visits from us; and Mr. *B.* making Excuses, that he must husband his Time, because of being oblig'd to go to Town soon, propos'd to breakfast with Lady *Towers* the next Morning, dine with Mrs. *Arthur*, and sup with Mrs. *Brooks*; and as there cannot be a more social and agreeable Neighbourhood anywhere, his Proposal, after some Difficulty, was accepted; and our usual visiting Neighbours were all to have Notice accordingly, at each of the Places.

I SAW

I SAW Sir *Thomas Atkyns* coming towards us, and fearing to be stifled with Compliments, I said, Your Servant, Ladies and Gentlemen; and, giving my Hand to Lord *Davers*, stepped into the Chariot, instead of the Coach; for People that would avoid Bustle, sometimes make it. Finding my Mistake, I would have come out; but my Lord said, Indeed you shan't: And I'll step in, because I'll have you all to myself.

LADY *Davers* smil'd: Now, said she, (while the Coach drew up) is my Lord *Davers* pleas'd; but I see, Sister, you were tir'd with Part of your Company in the Coach.

'Tis well contriv'd, my Dear, said Mr. *B.* as long as you have not depriv'd me of this Honour; taking the Countess's Hand, and leading her into the Coach.

WILL you excuse all this Impertinence, my dear Miss? — I know my dear Father and Mother will be pleas'd with it; and you will have the Goodness to bear with me on that Account; for their kind Hearts will be delighted to hear every minute thing in relation to Lady *Davers* and myself.

WHEN Mr. *Martin* came in the Evening, with his Friend, (who is Sir *William G.* a polite young Gentleman of *Lincolnshire*) he told us a deal of the Praises lavish'd away upon me by several genteel Strangers; one saying to his Friend, He had travell'd Twenty Miles to see me.

MY Lady *Davers* was praised too for her Goodness to me, and the Gracefulness of her Person; the Countess for the noble Serenity of her

her Aspect, and that charming Ease and Freedom which distinguish her Birth and Quality: My dear Mr. *B.* he said, was greatly admired too; but he would not make *him* proud; for he had Superiorities enough already, that was his Word, over his Gentlemen Neighbours: But I can tell you, said he, that for most of your Praises you are obliged to your Lady, and for having rewarded her Excellence as you have done: For one Gentleman, added he, said, He knew no one but *you* could deserve her; and he believed *you* did, from that Tenderness in your Behaviour to her, and from that Grandeur of Air, and Majesty of Person, that seem'd to shew you formed for her Protector as well as Rewarder. — Get you gone to *London*, both of you, said he. I did not intend to tell you, Mr. *B.* what was said of you. — And indeed I see no such extraordinary Excellence, do you, Sir, to his Friend, in that Gentleman?

SIR *William* said, Mr. *B.* was all that was polite and noble, and it was no Wonder, that every body pronounced us both the charmingest Couple they had ever seen.

THE Women of the Two Ladies had acquainted their Ladyships with the Order I observed for the Day, and the devout Behaviour of the Servants, &c. And about Seven I withdrawing as silently and as unobserved as I could, was surpris'd, as I was going thro' the great Hall, to be joined by both.

I SHALL come at all your Secrets, *Pamela*, said my Lady, and be able, in time, to cut you out



out in your own way. I know whither you are going.

MY good Ladies, said I, pardon me for leaving you. I will attend you in half an Hour.

No, my Dear, said Lady *Davers*, the Countess and I have resolved to attend *you* for that Half-hour, and we will return to Company together.

Is it not descending too much, my Ladies, as to the Company?

IF it is for us, it is for you, said the Countess; so we will either act up to you, or make you come down to us; and we will judge of all your Proceedings.

NAY, my dear Ladies! said I; and sat down on the first Chair.

NAY, my dear *Pamela*! returned my Lady, shew us the Way.

IF I must, I must—But I was much abashed.

EVERY one, but *Abraham*, who attended the Gentlemen, and all their Ladyships Servants, and their Two Women, and Mr. *Longman* and Mrs. *Fervis*, were there; which pleas'd me, however; because it shew'd me, that even the Strangers, by this their second voluntary Attendance, had no ill Opinion of the Service. But they were all startled, ours and theirs, to see my Ladies accompanying me.

I STEPT up to Mr. *Adams*.—I was in hopes, Sir, said I, we should have been favour'd with your Company at our Table.

YOUR Ladyship, said he, will excuse me: I did not think myself Company for such noble Guests as were there.

A GEN-

A GENTLEMAN and a Scholar is Company, said the Countess, for the first Quality.

WELL, Sir, said I, you see the Nobleness of these Ladies. They come now to be obliged to you, for your good Offices; and you'll have no better way of letting them return their Obligation, than to sup, tho' you would not dine, with them.

My Lady tapp'd me on the Neck — Gentely said! This was like my Sister, her own Self. Mr. *Longman*, said she, how do you? — We are come to be Witnesses of my Sister's Goodness, and the Family Decorum.

WE have a blessed Lady, Madam, said he: And your Ladyships Presence augments our Joys.

LET us follow you, *Pamela*, said she: We must learn of you what we are to do.

I LED to the little Closet, with as much Presence of Mind as I could, and my Two Ladies followed me; and Mrs. *Jervis*, and Mrs. *Wornden*, and Mrs. *Lesley*, stood just without, the Door being half shut, for their Ladies sakes.

I SHOULD have said, we were not at Church in the Afternoon. — And when I do not go, we have the Evening Service read to us, as it is at Church; which Mr. *Adams* performed now with his usual Distinctness and Fervour; and the Ladies seem'd not at all uneasy, altho' we had a Meditation besides.

WHEN all was concluded, I said, Now, my dearest Ladies, excuse me for the sake of the Delight I take in seeing all my good Folks about  
me

me in this decent and obliging manner. — Indeed I have no Ostentation in it, if I know my own Heart — Indeed I have not!

THE Countess and Lady *Davers*, delighted to see such good Behaviour in every one, sat a Moment or two looking upon one another in Silence; and then my Lady *Davers* caught me in her Arms: Beloved, deservedly beloved of the kindest of Husbands, what a Blessing art thou to this Family!

AND to every Family, said the Countess, who have the Happiness to know, and the Grace to follow, her Example; and saluted me too. But where, said my Lady, collectedst thou all this good Sense, and fine Spirit, in thy Devotions?

THE Bible, my dear Ladies, said I, is the Foundation of all: But this, and the Common-Prayer Book, and the Duty of Man, our worthy Folks have every one of them, and are so good as to imploy themselves in them at all Leisure Opportunities on other Days. For which Reason, that I may diversify their Devotions, I have, with the Assistance of Mr. *Adams*, and by Advice of the Dean, made Extracts from several good Pieces, which we read on these Days. Mr. *Adams*, said my Lady *Davers*, will you oblige me with a Copy of my Sister's Book, at your Leisure? He readily engag'd to do this; and the Countess desir'd another Copy, which he also promised.

LADY *Davers* then turning herself to Mrs. *Jervis*, How do you, good Woman? said she. Why you are now made ample Amends for the Love you bore to this dear Creature formerly!

You



YOU have an Angel, and not a Woman, for your Lady, my good Mrs. *Jervis*, said the Countess.

MRS. *Jervis*, folding her uplifted Hands together, O my Lady! you know not our Happiness; no, not one Half of it. We were before bless'd with Plenty, and a bountiful Indulgence, by our good Master; but our Plenty brought on Wantonness and Pride: But now, we have Peace as well as Plenty; and Peace of Mind, my dear Lady, in doing all in our respective Powers, to shew ourselves thankful Creatures to God, and to the best of Masters and Mistresses.

GOOD Soul! said I, and was forc'd to put my Handkerchief to my Eye: Your Heart is always overflowing thus with Gratitude and Praises, for what you so well merit from us.

MR. *Longman*, said my Lady, assuming a sprightly Air, altho' her Eye twinkled, to keep within its Lids the precious Water, that sprang from a noble and well-affected Heart, I am glad to see you here attending your pious young Lady. — Well might you love her, honest Man! well might you! — I did not know there was so excellent a Creature in any Rank.

MADAM, said the other worthy Heart, unable to speak but in broken Sentences, — You don't know — indeed you don't, what a — what a — hap — happy — Family we are! — Truly, we are like unto *Alexander's* Soldiers, every one fit to be a General; so well do we all know our Duties, and *practise* them too, let me say. — Nay, and please your Ladyship, we all  
of

of us long, till Morning comes, thus to attend my Lady; and after that is past, we long for Evening, for the same Purpose: For she is *so* good to us — You cannot think how good she is! But permit your honoured Father's old Servant to say one Word more, That tho' we are always pleased and joyful on these Occasions; yet we are in Transports to see our Master's noble Sister thus favouring us, with your Ladyship too, (to the Countess) and approving our young Lady's Conduct and Piety.

BLESSING on you all! said my Lady. — Let us go, my Lady; — Let us go, Sister; — for I can stay no longer!

As I slid by, following their Ladyships, How do you, Mr. *Colbrand*? said I, softly: — I fear'd you were not well in the Morning. — He bow'd, Par-don me, Ma-dame — I vas leetell indispose, dat ish true!

Now, my dear Miss, will you forgive me all this Self-praise, as it may seem. — Yet when you know I give it you, and my dear Parents, as so many Instances of my Lady *Davers's* Reconciliation and Goodness to me, and as it will shew what a noble Heart that good Lady has at Bottom, when her Pride of Quality and her Passion have subsided, and her native good Sense and Excellence taken place, I flatter myself, I may be the rather excused; and especially as I hope to have my dear Miss *Darnford's* Company and Countenance one Day, in this my delightful *Sunday* Imployment.

I SHOULD

I SHOULD have added, (for I think a good Clergyman cannot be too much respected) that I repeated my Request to Mr. *Adams*, to oblige us with his Company at Supper; but he so very earnestly begg'd to be excused, and with so much Concern of Countenance, that I thought it would be wrong to insist upon it; tho' I was sorry for it, because I am sure, as of any thing, that Modesty is always a Sign of Merit.

WE return'd to the Gentlemen as soon as Supper was ready, and as chearful and easy, as Lady *Davers* observ'd, as if we had not been present at so solemn a Service: And this, said she, after the Gentlemen were gone, makes Religion so pleasant and delightful a thing, that I profess I shall have a much higher Opinion of those who make it a regular and constant Part of their Imployment, than ever I had. But I have seen, added her Ladyship, very humourously, such wry Faces, and such gloomy Countenances, among some of your pious Folks, in and after a solemn Office, as quite dishearten'd me; for I thought, after such an Exercise, that it would be a Sin to go to Bed with a Smile upon one's Face, or without sighing and groaning at such a Rate, as must rob one of all the Comforts of Life.

THEN, said she, I was once, I remember, when a Girl, at the House of a very devout Man, for a Week, with his Grand-daughter, my School-fellow; and there were such Preachments *against* Vanities, and *for* Self-denials, that were we to have followed the good Man's Precepts, (tho' indeed not his Practice, for well did he love his Belly)



Belly) half God Almighty's Creatures and Works would have been useless, and Industry would have been banished the Earth.

THEN, added her Ladyship, (for she was in a pleasant Vein) have I heard the good Man confess himself guilty of such Sins, as, if true, (and by his hiding his Face with his broad-brim'd Hat, it look'd a little bad against him) he ought to have been hang'd on a Gallows Fifty Feet high.

I SAID, that this Over-gloominess was not Religion, I was persuaded; but either Constitution or Mistake; and I was sorry always when I met with it; for tho' it might betoken a pious Mind, it certainly shew'd a narrow one, and I fear'd did more Harm than Good.

THESE Reflections, as I said, fell from my Lady, after the Gentlemen were gone, when she recounted to her dear Brother, the Entertainment, as she was pleas'd to call it, I had given her: On which she made high Encomiums, as did the Countess; and they praised also the natural Dignity which they imputed to me, saying, I had taught them a Way they never could have found out, to descend to the Company of Servants, and yet to secure, and even augment, the Respect and Veneration of those Inferiors at the same time. And, *Pamela*, said my Lady, you are certainly very right, to pay so much Regard to the young Clergyman; for that makes all he reads, and all he says, of greater Efficacy with the Auditors, facilitates the Work you have in View to bring about, and in your own Absence (for your Monarch may not always dispense with

you, perhaps) strengthens his Influences, and encourages the young Gentleman besides.

### M O N D A Y.

I AM to thank you, my dear Miss, for your kind Letter, approving of my Scribble \*. When you come to my *Saturday's* and *Sunday's* Accounts, I shall try your Patience. But no more of that; for as you can read them, or let them alone, I am the less concern'd, especially as they will be more indulgently receiv'd somewhere else, than they may merit; so that my Labour will not be wholly lost.

I CONGRATULATE you with all my Heart, on your dismissing Mr. *Murray*; for, besides that some of his Qualities are not to be approv'd by a Lady of your Taste and Judgment, I will never give my Consent, that any Gentleman shall have the Honour of calling my Miss *Darnford* his, who can so easily resign his Pretensions to her, and address her Sister.

YOU are extremely diverting, my dear Miss, with your Greater and Lesser Bear-Stars, and I could not help shewing it to Mr. *B.* And what do you think the free Gentlemen said upon it? I am half-afraid to tell you: But do, now you are so happily disengaged, get Leave to come, and let us Two contrive to be even with him for it. You are the only Lady in the World, that I would join with against him.

\* See Letter XXVIII. of this Volume.

HE said, That your Characters of Mr. *Murray* and Miss *Nanny*, which he called severe, (but I won't call them so, without your Leave) look'd a little like pretty Spite, and as if you were sorry the Gentleman took you at your Word. — That was what he said — Pray let us punish him for it. Yet, he called you charming Lady, and said a great deal in your Praise, and join'd with me, that Mr. *Murray* could not possibly deserve you, who was so easy to part with you.

BUT, *Pamela*, said he, I know the Sex well enough. Miss *Polly* may not love Mr. *Murray*; yet to see her Sister address'd and complimented, and prefer'd to herself, by one whom she so lately thought it was in her own Power to chuse or to refuse, is a mortifying Thing. And young Ladies cannot bear to sit by neglected, while Two Lovers are playing Pugs Tricks with one another.

THEN, said he, all the Preparations to Matrimony, the Cloaths to be bought, the Visits to be paid and received, the Compliments of Friends, the busy Novelty of the Thing, the Day to be fixed, and all the little foolish Humours and Nonsense attending a concluded Courtship, when *one Sister* is to engross all the Attention and Regard; the new Equipages, and so forth; these are all Subjects of Mortification to the *other*, tho' she had no great Value for the Man perhaps.

WELL, but, Sir, said I, a Lady of Miss *Darnford's* good Sense and good Taste, is not to be



affected by these Parades, and has well consider'd the Matter, no doubt; and I dare say, rejoices, rather than repines, at missing the Gentleman.

THUS, my dear Miss, had we a Dispute about you. But I hope you will leave the happy Pair (for they are so; if they think themselves so) together, and Sir *Simon* to rejoice in his accomplish'd Son-in-Law elect, and give us your Company to *London*. For who would stay to be vex'd by that ill-natur'd Miss *Nanny*, as you own you were, at your last writing?

BUT I will proceed with my Journal, and the rather, as I have something to tell you of a Conversation, the Result of which has done me great Honour, and given me inexpressible Delight: Of which in its Place.

WE pursued Mr. *B.*'s Proposal, returning several Visits in one Day; for we have so polite and agreeable a Neighbourhood, that all seem to concur in a Desire to make every thing easy to one another: And, as I mentioned before, hearing Mr. *B.*'s Intention to set out for *London*, as soon as our noble Guests should leave us, they dispensed with Formalities, being none of them studious to take things amiss, and having a general good Opinion of one another's Intentions not to disoblige.

WE came not home till Ten in the Evening, and then found a Letter from Sir *Jacob Swynford*, Uncle by the Half-Blood to Mr. *B.* acquainting him, That hearing his Niece Lady *Davers* was with him, he would be here in a Day or Two, being then upon his Journey, to pay a Visit to his Nephew and Niece at the same time.

THIS

THIS Gentleman is very particularly odd and humourfome; and, his eldest Son being next Heir to the maternal Estate, if Mr. *B.* should have no Children, has been exceedingly dissatisfied with his debasing himself in marrying me; and would have been better pleased, had he not married at all, perhaps.

THERE never was any cordial Love between Mr. *B.*'s Father and him, nor between the Uncle, and Nephew and Niece; for his Positiveness, Roughness, and Self-interestedness too, has made him, tho' very rich, but little agreeable to the generous Tempers of his Nephew and Niece; yet, when they meet, which is not above once in Four or Five Years, they are always very civil and obliging to him.

LADY *Davers* wonder'd what could bring him hither now; for he lives in *Herefordshire*, and seldom stirs Ten Miles from home. Mr. *B.* said, he was sure it was not to compliment him and me on our Nuptials. No, rather, said my Lady, to satisfy himself, if you are in a way to cut out his own Cubs. Thank God, we are, said my dearest Friend: Whenever I was strongest set against Matrimony, the only Reason I had to weigh against my Dislike to it, was, that I was unwilling to leave so large a Part of my Estate \* to that Family.

MY Dear, said he to me, don't be uneasy; but you'll see a Relation of mine much more disagreeable than you can imagine: But no doubt you have heard his Character.

\* See Vol. II. p. 46. and 429.

AN, *Pamela*, said Lady *Davers*, we are a Family that value ourselves upon our Ancestry; but, upon my Word, Sir *Jacob* and all his Line have nothing else to boast of. And I have been often ashamed of my Relation to them.

No Family, I believe, my Lady, has every Body excellent in it, reply'd I: But I doubt I shall stand but poorly with Sir *Jacob*.

HE won't dare to affront you, my Dear, said Mr. *B.* altho' he'll say to you, and to me, and to my Sister too, blunt and rough things. But he'll not stay above a Day or Two, and we shall not see him again for some Years to come; so we'll bear with him.

I AM now, Miss, coming to the Conversation I hinted at.

## T U E S D A Y.

ON *Tuesday*, Mr. *Williams* came to pay his Respects to his kind Patron. I had been to visit the Widow Gentlewoman I mentioned before, and on my Return, went directly to my Closet; so knew not of his being there till I came to Dinner; for Mr. *B.* and he, were near two Hours together in Discourse in the Library.

WHEN I came down, Mr. *B.* presented him to me. My Friend Mr. *Williams*, my Dear, said he.

MR. *Williams*, how do you do? said I: I am glad to see you.

HE rejoiced, he said, to see me look so well; and had long'd for an Opportunity to pay his Respects



Respects to his worthy Patron and me before But had been prevented twice, when he was upon the Point of setting out.

MR. *B.* said, I have prevail'd upon my old Acquaintance to take up his Residence with us, while he stays in these Parts. Do you, my Dear, see that every thing is made agreeable to him.

To be sure, Sir, I will.

MR. *Adams* being in the House, Mr. *B.* sent to desire he would dine with us; if it were but in respect to a Gentleman of the same Cloth, who gave us his Company. And with great Modesty he came. But neither of the Gentlemen knew how to speak, at first, before Lady *Davers*, who is so majestick a Lady, and has so majestick a Character too, that every one has an Awe upon him in her Presence.

MR. *B.* when Dinner was over, and the Servants were withdrawn, said, My Dear, Mr. *Williams's* Business, in Part, was to ask my Advice as to a Living that is offer'd him by the Earl of —, who is greatly taken with his Preaching and Conversation.

AND to quit yours, I presume, Sir? said Lord *Davers*.

No, the Earl's is not quite so good as mine, and his Lordship would procure him a Dispensation to hold both. What would you advise, my Dear?

It becomes not me, Sir, to meddle with such Matters as these.

Yes, my Dear, it does, when I ask your Opinion.

I BEG Pardon, Sir. — My Opinion then is, That Mr. *Williams* will not care to do any thing that *requires* a Dispensation, and which would be unlawful without it.

YOUR Ladyship, said Mr. *Williams*, speaks exceedingly well.

I AM glad, Mr. *Williams*, that you approve of my Sentiments. You see they were required of me by one who has a Right to command me in every thing; otherwise this Matter is above my Sphere; and I have so much Good-will to Mr. *Williams*, that I wish him every thing that will contribute to make him happy.

WELL, my Dear, said Mr. *B.* but what would you advise in this Case? The Earl proposes, that Mr. *Williams's* present Living be supply'd by a Curate; to whom, no doubt, Mr. *Williams* will be very genteel; and, as we are seldom or never there, his Lordship thinks we shall not be displeas'd with it, and insists upon it, that he will propose it to me; as he has done.

LORD *Davers* said, I think this may do very well, Brother. But, what, pray, Mr. *Williams*, do you propose to allow to your Curate? Excuse me, Sir; but I think the Clergy do so hardly by one another generally, that they are not to be surpris'd, that some of the Laity treat them as they do.

INDEED, said Mr. *H.* that's well observed; for I have heard it said Twenty and Twenty times, If you would know how to value a Clergyman, and what he deserves for spending his whole Life in the Duties of his Function, you need

need but form your Opinion upon the Treatment they give to one another; and 40 or 50 *l.* a Year, would be thought too much, even for him who does all the Labour.

W H O says my Nephew speaks not well? said my Lord.

O, SAID my Lady, No Wonder! This is *Jackey's* Peculiar. He has always something to say against the Clergy. For he never lov'd them, because his Tutors were Clergymen; and since, said her Ladyship, (very severely) he never got any Good from them, why should they expect any from him?

A L W A Y S hard upon my poor Nephew! said Lord *Davers*.

T H A N K you, Aunt, said Mr. *H.*

M R. *Williams* said, Mr. *H.*'s Observation was but too true; that nothing gave greater Cause of Scandal, than the Usage some even of the dignified Clergy gave their Brethren: That he had always lamented it, as one of the greatest Causes of the Contempt with which the Clergy are too generally treated.

H E was proceeding; but Lady *Davers* said, I am not at all surpris'd at their Treatment of one another; for if a Gentleman of Education and Learning can so far forget what belongs to his Function, as to accept of Two Livings, when One would afford him a handsome Maintenance, it is no Wonder that such a one would make the most of it; for does he not as good as declare, that he takes it for that very Purpose?

I M U S T



I MUST not let this Argument proceed, said Mr. *B.* without clearing my worthy Friend. He is under no Difficulty about holding the Two. He proposes *not* to do it; and, like a good Man, as I always thought him to be, is of Opinion, he *ought not* to do it. But here is his Difficulty, and all his Difficulty: He is desirous to oblige his good Friend the Earl, who is very pressing to have him near him; but, apprehending that I may take it amiss, if he relinquishes my Living, he came to ask my Advice; and after we had talked a good deal of the Matter, I told him we would refer it to *Pamela*, who was a kind of Casuist in such Matters of Equity and good Order as fell within the Compass of her Observation and Capacity: And so, my Dear, give us your free Opinion; for this is a Subject you have spoken your Mind to me upon once before.

I AM very glad, Sir, replied I, that Mr. *Williams's* own Resolution was so conformable to what I wish'd it to be, and indeed expected from his Character; and I can therefore more freely speak my Mind upon the Occasion, tho' I am but a poor Casuist neither.

You remember, my Dear, said Mr. *B.* what you observed to me in favour of the Clergy and their Maintenance, when we fell occasionally upon that Subject a while ago. I found you had consider'd the Point, and thought you spoke well upon the Occasion. Let us hear your Opinion now upon it.

INDEED, reply'd I, I say now, as I then took the Liberty to say, that I have so general a Good-

will to the Order, that if my Wishes could have Effect, there is not one of it, but should have a handsome Competency; at least such a one as to set him above Contempt. And this, I am persuaded, would be a great Furtherance to the Good we expect from them, in teaching the lower Rank of People (as well as the higher) their Duties, and making them good Servants, and useful Members of the Commonwealth.

BUT, my Dear, you took Notice of some things, that would, if you can recollect them, be very *à propos* to the Subject we are now upon.

I REMEMBER, Sir, we were talking of Impropropriations. I took the Liberty to express myself a little earnestly against Impropropriations; and I remember you stopped my Mouth at once upon that Head.

As how, Sister? said Lady *Davers*.

AY, as how, Mrs. *B.*? said the Countess.

WHY, Madam, Mr. *B.* was pleased to say, That when the Clergy would come into a Regulation for the more equal and useful Disposition of the Revenues which at present were in the Church, he would be the first who would bring in a Bill for restoring to it all that it had lost by Impropropriations, and other Secularizations; and leave it upon the Publick to make Satisfaction to such of the Laity as would be Sufferers by the Restoration.

THAT was not, my Dear, what I meant, returned Mr. *B.* You were particularly against Dispenfations; which is the Point before us now.

I REMEM-

I REMEMBER, Sir, I did say, That as there are so many Gentlemen of the Function, who have no Provision at all, I could not wish any one of it should hold Two Livings; especially, if they cannot perform the Duties of both, and where One would afford a tolerable Competence: Much less (I remember I took the Liberty to add) could I think it excusable, that a Gentleman should rate the Labours of his Brother, who does *every* thing, so low, as is too frequently the Case, and pay himself so well, for doing *nothing* at all.

THIS is what I mean, returned Mr. B. and I thought you observed very well upon it, my Dear. For my own Part, I have always been of Opinion, that the Clergy who do thus, make the best Excuse that can be made, for Improprators and Lay-Patrons. For here is a Gentleman the Son of a Layman (I speak to general Cases) is sent to the University, and takes Orders. He has Interest perhaps to get Two or more Livings, and hires a Person, who is as deserving as himself, but destitute of Friends, at a low Rate, to do the Duties of one of them. We will suppose in his Favour, that he has several Children to provide for out of these, and makes that his Pretence for oppressing the Person he employs to do his own Duty. Some of these Children are Males, some Females; and not One in Five of the former is brought up to the Church; and all that he saves for them, and gives them, out of what he squeezes from his unhappy Brother, is it not secularizing, as it were, at least as far as



he can do it, the Revenues appropriated to the Church? And can *he*, whatever others may, blame an Impropiator for applying that Portion of the Produce of Church-Lands to *his* Lay-Family, which the other intends for the Lay-Family he is endeavouring to build up? Some one or Two of which Impropiator's Sons may possibly too, in order to possess the Living in their Father's Gift, be brought up to the Church: What is the Difference, I would fain know?

If the Clergy were always to have done thus. continued Mr. B. should we not have wanted many Endowments, and charitable Foundations, which we now have? And I am very sorry to have Reason to say, that we owe such sort of Works more to the Piety of the Clergy of past Times, than to the present; for now, let us cast our Eye upon the Practices of some of our Prelates, (for who is it that looks not up first for Examples to that venerable Order?) and we shall find, that too many among them, seem more intent on making a Family, as it is call'd, and thereby secularizing, as I observed, as much as they can, the Revenues of the Church, than to live up either to the ancient Hospitality, or with a View to those Acts of Munificence, which were the Reason for endowing the Church with such ample Revenues, as it once had, and still has, were it not so unequally distributed, and in so few Hands.

BUT, dear Sir, said I, what a sad Hardship do the inferior Clergy labour under all this Time? — To be oppressed and kept down by their Brethren, and by the Laity too! This is hard

hard indeed — 'Tis pity, methinks, this, at least, could not be remedied.

It will hardly ever be done, my Dear. The Evil lies deep; 'tis in human Nature; and when that can be mended, it will be better: but I see not how it can be expected, while those who have most Influence to procure the Redress, are most interested to prevent it: And the Views of others, aspiring to the same Power and Interest, make too many wish to have things left as they are, altho' they have no present Benefit by it. And those would join in a Cry of the Church's Danger, were the Legislature to offer at a Redress.

'Tis pity, Sir, said I, the Convocation are not permitted to sit. They would, perhaps, undertake this Province, and several others for the Benefit of the whole Body of the Clergy; and I should think such Regulations would come best from them.

So it is, my Dear, would they imploy themselves, and their Deliberations, in such good Works. But 'tis a sad Thing to consider, that there is little Good to be expected from Bodies of Men in general; for altho' an Individual cares not to pull down upon himself the Odium of a bad or unpopular Action, yet when there are many to share it among them, I see not that they scruple doing things which very little become them to do. But, far be it from me to say this with a View to Convocations *as* Convocations. I speak what is but too generally the Case in all Bodies of Men whatever, whether Clergy or Laity.

Laity. And let us look into the greater or lesser Corporations and Societies throughout the Kingdom, and we shall find, if a poor Witticism may be excused, that Bodies are really *Bodies*, and act too often as if they had no *Souls* among them.

I HOPE, Sir, said the Countess, when you judge thus hardly of Bodies, you include the Two supreme Bodies.

*Thou shalt not*, said Mr. B. — I know these Reverend Gentlemen (looking at Mr. *Williams* and Mr. *Adams*) will tell me, *Speak Evil of the Rulers of thy People*. — But I wish I could always defend, what I am loth at any time to censure. But were you to read, or attend to the Debates in both Houses, which sometimes happen in Cases almost self-evident, you would find it impossible not to regret, that you are now-and-then under a Necessity to join with the Minority, as well in your House, Lord *Davers*, as in ours.

I WISH, Brother, reply'd his Lordship, I could differ from you with Reason: But this always *was*, and, I fear, always *will be* so, more or less in every Session.

BUT, to return to our first Subject, said Mr. B. You know, my Dear, how much Pleasure I take to hear your Opinion in Cases of natural Equity: And you must tell us freely, what you would advise your Friend Mr. *Williams* to do.

AND must I, Sir, speak my Mind on such a Point, before so many better Judges?

YES, *Sister*, said her Ladyship, (a Name she is now pleas'd to give me freely before Strangers,  
after



after her dear Brother's Example, who is kindest, tho' always kind, at such Times) you *must*; if I may be allow'd to say *must*.

WHY then, proceeded I, I beg leave to ask Mr. *Williams* one Question; that is, Whether his present Parishioners do not respect and esteem him, in that particular Manner, which I think every body must, who knows his Worth?

I AM very happy, Madam, in the Good-will of all my Parishioners, and have great Acknowledgements to make for their Civilities to me.

I DON'T doubt, said I, but it will be the same where-ever you go; for, bad as the World is, a prudent and good Clergyman will never fail of Respect. But, Sir, if you think your Ministry among them is attended with good Effects; if they esteem your Person with a Preference, and listen to your Doctrines with Attention; methinks, for *their* sakes, 'tis pity to leave them, were the Living of *less* Value, as it is of *more*, than the other. For how many People are there who can benefit by one Gentleman's Preaching, rather than by another's; altho' possibly, the one's Abilities may be no way inferior to the other's? There is a great deal in a *Delivery*, as it is called, in a Way, a Manner, a Deportment, to engage People's Attention and Liking; and as you are already in Possession of their Esteem, you are sure to do much of the Good you aim and wish to do. For where the Flock loves the Shepherd, all his Work is easy, and more than half done; and without that, let him have the Tongue of an Angel, and let him live the Life of a Saint,

a Saint, he will be heard with Indifference, and, oftentimes, as his Subject may be, with Disgust.

I PAUSED here; but every one being silent, As to the Earl's Friendship, Sir, continued I, you can best judge what Force that ought to have upon you; and what I have mention'd would be the only Difficulty with me, were I in Mr. *Williams's* Case. To be sure it will be a high Compliment to his Lordship, and so he ought to think it, that you quit a better Living to oblige him. And he will be bound in Honour to make it up to you. For I am far from thinking, that a prudent Regard to worldly Interest misbecomes the Character of a good Clergyman; and I wish all such were set above the World, for their own sakes, as well as for the sakes of their Hearers, since Independency gives a Man Respect, besides the Power of doing Good, which will inance that Respect, and, of consequence, give greater Efficacy to his Doctrines.

THE Countess mentioned hereupon, the Saying of Dr. *Fisher*, Bishop of *Rockester*, who was beheaded in the Reign of *Henry VIII.* because he would not own the King's Supremacy: This Prelate, being offer'd a richer Bishoprick, would not accept of it, saying, "He looked upon his Bishoprick as his Wife; and he should not think it excusable to part with his Wife because she was poor." This brought so many Reflections upon frequent Translations, and the Earnestness with which richer Bishopricks were sought after, that I was very sorry to hear, or to think there was Occasion for them. And I *did*

take the Liberty to say, That, as Mr. *B.* had observ'd, the Fault was in human Nature; and tho it was an inexcusable one, perhaps we that censur'd them, might find it hard, in their Circumstances, to resist the Temptation.

Mr. *B.* said, He wish'd, for the sake of the Clergy in general, that there was a Law against Translations; and that the Bishopricks in *England* were made equal in Revenue: For, do we not see, said he, that the Prelates, almost to a Man, vote on the Side of Power? And, by this means, contribute not a little to make themselves, and the whole Body of the Clergy, (so numerous, and so deserving too, as those of the *Church of England* are) a By-word to Free-thinkers of all Denominations, who are ever ready to take Occasion to malign them and their venerable Order.

W O U L D you not, asked Lord *Davers*, have the Two Primacies distinguish'd in Revenue?

No, said Mr. *B.* the Distinction of Dignity and Precedence would be enough, if not too much; for where there is but One Pope, the whole College of Cardinals, Seventy in Number, are always looking up to, and gaping after the Chair: And I would have no Temptations laid in the Way of good Men to forfeit their Characters, and weaken their Influences, which are of so much Consequence, for Example-sake, to the Publick Weal.

I T H I N K, said Lord *Davers*, there was some Reason for the Celibacy of the Clergy in  
the



the *Roman* Church at first; altho' the Inconveniencies arising from it, are too many, and too obvious, to wish the Restraint so general. For the Provision for Families and Children furnishes so natural and so laudable a Pretence to Clergymen to lay up all they can for them, that their Characters suffer not a little on that Account.

IF we look round us, said Mr. *B.* and see how many good and worthy Families are sprung from the Clergy; and look abroad, and see what are too often the Effects of Celibacy in the *Roman* Church; and the Scandal, worse than what we complain of, thrown upon them, even by Bigots of their own Communion, we shall have sufficient Reason to condemn the Celibacy which that Church enjoins. Besides, a bad Mind, an oppressive or covetous Nature, will be the same, whether marry'd or single: For have we not seen to what a scandalous Height Nepotism has been carried in that Church? And has not a Pope of a private and narrow Spirit, done as much for his Nephews and Nieces, (and perhaps nearer Relations under those Names) as he could have done for his Sons and Daughters? So still *here* too, we must resolve all into that Common Sewer of Iniquity, Human Nature; and conclude, That a truly good Man will not do a bad Thing upon any the nearest and most affecting Considerations; and that a bad Man will never want a Pretence to display his evil Qualities, nor Flatterers nei-

ther (if he has Power) to defend him, in the worst he can do.

I WELL remember the Argument, when I was at *Rome*, used to the Pope, on such an Occasion. His Holiness declar'd against Nepotism, saying, That he would never look upon the Revenues of the Church, as the Patrimony of his private Family; and forbad his numerous Relations, who, on his Promotion, swarmed about him, with Looks as hungry, as if they were so many *North-Britons*, travelling Southward for Preferment — (that was Mr. *B.*'s Word, spoken pleasantly) to think of him in any other Light, than that of the common Father of all his People; and as having no other Relation but Merit.

THIS was setting out well, you'll say: But what was the Event? — Why, Two-thirds of his Relations rushed into Orders directly; and it was not long, before Parasites were found, to represent to the Holy Father, that it was a Sin, to deprive the Church of so many excellent Props and Buttresses; and that for the Good of the Publick, he ought to prefer them to the first Dignities; so that the good Man, overcome with their Reasons, and loth to continue in so great a Sin, graced the Cardinalate with one, the Episcopate with half a Dozen, and the richest Abbacies with a Score or Two; and the Emperor, having occasion to make Interest with his Holiness, found Merit enough in some of the Lay Relations, to create them Princes and Counts of the Holy *Roman* Empire.

BUT,

BUT, Sir, said I, (for I am always sorry to hear things said to the Discredit of the Clergy, because I think it is of publick Concern, that we reverence the Function, notwithstanding the Failings of Particulars) have I not been a silent Witness, that you have made the same Observations on a Minister of State, who, tho' he shall be perhaps the first to blame this Disposition in a Clergyman, will be equally ready to practise it himself, to Relations and Children, full as worthless, to the Exclusion of the Worthy? — So that, Sir, this is all human Nature still; and should we not be tender in our Censures of the one, when we are so ready to acquit the other?

THERE'S this Difference, Mrs. B. said the Countess: From the one we expect a better Example; from the other, no Example fit to be followed. And this is one Reason that makes a First Minister generally so hated a Thing in all Nations, because he usually resolves all Considerations into Self, and is beloved by nobody, but those, to whom he gives the Overflowings of such Benefits as he has not Relations enough to heap them upon.

WELL, Mr. *Adams*, said I, if I may be allow'd to be so serious, does not this shew the Excellency of the Prayer we are taught by the supreme Teacher, and that Part of it, *Lead us not into Temptation?* — For it seems too natural a Consequence, that no sooner are we tempted, but we *deliver ourselves up to Evil*. — Right, Sister, said Lord *Davers*; and this ends in Mr. B.'s *human Nature* again.



WHAT remains then, observed Lady *Davers*, but that we take the World as we find it? Give Praise to the Good, Dispraise to the Bad; and every one try to mend *one*?

YET I wish, said Mr. *B.* so over-tender are many good Clergymen of the Failings in their Brethren, which they would not be guilty of themselves, that we might avoid displeasing them, if they were to know the Freedom of this Conversation, when we are so well disposed to reverence their Function.

I HOPE otherwise, return'd Mr. *Williams*; for it is but giving *due* Praise and Dispraise, as my Lady says; and were evil Actions to go uncensur'd, good ones would lose their Reward; and Vice, by being put upon a Foot with Virtue in this Life, would meet with too much Countenance.

BUT give me leave, resum'd Lady *Davers*, to interpose a little in the Matter we have departed from, that of the Curate, and Dispensation; and when I have deliver'd my Sentiments, I insist upon it, that Mrs. *B.* will as freely give us hers, as if I had been silent.

DISPENSATIONS are usual Things. Mr. *Williams* may pay a young Gentleman *handsomely*; and the Censure we have pass'd, is only upon such as do *not*. To a young Man, at first setting out, a good Curacy will be very acceptable. If he has Merit, it will put him in a Way of shewing it, and he may raise himself by it. If he has not, he will not deserve more. And Mr. *Williams* may marry, perhaps, and have a  
Family

Family to provide for. His Opportunities may not always be the same: The Earl may die; and he should be excused, if he make the best Use of his Interest and Favour, for the very Reason Mrs. *B.* gave, that, as he is a good Man, it will strengthen his Influences: And, come, Brother, you know I am always for prescribing! here is a worthy young Gentleman in my Eye, who won't take it amiss to begin with a Curacy: And you shall give *your* Dispensation, previous to the legal one, on Condition, that Mr. *Williams* will permit you to present his Curate: And thus all will be solv'd.

BOTH the Gentlemen bow'd — and Mr. *Williams* was going to speak; but Mr. *B.* said, Take my Sister at her Word, *Pamela*; and if you have any thing to say to this Scheme, speak it freely, as if her Ladyship had been silent; for, I perceive, by your downcast Eye, and Silence, you could say something, if you would.

AY, pray do, said my Lady. I love to hear you speak. You always make me think of something I had not consider'd before.

I AM very loth to say any thing on so nice a Subject. Indeed it would not become me. There is so much Generosity and Benevolence in my good Lady's Scheme, that I ought not.

*Ought not!* repeated my dearest Friend, interrupting me; none of your *Ought not's*: I know you are always forming in your Mind Notions of Right and Wrong, in the common Cases of Life: Let us therefore have your Opinion in this Matter more fully than you have

hitherto given it; and deliver it too without Hesitation, and with that Ease and Freedom, which are born with you: for, I can tell you, that were we, thro' the Corruptions of human Nature, to lose the Distinctions of Right and Wrong, I know not where we could apply ourselves, but to such as you, to recover them.

I BOW'D, and said, If you will have it so, Sir, it must be so; and I will then bespeak all your kind Allowances, casting my Eye around me to each Person, and tell you all I think upon this Matter; and when I have done, submit my poor Sentiments, as becomes me, to your superior Judgments.

THUS then I would say---Pardon me, Madam, for taking your Ladyship's Words for my Theme, as I remember them; and hardly any thing falls from your Ladyship that I do *not* remember---*That Dispensations are usual Things.*---I am sure, I am going to display my Ignorance; because, knowing nothing of their Original or Design, I must presume them to be very antient in this Kingdom, and introduced only when there were fewer Clergymen than Benefices. Was there ever such a Time?

THEY smil'd---Nay, now, you *would* command me, Sir, to speak, when I needed to do nothing else, to expose myself. There was a Time, as I have read, that there were so few Scholars, that the Benefit of Clergy was allow'd to some sort of Criminals who could do no more than read, because the Commonwealth could ill spare learned Men, and thought it right  
to



to encourage the Love of Letters. — And might not there be a Time then, when Dispensations were allowed to worthy Men, because it was difficult to find enow of such as deserv'd that Character, to fill the Church Preferments?

TELL us, *Pamela*, said Mr. *B.* whether you do not intend this as a Satire upon the Practice, or is it really your pretty Ignorance, that has made you pronounce one of the severest Censures upon it, that could be thought of?

I SMILED; and said, Indeed, Sir, I think only some such Reason, or a worse, must be the Original of Dispensations: For is it right, that One Gentleman shall have Two or Three Livings, the Duties of no more than One of which he can personally attend, while so many are destitute of Bread, almost, and expos'd to Contempt, the too frequent Companions of Poverty? And what tho' Custom may have sanctified it, to be sure, that is all that can; and a good Man will not do all he may do, without incurring a Penalty, because there is in every thing a Right and a Wrong; and because, be the Custom what it will, a Man should regulate his Actions by his Conscience, and the Golden Rule.

MY good Lady says, Mr. *Williams* may pay a Gentleman handsomely: I don't doubt but Mr. *Williams* would do so; and this, I am sorry to say it, would be doing what is not so often done as one would wish. But may I be permitted to ask, For *what* would he pay the Gentleman handsomely? — Why, for doing that Duty for him, which, in Conscience and Honour,

nour he ought to do himself, and which, when he takes Institution and Induction, he engages solemnly to do! And pray, excuse me, my Dear Every-body—that was my foolish Word, which made them smile—To what End is all this?—Only, that the Gentleman who does all the Labour in the Vineyard, shall live upon 30, 40, or 50 *l. per Annum*, more or less, while the Gentleman who has *best* nothing but *best* Interest, (another of my foolish Phrases) shall receive twice, and perhaps three times the Sum for doing nothing at all. Can any Dispensation, my dear Friends, make this a just or equitable thing? Indeed if the Living be so poor, as too many of them are, that a Man cannot comfortably and creditably subsist without putting Two poor ones together to make One tolerable one, that is another Thing. But pray now, my good Mr. *Williams*, excuse me, if Mr. *Adams* can live upon a Curacy of 40 or 50 *l.* a Year, cannot another Gentleman live, unless his Rectory or Vicarage bring him 2 or 300? Mr. *Adams* may marry as well as Mr. *Williams*; and both, I believe, will find God's Providence a better Reliance, than the richest Benefice in *England*.

A GOOD Curacy, no doubt, continued I, may be a comfortable thing at setting out, to a young Gentleman: But if here be a Rectory or Vicarage, of 200 *l.* a Year for Example, (for, if it be of no more Value than a good Curacy, he *must* be content) is not that 200 *l.* a Year the Reward for doing such and such Labour? And if this be the stated Hire for this Labour, to speak in the  
Scriptur

Scripture Phrase, *is not the Labourer worthy of his Hire?* Or is he that does *not* labour, to go away with the greatest Part of it?

IF the Gentleman, my Lady is pleased to say, has Merit, this Curacy may put him in a way of shewing it: But does the Manifestation of Merit, and the Reward of it, always go together?

MY Lady is so good as to observe — But may I, Madam, be excused?

PROCEED, proceed, Child! — I shall only have a Care of what I say before you for the future, that's all.

AND I too, said Mr. *H.* — which made them smile.

NAY, now, my Lady —

PROCEED, I tell you — I only wonder, as my Brother has said, on another Occasion, where thou gottest all these equirable Notions.

MY Lady is so good as to observe, proceeded I, (for they were pleased to be attentive) that Mr. *Williams* should make use of his Opportunities. I know her Ladyship speaks this rather in generous Indulgence to the usual Practice, than what always *ought* to be the chief Consideration; for if the Earl should die, may not some other Friend arise to a Gentleman of Mr. *Williams's* Merit?

As to strengthening of a good Man's Influence, which is a Point always to be wish'd, I would not say so much as I have done, if I had not heard Mr. *Longman* say, and I am sure I heard it with great Pleasure, that the Benefice Mr. *Williams*



*liams* so worthily enjoys, is a clear 250*l.* a Year.

BUT after all, does Happiness to a Gentleman, a Scholar, a Philosopher, rest in a greater or lesser Income? — On the contrary, Is it not oftener to be found in a happy Competency, or Mediocrity? Suppose my dear Mr. *B.* had 5000*l.* a Year added to his present large Income, would that increase his Happiness? That it would add to his Cares, is no Question; but could that Addition give him one single Comfort which he has not already? And if the dear Gentleman had 2 or 3000 less, might he be less happy on that Account? No, surely; for it would render a greater Prudence on my humble Part necessary, and a nearer Inspection, and greater Frugality, on his own; and he must be contented (if he did not, as now, perhaps, lay up every Year) so long as he lived within his Income. — And who will say, that the Obligation to greater Prudence and Oeconomy is a Misfortune?

THE Competency, therefore, the Golden Mean, is the Thing; and I have often consider'd the Matter, and endeavoured to square my Actions by the Result of that Consideration. For a Person, who being not born to an Estate, is not satisfied with a Competency, will, probably, not know any Limits to his Desires. One whom an Acquisition of 100 or 200*l.* a Year will not satisfy, will hardly sit down contented with any Sum. For altho' he may propose to himself at a Distance, that such and such an Acquisition will be the Height of his Ambition, yet

yet he will, as he approaches to that, advance upon himself farther and farther; and know no Bound, till the natural one is forced upon him, and his Life and his Views end together.

Now let me humbly beg Pardon of you all, Ladies and Gentlemen, turning my Eye to each; but most of You, my good Lady, whose Observations I have made so free with. If *you* can forgive me, it will be an Instance of your Goodness, that I may wish for, but hardly can promise to myself. Will you, my dear Lady? said I, and laid my Hand upon her Ladyship's, in a supplicatory Manner; for she sat next me.

I THINK *not*, said her Ladyship. I think I *ought* not. — Should I, Brother? Can I, my Lord? — Ought I, my Lady Countess? — Brother, Brother, if you have been in any degree contributing to the Excellency of this — what shall I call her? how cunningly do you act, to make her imbibe your Notions, and then utter them with such Advantage, that you have the secret Pride to find your own Sentiments praised from her Mouth! But I will forgive you both, be it as it will; for I am sure, out-done as I am, in Thought, Word, and Deed, and by so young a Gypsy — that was her Word, it is by one that would out-do every body else, as well as me; only I would except your Ladyship.

NONE of your Exceptions, Lady *Davers*, reply'd the Countess — I know not, in so young a Lady, whether I should most envy or admire her Excellence.

WELL,

WELL, but since I have the Pleasure, resum'd I, to find myself forgiven, may I be indulged a few Moments Prattle more? Only just to observe, that the State of the Case I have given, is but *one* Side of the Question; that which a good Clergyman, in my humble Opinion, would chuse to act. But when we come to the *other* Side, what it would be kind we of the Laity should think and act by them, that is another thing. For, when we think of the Hardships the Clergy lie under, more than almost any other Body of Men, we shall see they are intitled to better Usage than they often meet with.

HERE, in the first Place, a Youth is sent to the University, after a painful Course to qualify him for it. He endangers his Health, and impairs his Constitution, by hard Study, and a sedentary Life; and after he has passed such a Number of Years, he is admitted into Orders, perhaps gets a small Fellowship, turns Tutor, a painful Imployment; and his Education having been designed for all his Portion, and that expended in it, he at last, by Interest or Favour, gets a Curacy, or little Living, of 40, 50, or 60 *l.* a Year; if less, so much the worse; and is obliged to maintain himself in a genteel Appearance out of that, and be subject not seldom to the Jest of Buffoons and Rakes at a great Man's Table, where the *Parson* is too often the Butt to receive the supposed witty Shafts of such as can allow themselves to say any thing. If he marries, which possibly too he is kept from, contrary to his Wishes, of all Men he is the least to follow  
his



his own Liking; since Prudence too often obliges him to take the Person his Inclination would not.

IF Children follow, what melancholy Views has he of providing for them, did not his strong Reliance on Providence exercise his Faith against worldly Appearance?

THEN has he too often to contend for his Dues, the Produce of his poor Income, with churlish and ignorant Spirits, whom his Function would make him wish to smooth and instruct; who, tho' they farm and pay to the Landlord for no more than Nine Tenths of the Lands they occupy, hardly think it a Sin to cheat the Parson of his Tythe; who, however, has the same Right to it, by the Laws of the Land, as the Gentleman has to the Estate, or the Tenant to the Produce of his Farm.

THIS obliges the poor Gentleman to live in a State of War, among a People with whom both his Duty and Inclination would make him desirous to cultivate a good Understanding. And what Benefits can result from his Ministry in such a Situation; when the People to be instructed look upon him as an Invader of their Substance, at the very Time that they are robbing him of what is legally his?

IN the next Place, I presume to think, that the Clergy are too much looked upon by some as a detached Body, as I may say, from the rest of the People, and as Persons acting upon a separate Interest, quite opposite to that of the Laity: When, possibly, that very Churl, who refuses them their Right, or would cheat them of it,  
has

has a View to bring up one of his Family to the Church, and hopes to get him provided for out of its Revenues. And are not the Clergy, moreover, the Fathers, the Sons, the Uncles, the Brothers of the Laity, who shall set themselves against their Maintenance? And must their Education debar them of those Comforts, which it better qualifies them to enjoy, and which it incapacitates them any other way to procure?

WHAT Opportunity have not the Laity in general, of all Degrees and Ranks, to make their Lives easy and happy, to what the Clergy have? Here is a middling Family, with Three or Four Sons: Suppose the Father's Circumstances will allow him to bring up one to the *Law*: What Opportunities has *he*, unenvied, to make a Fortune? Another is brought up to *Trade*: If he has but tolerable Success in the World, in what Ease and Affluence does he support himself, and provide for his Family? And as to the *Physick Line*, what Fortunes are raised in that? And nobody envies any of these. But the Son, whose Inclination shall lead him perhaps *best* to deserve, and *most* to require, an easy and comfortable Subsistence, and who ought wholly to devote himself to the Duties of his Function, is grudged every thing, and is treated as if he were not a Son of the same Family, and had not a natural Right and Stake in the same Commonwealth.

THERE are, 'tis true, Preferments, and some great ones, and Honours too, in the Church; but how few, compared to the Numbers of the Clergy, or to those Livings which are so poor  
as

as can hardly set a Man above Penury and Contempt? — And how are those few ingross'd by the Descendants or Dependants of the Rich and Powerful! And, what by Commendams, Dispenfations, and such-like Contrivances, how does one Man of Interest and Address swallow up the Provision which was designed for several, as deserving, perhaps, at least, as himself? — For, my good Lady, (you *have* forgiven me, and must not be displeased) a Gentleman's Friends *may die off*; and he must, you know, *make the best Use of his Opportunities.*

O YOU dear Sauce-box, as my Brother calls you! — How dare you, by that arch pretty Look, triumph over me thus? — Let me, Brother, give her a Slap for this! — I'm sure she deserves it.

I THINK she is a little insolent, indeed, Lady *Davers.* — But to the Case in hand. There is so much Truth in what *Pamela* says, of the Hardships to which the Clergy, the inferior Clergy particularly, are subjected; that I wonder any Gentleman who can chuse for himself, and has no probable Prospects, should enter into Orders, under such Discouragements.

I HUMBLY conceive, Sir, said I, that there can be but one *good* Inducement, and that is what the Apostle hints at, in these Words — *If in this Life only we have Hope, we are of all Men most miserable.*

WELL, said Mr. *B.* by how much this is their Motive, by so much are they intitled to that better Hope; and may it never deceive them!



BUT I have the Pleasure to acquaint this Company, that I had a Mind only to hear what *Pamela*, who, as I hinted, talked to me learnedly on this very Subject a few Days ago, would say, when she came Face to Face, to her Two worthy Friends, Mr. *Williams*, and Mr. *Adams*, (and so I desired Mr. *Williams* would let her run on, if I could set her into the Subject) — else my old Acquaintance was resolved not to hold both Livings, since *either*, he was so good as to say, would afford him as handsome a Provision as he wished for; his only Difficulty being about obliging the Earl, or whether he should not disoblige me, if he complied with that Nobleman's Request.

INDEED, Madam, said Mr. *Williams*, this is the very Case: And after what I have heard from your Ladyship, (so he call'd me) I would not, for the World, have been of another Mind, nor have put it upon any other Foot than I did.

YOU are a good Gentleman, said I; and I have such an Opinion of your Worthiness, and the Credit you do your Function, that I can never suspect either your Judgment or your Conduct. But pray, Sir, may I ask, What have you determined to do?

WHY, Madam, reply'd he, I am stagger'd in that too, by the Observation your Ladyship made, that where a Man has the Love of his Parishioners, he ought not to think of leaving them.

ELSE, Sir, I find, you were rather inclined to oblige the Earl, though the Living be of *less* Value! This is very noble, Sir; it is more than generous.

MY

MY Dear, said Mr. *B.* I'll tell you (for Mr. *Williams's* Modesty will not let him speak it before all the Company) what *is* his Motive, and a worthy one you'll say it is. Excuse me, Mr. *Williams* — for the Reverend Gentleman blush'd.

THE Earl has of late Years — we all know his Character — given himself up to Carousing, and he will suffer no Man to go from his Table sober. Mr. *Williams* has taken the Liberty to expostulate, as became his Function, with his Lordship on this Subject, and upon some other Irregularities, in so agreeable a manner, that the Earl has taken a great Liking to him; and promises, that he will suffer his Reasonings to have an Effect upon him, and that he shall reform his whole Household, if he will come and live near him, and regulate his Table by his own Example.

THE Countess is a very good Lady, and privately presses Mr. *Williams* to oblige the Earl: And this is our worthy Friend's main Inducement; with the Hope, which I should not forget to mention, that he has, of preserving untainted the Morals of the Two young Gentlemen, the Earl's Sons, who, he fears, will be carried away by the Force of such an Example: And he thinks, as the Earl's Living has fallen, mine, probably, will be better supplied than the Earl's, if he, as he kindly offers, gives it me back again; otherwise the Earl, as he apprehends, will find out for his, some Gentleman, if such a one can be found, as will rather further, than obstruct, his own Irregularities;

gularities; as was the unhappy Case of the last Incumbent.

WELL, said Lady *Davers*, (and so said the Countess) I shall always have the highest Respect for Mr. *Williams*, for a Conduct so genteel and so prudent. But, Brother, will you, and will you, Mr. *Williams*, put this whole Affair, in all its Parts, into Mrs. *B.*'s Hands, since you have such Testimonies, *both* of you, of the Rectitude of her Thinking and Acting?

WITH all my Heart, Madam, replied Mr. *Williams*; and I shall be proud of such a Direction.

WHAT say *you*, Brother? You are to suppose the Living in your own Hands again; will you leave the whole Matter to my *Sister* here?

COME, my Dear, said Mr. *B.* let us hear how you'd wish it to be order'd. I know you have not need of one Moment's Consideration, when once you are Mistress of a Point.

NAY, said Lady *Davers*, that is not the Thing. I repeat my Demand: Shall it be as Mrs. *B.* lays it out, or not?

THIS is a weighty Matter, my good Sister; and, bad as I have been, I think Patrons are accountable, in a great measure, for the Characters of the Persons they present; and I do assure you, that had I Twenty Livings in my Gift, I should think I ought not to prefer my Brother to any one of them, if his Morals and Character were not likely to do Honour to the Church, as well as to my Presentation. And I expected to hear from *Pamela*, when she was enumerating the Hardships of the Clergy, of that scandalous Practice



Grace of some Patrons, who rob the regularly-bred Clergymen, by pushing into Orders, some Kinsman or Friend, or Friend's Kinsman or Friend, when a Living falls in, let his Character or Qualifications be ever so faulty and defective. I could name several such Instances, that ought to make the Ordainers, as well as the Ordained, *blush*, as (were I to borrow one of *Pamela's* serious Inferences, I would say) it will one Day make them both *tremble*, when they come to give an Account of the Trusts committed to them.

WELL, said my Lady, I have a noble Brother, that's true. What Pity you ever were wicked at all! But, come, and laid her Hand upon mine, this same good Girl will be a Blessing to you: Nay, why say I, *will* be? she *is*; and the greatest that Man can receive. — But still I must have you put this Matter into Mrs. *B.*'s Hands.

CONDITIONALLY I will — Provided I cannot give satisfactory Reasons, why I *ought not* to conform to her Opinion; for this, as I said, is a Point of Conscience with me; and I made it so, when I presented Mr. *Williams* to the Living, and have not been deceived in that Presentation.

To be sure, said I, that is very reasonable, Sir; and on that Condition, I shall the less hesitate to speak my Mind, because I shall be in no Danger to commit an irreparable Error.

I KNOW well, Lady *Davers*, added Mr. *B.* the Power your Sex have over ours, and their subtle Tricks; and so will never, in my weakest Moments, be drawn in to make a blindfold Promise. There have been several Instances, both

in sacred and profane Story, of Mischiefs done by such Surprizes: So you must allow me to suspect myself, when I know the dear Slut's Power over me, and have been taught, by the inviolable Regard she pays to her own Word, to value mine. — And now, *Pamela*, speak all that's in your Heart to say.

WITH your *requisite* Condition in my Eye, I will, Sir. But let me see, that I state the Matter right. And preparative to it, pray, Mr. *Williams*, tho' you have not been long in Possession of this Living, yet may-be you can compute what it is likely, by what you know of it, to bring in, clear?

MADAM, said he, by the best Calculation I can make, (I thank *you* for it, good Sir) it may, one Year with another, be reckoned at 300*l. per Annum*: It is the best Living within Twenty Miles of it, having been improved within these Two last Years.

IF it was 500*l.* and would make you happier, — (for *that*, Sir, is the thing) I should wish it you, said I, and think it short of your Merits. But pray, Sir, what is the Earl's Living valued at?

AT about 220*l.* Madam.

WELL then, reply'd I, very pertly, I believe now I have it.

MR. *Williams*, for Motives most excellently worthy of his Function, inclines to surrender up to Mr. *B.* his Living of 300*l. per Annum*, and to accept of the Earl's Living of 220*l. per Annum*. Dear Sir, I am going to be very bold; but under

*your*

*your* Condition nevertheless: — Let the Gentleman to whom you shall present the Living of *F.* allow 80 *l. per Annum* out of it to Mr. *Williams*, till the Earl's Favour shall make up the Difference to him, and no longer. — And — but I dare not name the Gentleman: — For how, dear Sir, were I to be so bold, shall I part with my Chaplain?

ADMIRABLE! most admirable! said Lord and Lady *Davers*, in the same Words. The Countess praised the Decision too; and Mr. *H.* with his Let me be hang'd, and his 'Fore Gads, — and such Exclamations natural to him, made *his* Plaudits.

MR. *Williams* said, He could wish with all his Heart it might be so; and Mr. *Adams* was so abash'd and surpris'd, that he could not hold up his Head — but Joy danced in his silent Countenance for all that.

MR. *B.* having hesitated a few Minutes, Lady *Davers* called out for his Objection or Consent, according to Condition; and he said, I cannot so soon determine as that prompt Slut did. I'll withdraw one Minute.

HE did so, as I found afterwards, to advise, like the considerate and genteel Spirit he possesses, with Mr. *Williams*, whom he beckon'd out, and to examine whether he was in *Earnest* willing to give it up, or had any body he was very desirous should succeed him; telling him, That, if he had, he thought himself obliged, in Return for his worthy Behaviour to him, to pay a particular Regard to his Recommendation. And so,



being answer'd as he desired, in they came together again.

BUT I should say, that his withdrawing with a very serious Aspect, made me afraid I had gone too far: And I said, before they came in, What *shall* I do, if I have incurred Mr. *B.*'s Anger by my Over-forwardness! — Did he not look displeas'd? Dear my Ladies, if he be so, plead for me, and I will withdraw, when he comes in; for I cannot stand his Anger: I have not been used to it.

NEVER fear, you charming *Pamela*, said my Lady; he can't be angry at any thing you say or do. But I wish, for the sake of what I have been Witness to, of Mr. *Adams*'s Behaviour and Modesty, that such a thing could be done for him.

MR. *Adams* bow'd, and said, O my good Ladies! 'tis too, too considerable a thing: — I cannot expect it — I do not — It would be Presumption, if I did.

JUST then re-enter'd Mr. *B.* and Mr. *Williams*, the first with a stately Air, the other with a more Peace-portending Smile on his Countenance.

BUT Mr. *B.* sitting down, Well, *Pamela*, said he, very gravely, I see, that Power is a dangerous thing in any Hand. — Sir, Sir! said I. — My dear Lady, (whispering to Lady *Davers*) I will withdraw, as I said I would! — And I was getting away as fast as I could: But he arose, and coming up to me, took my Hand, Why is my Charmer so soon frighten'd? said he, most kindly; and still more kindly, with a noble Air, pressed it to his Lips. — I must not carry my Jest too far upon  
a Mind

a Mind so apprehensive, as I otherwise might be inclined to do. And leading me to Mr. *Adams* and Mr. *Williams*, he said, taking Mr. *Williams*'s Hand with his Left, as he held mine in his Right, Your worthy Brother Clergyman, Mr. *Adams*, gives me Leave to confirm the Decision of my dear Spouse, and you are to thank her for the Living of *F.* upon the \* Condition she proposed; and may you give but as much Satisfaction *there*, as you have done in *this* Family, and as Mr. *Williams* has given to his Flock; and they will then, after a while, be pleas'd as much with your Ministry, as they have hitherto been with his.

MR. *Adams* trembled with Joy, and said, He could not tell how to bear this Excess of Goodness in us both: And his Countenance and his Eyes gave Testimony of a Gratitude that was too high for further Expression.

As for myself, You, my honoured and dear Friends, who know how much I am always raised (even out of myself, as I may say) when I am made the Dispenser of Acts of Bounty and Generosity to the Deserving; and who now, instead of incurring Blame, as I had apprehended, found myself applauded by every one, and most by the Gentleman whose Approbation I chiefly coveted to have: You, I say, will judge how greatly I must be delighted.

BUT I was still more affected, when Mr. *B.* directing himself to me, and to Mr. *Williams*, at the same time, was pleased to say, Here, my

\* This Condition Mr. *Williams* generously renounced afterwards, lest it should have a Simoniackal Appearance.

Dear,

Dear, you must thank this good Gentleman for enabling you to give such a shining Proof of your Excellence : And whenever I put Power into your Hands for the future, act but as you have now done, and it will be impossible, that I should have any Choice or Will but Yours.

O SIR, said I, pressing his Hand with my Lips, forgetting how many Witnesses I had of my grateful Fondness, How shall I, oppressed with your Goodness, in such a signal Instance as this, find Words equal to the Gratitude of my Heart! — But here, patting my Bosom, just here they stick ; and I cannot —

AND indeed I could say no more : And Mr. *B.* in the Delicacy of his Apprehensiveness for me, led me into the next Parlour, and placing himself by me on the Settee, said, Take care, my best Beloved, that the Joy which overflows your dear Heart, for having done a beneficent Action to a deserving Gentleman, does not affect you too much.

MY Lady *Davers* followed us : Where is my Angelick Sister ? said she. I have a Share in her next to yourself, my noble Brother : And clasping me to her generous Bosom, she ran over with Expressions of Favour to me, in a Style and Words, which would suffer, were I to endeavour to repeat them,

COFFEE being ready, we all Three returned to the Company. My Lord *Davers* was pleased to make me a great many fine Compliments, and so did Mr. *H.* after his Manner. But the Countess exceeded *herself* in Goodness.

MR. *Wil-*



MR. *Williams* seemed so pleased, or, rather, so elated with the deserved Acceptation his worthy Conduct had met with, that it shew'd he was far from repenting at the generous Turn the Matter had taken, in favour of Mr. *Adams*: On the contrary, he congratulated him upon it, telling him, He would introduce him, when his generous Patron thought proper, to his new Parishioners, and would read Prayers for him at his first Preaching. And I think, Mr. *Adams*, said he, since this happy Affair has been brought about from the Conversation upon Dispensations, you and I, both by our Examples and our Arguments, must, on all Occasions, discredit that Practice; since, as my Lady has observed, God's Providence is a better Reliance than the richest Benefice in *England*; and since, as her Ladyship has also observed, we ought not to look beyond a happy Competency, as if in *this Life only we had Hope*.

MY Lady, said Mr. *Adams*, has given me many Lessons, relating to different Parts of my Duty, both as a Christian and a Clergyman, that will not only furnish me with Rules for my future Conduct, but with Subjects for the best Sermons I shall ever be able to compose.

MR. *B.* was pleased to say, It is a Rule with me, not to leave till To-morrow what can be done To-day: And when, my Dear, do you propose to dispense with Mr. *Adams's* good Offices in your Family? Or did you intend to induce him to go to Town with us?

I HAD

I HAD not propos'd any thing, Sir, as to that; for I had not asked your kind Direction: But the good Dean will supply us, I doubt not; and when we set out for *London*, Mr. *Adams* will be at full Liberty, with his worthy Friend Mr. *Williams*, to pursue the happy Scheme, which your Goodness has permitted to take Effect.

MR. *Adams*, my Dear, who came so lately from the University, can, perhaps, recommend such another young Gentleman as himself, to perform the Functions *he* used to perform in your Family.

I LOOKED, it seems, a little grave, and Mr. *B.* said, What have you to offer, *Pamela*? What have I said amiss?

A MISS! dear Sir! —

AY, and dear Madam, too! I see by your bashful Seriousness, in place of that smiling Approbation which you always shew, when I utter any thing you *intirely* approve, that I have said something which would rather meet with your Acquiescence, than Choice. So, as I have often told you, none of your Reserves! And never *hesitate* to me your Consent in any thing, while you are sure, I will conform to your Wishes, or pursue my own Liking, as *either* shall appear reasonable to me, when I have heard *your* Reasons.

WHY then, dear Sir, what I had presumed to think, but I submit it to your better Judgment, was, Whether, since the Gentleman who is so kind as to assist us in our Family Devotions,  
in

in some measure acts in the Province of the worthy Dean, it were not right, that our own Parish Minister, whether here or in *London*, should name, or at least approve *our* naming, the Gentleman?

W H Y could not I have thought of that, as well as you, Sauce-box? Lady *Davers*, I'm intirely on your Side: I think she deserves a Slap now from us both.

I'LL forgive her, said my Lady, since I find her Sentiments and Actions as much a Reproof to others as to me.

M R. *Williams*, did you ever think, said Mr. *B.* it would have come to this? Did you ever know such a saucy Girl in your Life? — Already to give herself these reproaching Airs?

No, never, if your Honour is pleased to call the most excellent Lady in the World by such a Name, nor any body else!

P A M E L A, I charge you, said the dear Gentleman, if you *study* for it, be sometimes in the Wrong, that one may not always be taking Lessons from such an Assurance; but, in our Turns, have something to teach *you*.

T H E N, dear Sir, said I, must I not be a strange Creature? For how, when you, and my good Ladies, are continually giving me such charming Examples, can I do a wrong thing?

M R. *H.* said, Let him *be hang'd*, if he would not marry, as soon as ever he could get any body to have him.

F O O L I S H Fellow! said Lady *Davers*, dost think that thou'lt meet with such a Wife as that, when thou marriest?

W H Y



WHY not, Madam? — For if I am not so good as Mr. *B.* now is, I have not been so bad neither as he was formerly; — Excuse me, Sir: — And so I may stand a Chance.

A CHANCE! said my Lady — that's like thee. — Didst ever hear of such a one as she?

I NEVER, said he, and fell a laughing, *saw* such a one, I own. And take *that*, my good Lady, for calling me *foolish Fellow*.

THERE'S not the Reproach in thy Answer that thou intendest, except to thy own grinning Insolence, said her Ladyship, (severe enough, but smiling) that makes thee think that a Reflection, which is none in this Case.

EGAD, Madam, you're always hard upon me! I can say nothing to please you. While every body else gives and receives Compliments, I can come in for nothing but *foolish Fellow* with your Ladyship.

NEPHEW, said my Lord, laughing, I think you come in for a large Part, and a facetious one too: For when you're present, and Conversation takes a serious Turn, you make an excellent Character to set us all a laughing.

HE got up, and bow'd very low: I thank your Lordship. — You might as well have called me a Jack-pudden in plain Words; — but then I would have looked upon you all as so many Mountebanks! — There I have you! said he, and fell a laughing.

THE Countess, shuddering, said, Dear, dear Mr. *H.* be silent, I beseech you, whenever we  
are

are serious: For you tear one from the Feast of Souls to the Froth of Bodies.

I HOPE, Miss, you will forgive me for being so tedious on the foregoing Subject, and its most agreeable Conclusion. It is an important one, because several Persons, as Conferrers or Receivers, have found their Pleasure and Account in it; and it would be well, if Conversation were often attended with like happy Consequences. I have one Merit to plead in behalf even of my Prolixity; That in reciting the delightful Conferences I have the Pleasure of holding with our noble Guests, and Mr. B. I am careful not to write twice upon one Topick; altho' several which I omit, may be more worthy of your Notice, than those I give; so that you have as much Variety from me, as the Nature of the Facts and Cases will admit of.

BUT here I will conclude, having a very different Subject, as a Proof of what I have advanc'd, to touch in my next. Till when, I am

*Your most affectionate and faithful*

P. B.

---

## L E T T E R XXXIII.

*My dear Miss,*

I NOW proceed with my Journal, which I brought down to *Tuesday* Evening; and of course I begin with

*W E D-*

## W E D N E S D A Y

TOWARDS the Evening came Sir *Jacob Swynford*, on Horseback, attended by Two Servants in Liveries. I was abroad; for I had got Leave for a whole Afternoon, attended by my *Polly*; which Time I passed in visiting no less than Four several poor sick Families, whose Hearts I made glad. But I should be too tedious, were I to give you the Particulars; and besides, I have a brief List of Cases, which, when you'll favour me with your Company, I may shew you; for I have obliged myself\*, tho' not desired, to keep an Account of what I do with no less than 200*l.* a Year, that Mr. *B.* allows me to expend in Acts of Charity and Benevolence.

LADY *Davers* told me afterwards, that Sir *Jacob* carried it mighty stiff and formal, when he alighted. He strutted about the Court-yard in his Boots, with his Whip in his Hand; and tho' her Ladyship went to the great Door, in order to welcome him, he turn'd short, and, whistling, followed the Groom into the Stable, as if he had been at an Inn; only, instead of taking off his Hat, pulling its broad Brim over his Eyes, for a Compliment. In she went in a Pet, as she says, saying to the Countess, A surly Brute he always was! *My* Uncle! He's more of a Hostler than a Gentleman: I'm resolv'd I'll not stir to meet him again. And yet the Wretch loves

\* See Vol. II. p. 393, 394.



Respect from others, tho' he never practises common Civility himself.

THE Countess said, She was glad he was come ; for she lov'd to divert herself with such odd Characters now-and-then.

AND now let me give you a short Description of him as I found him, when I came in, that you may the better conceive what sort of a Gentleman he is.

HE is about Sixty-five Years of Age, a coarse, strong, big-bon'd Gentleman, with large irregular Features ; he has a haughty supercilious Look, a swaggering Gait, and a Person not at all bespeaking one's Favour in behalf of his Mind ; and his Mind, as you shall hear by-and-by, not clearing up those Prepossessions in his Disfavour, with which his Person and Features at first strike one. His Voice is big and surly ; his Eyes little and fiery ; his Mouth large, with yellow and blackish Stumps of Teeth, what are left of which being broken off to a tolerably regular Height, look'd as if they were ground down to his many-coloured Gums, by constant Use. But with all these Imperfections, he has an Air that sets him somewhat above the mere Vulgar, and such as makes one think, that half his Disadvantages are rather owing to his own haughty Humour, than to Nature : For he seems to be a perfect Tyrant at first Sight, a Man used to prescribe, and not to be prescribed to ; and has the Advantage of a shrewd penetrating Look, which yet, methinks, seems rather acquired than natural.

AFTER he had seen his Horses well-serv'd, and put on an old-fashion'd Gold-button'd Coat, which by its Freshness shew'd he had been very chary of it, a better Wig, but in stiff Buckle, and a long Sword, stuck stiffly, as if thro' his Coat-Lappets; in he came, and with an imperious Air entering the Parlour, What, nobody come to meet me! said he; and saluting her Ladyship, How do you do, Niece? and look'd about haughtily, she says, as if he expected to see me.

MY Lady, presenting the Countess, said, The Countess of C. Sir *Jacob*! — O, cry Mercy! said he — Your most obedient humble Servant, Madam; I hope his Lordship is well?

AT your Service, Sir *Jacob*.

I WISH he was, said he, bluntly; he should not have voted as he did last Sessions, I can tell you that.

WHY, Sir *Jacob*, said she, *Servants*, in this free Kingdom, don't always do as their *Masters* would have 'em.

MINE do, I can tell you that, Madam.

RIGHT or wrong, Sir *Jacob*?

It can't be wrong, if I command them.

WHY, truly, Sir *Jacob*, there's many a private Gentleman carries it higher to a Servant, than he cares his *Prince* should to him: But I thought, till now, 'twas the King only could do no Wrong.

BUT, Madam, I always take care to be right.

A GOOD Reason — because, I dare say, you never think you can be in the wrong.

YOUR Ladyship should spare me: I'm but just come off a Journey. Let me turn myself about,  
and

and I'll be up with you, never fear, Madam. But where's my Nephew, Lady *Davers*? And where's your Lord? I was told you were all here, and young *H.* too, upon a very extraordinary Occasion; so I was willing to see how Causes went among you, and what you were about. It will be long enough before you come to see me.

MY Brother, and Lord *Davers*, and Mr. *H.* are all rid out together.

WELL, Niece, strutting, with his Hands behind him, and his Head held up — Ha! — He has made a fine Kettle on't, — han't he! — 'Sblood, (that was his profligate Word) that ever such a Rake should be so caught! — They tell me, she's plaguy cunning, and quite smart and handsome. — But I wish his Father were living. — Yet what could he have done? Your Brother was always unmanageable; I wish he'd been my Son; — by my Faith I do! — What! I hope, Niece, he locks up his Baby, while you're here? You don't keep her Company, do you?

YES, Sir *Jacob*, I do; and you'll not scruple to do so too, when you see her.

WHY, thou countenancest him in his Folly, Child; I'd a better Opinion of thy Spirit! Thou married to a Lord, and thy Brother to a — Canst tell me what, *Barbara*? If thou canst, pr'ythee do.

TO an Angel; and so you'll say, presently.

WHAT, dost think I shall look thro' *his* foolish Eyes? — What a Disgrace to a Family antienter than the Conquest! — *O Tempora! O Mores!* What will this World come to!



THE Countess was diverted with this odd Gentleman; but run on in my Praise, for fear he should say some rude things to me when I came in, and Lady *Davers* seconded her. But all, it seems, signified nothing. He would tell us both his Mind, let the young Whelp (that was his Word) take it as he would. And pray, said he, can't I see this fine Body before he comes in? Let me but turn her round two or three times, and ask her a Question or two; and by her Answers I shall know what to think of her in a Twinkling.

SHE is gone to take a little Airing, Sir *Jacob*, and won't be back till Supper-time.

SUPPER-TIME! Why, she is not to sit down at Table, is she? If she does, I won't; that's positive. — But now you talk of Supper, what have you? — I must have a boil'd Chicken, and shall eat it all myself. — Who's House-keeper now? I suppose all's turn'd upside-down.

No, there is not One new Servant, except a Girl that waits upon her own Person: All the old Servants are continued.

THAT's much! these Creatures generally take as great State upon 'em as a born Lady: And they are in the right. If they can make the Man stoop to the great Point, they'll hold his Nose to the Grind-stone, never fear; and all the little ones come about in course.

WELL, Sir *Jacob*, when you see her, you'll alter your Mind.

NEVER, never; that's positive.

AY,

A Y, Sir *Jacob*, I was as positive as you once; but I love her now as well as if she was my own Sister.

O HIDEOUS, hideous!--- Tell it not in *Gath*; for thou'lt make the Daughters of *Philistia* triumph! All the Fools that he has made wherever he has travel'd, will clap their Hands at him, and at you too, if you talk at this rate. — But let me speak to Mrs. *Jervis*, if she be here: I'll order my own Supper.

So he went out, saying, He knew the House, tho' in a better Mistress's Days.

THE Countess said, If Mr. *B.* kept his Temper, as she hoped he would, there would be good Diversion with the old Gentleman.

O YES, said my Lady, my Brother will, I dare say. He despises the surly Brute too much to be angry with him, let him say what he will.

HE went, and talked a great deal against me, to Mrs. *Jervis*. You may guess, Miss, that she launched out in my Praises; and he was offended at her, and said, Woman! Woman! forbear these ill-tim'd Praises: Her Birth's a Disgrace to our Family. What! my Sister's Waiting-maid, taken upon Charity! — I cannot bear it.

I MENTION all these things, as the Ladies afterwards told them to me, because it shall prepare you to judge what a fine Time I was likely to have of it.

WHEN Mr. *B.* and my Lord *Davers*, and Mr. *H.* came home, which they did about half an Hour after Six, they were told who was there, just as they entered the Parlour; and Mr. *B.*

smiled at Lord *Davers*, and entering, Sir *Jacob*, said he, Welcome to *Bedfordshire*! And thrice Welcome to this House! I rejoice to see you.

My Lady says, Never was so odd a Figure, as the old Baronet made, when thus accosted. He stood up indeed; but as Mr. *B.* offer'd to take his Hand, he put 'em both behind him — Not that you know of, Sir! — And then looking up at his Face, and down at his Feet, three or four times, successively — Are you my Brother's Son? That very individual Son, that your good Father used to boast of, and say, That for handsome Person, true Courage, noble Mind, was not to be matched in any Three Counties in *England*?

THE very same, dear Sir, that my honoured Father's Partiality used to think he never praised enough.

AND what is all of it come to at last! — He paid well, did he not? to teach you to Know the World! — Ad's-life, Nephew! hadst thou been a born Fool, or a raw Greenhead, or a doating Greyhead —

WHAT then, Sir *Jacob*?

WHAT then! — Why, then, thou wouldst have done just as thou hast done!

COME, come, Sir *Jacob*, you know not my Inducements. You know not what an Angel I have in Person and Mind. Your Eyes shall by-and-by be blest with a Sight of her: Your Ears with hearing her speak: — And then you'll call all you have said, Profanation.

WHAT is it I hear! What is it I hear! — You talk in the Language of Romance; and from the House.



House-keeper to the Head of the House, you're all stark-staring mad. By my Soul, Nephew, I wish, for thy own Credit, thou wert. — But what signifies Wishing! — I hope you'll not bring your Syren into my Company.

YES, I will, Sir, because I love to give you Pleasure. And say not a Word more, for your own sake, till you see her — You'll have the less to unsay, Sir *Jacob*, and the less to repent of.

THE Devil! — I'm in an enchanted Castle, that's certain. What a Plague has this little Witch done to you all? — And how did she bring it about?

THE Ladies and Lord *Davers* laugh'd, it seems; and Mr. *B.* begging him to sit down, and answer him some Family Questions, he said, (for it seems he is very captious at times) What a Devil! am I to be laugh'd at? Lord *Davers*, I hope *you're* not bewitch'd too, are you?

INDEED, Sir *Jacob*, I am. My Sister *B.* is my Doating-piece.

WHEW! whistled he with a wild Stare: And how is it with *you*, Youngster?

WITH me, Sir *Jacob*? said Mr. *H.* I'd give all I'm worth in the World, and ever shall be worth, for such another Wife.

HE ran to the Window, and throwing up the Sash, looking into the Court-yard, said, Hollo---- So-ho — Groom — *Jack* — *Jonas* — Get me my Horse! — I'll keep no such Company! — I'll be gone! Why, *Jonas*! calling again.

YOU'RE not in Earnest, Sir *Jacob*, said Mr. *B.*

I AM, by my Soul! — I'll away to the Village this Night! Why, you're all upon the High-

Game! — I'll — But who comes here? — For just at that Instant, the Chariot brought me into the Court-yard — Who's this? Who is she?

ONE of *my* Daughters, started up the Countess, my youngest Daughter *Jenny*! — She's the Pride of my Family, Sir *Jacob*!

By my Soul, said he, I was running! for I thought it was the grand Inchantress.

OUR step Lady *Davers* to me: Dear *Pamela*, said she, humour all that's said to you. Here's Sir *Jacob* come. You're the Countess of C —'s youngest Daughter *Jenny* — That's your Cue.

AH, but Madam, said I, Lady *Jenny* is not marry'd — looking (before I thought) on a Circumstance that I think too much of sometimes, tho' I carry it off as well as I can.

SHE laugh'd at my Exception: Come, Lady *Jenny*, said she, (for I just then enter'd the great Door) I hope you've had a fine Airing?

A VERY pretty one, Madam, said I, as I enter'd the Parlour. This is a pleasant Country, Lady *Davers*. — (*Wink when I'm wrong, whisper'd I —*) Where's Mrs. B.? — Then, as seeing a strange Gentleman, I started half-back, into a more reserv'd Air; and made him a low Court'sy.

SIR *Jacob* look'd as if he did not know what to think of it, now at me, now at Mr. B. — But the dear Gentleman put him quite out of Doubt, by taking my Hand: Well, Lady *Jenny*, did you meet my Fugitive in your Tour?

No, Mr. B. reply'd I. Did she go my Way? I told you, I would keep the great Road.

LADY

LADY *Jenny C* —, said Mr. *B.* presenting me to his Uncle. A charming Creature! added he: Have you not a Son worthy of such an Alliance?

A Y, marry, Nephew, this is a Lady indeed! Why, the Plague, whisper'd he, could you not have pitch'd your Tent here? — Miss, by your Leave: And saluting me, turn'd to the Countess: By my Soul, Madam, you've a charming Daughter! Had my rash Nephew seen this lovely Creature, and you'd have condescended, he'd never have stoop'd to the Cottage, as he has done.

Y O U' R E right, Sir *Jacob*, return'd Mr. *B.*; but I always ran too fast for my Fortune: Yet, these Ladies of Family never bring out their Jewels into Batchelors Company; and when, too late, we see what we've mis'd, we are vex'd at our Precipitation.

W E L L said, however, Boy. By my Soul, I wish thee Repentance, tho' 'tis out of thy Power to amend. Be that one of thy Curses, when thou seest this Lady; as I make no doubt it is.

A G A I N taking my Hand, and surveying me from Head to Foot, and turning me round, which, it seems, is a mighty Practice with him to a Stranger-Lady, (and a modest one too, you'll say, Miss) — Why, truly, you're a charming Creature, Miss — Lady *Jenny*, I would say — By your Leave, once more! — Upon my Soul, my Lady Countess, she is a Charmer — But — But — staring at me, Are you marry'd, Madam?

I L O O K'D a little silly; and my new Mamma came up to me, and took my Hand: Why,

*Jenny,*



*Jenny*, you are dress'd oddly To-day ! — What a Hoop you wear ! It makes you look I can't tell how !

UPON my Soul, Madam, I thought so ; what signifies Lying ? — But 'tis only the Hoop, I see. — Really and truly, Lady *Jenny*, your Hoop is enough to make half a Hundred of our Sex despair, for fear you should be marry'd. I thought it was something ! Few Ladies escape my Notice. I always kept a good Look-out ; for I have Two Daughters of my own : But 'tis the Hoop, I see plainly enough. You are so slender every-where but *here* ; putting his Hand upon my Hip, which quite dash'd me ; and I retir'd behind my Lady Countess's Chair.

FIE, Sir *Jacob* ! said Mr. *B.* ; before us young Gentlemen, to take such Liberties with a Maiden Lady ! — You give a bad Example.

HANG him that sets you a bad Example, Nephew. But I see you're right ; I see Lady *Jenny*'s a Maiden Lady, or she would not have been so shamefac'd. I'll swear for her, on Occasion. Ha, ha, ha ---- I'm sure, repeated he, she's a Maiden ---- For our Sex give the married Ladies a freer Air in a trice.

How, Sir *Jacob* ! said Lady *Davers*.

O FIE ! said the Countess. — Can't you praise the Maiden Ladies, but at the Expence of the marry'd ones ? What do you see of Freedom in me ?

OR in me ? said Lady *Davers*.

NAY, for that Matter, you are very well, Ladies, I must needs say. — But will you pretend

tend to blush with that Virgin Rose? — Will ye? — Od's my Life, Miss, — Lady *Jenny*, I would say, taking my Hand, come from behind your Mamma's Chair, and you Two Ladies stand up now together. — There, so you do — Why now, Blush for Blush, and Lady *Jenny* shall be Three to One, and a deeper Crimson by half. Look you there, look you there else! A Hundred Guineas to One against the Field. — Then stamping with One Foot, and lifting up his Hands and Eyes — O Christ! Lady *Jenny* has it all to nothing — By my Soul, she has — Ha, ha, ha. — You may well sit down both of you; but you're a Blush too late, I can tell ye that. — Well hast thou done, Lady *Jenny*, tapping my Shoulder with his rough Paw.

I WAS hastening away, and he said, But let's see you again, Miss; for now I will stay, if they bring nobody else. — And away I went; for I was quite out of Countenance. — What a strange Creature, thought I, is this?

SUPPER being near ready, he continued calling out for Lady *Jenny*; for, he said, the Sight of her did him good. But he was resolv'd he would not sit down at Table with *somebody else*.

THE Countess said, She would fetch her Daughter; and stepping out, return'd, saying, Mrs. *B.* understands, that Sir *Jacob* is here, and that he does not chuse to see her: So she begs to to be excus'd; and my *Jenny* and she desire to sup together.

THE very worst Tidings I have heard this Twelvemonth. Why, Nephew, let your Girl  
sup

sup with any body, so we may have Lady *Jenny* back with us.

I KNOW, said the Countess, (who was desirous to see how far he would carry it) *Jenny* won't leave Mrs. *B.* So, if you see *one*, you must see *t'other*.

NAY, then, if it must be so, I must sit down contented. — But yet, I should be glad to see Lady *Jenny*, that I should. But I will not sit down at Table with Mr. *B.*'s Girl — that's positive.

WELL, well, let them sup together, and there's an End of it, said Mr. *B.* — I see my Uncle has as good a Judgment as any body of fine Ladies (*That I have, Nephew*): — But he can't forego his Humour, in Compliment to the finest Lady in *England*.

CONSIDER, Nephew, consider — 'Tis not thy doing a foolish Thing, and calling a Girl Wife, shall cram a Niece down my Throat, that's positive. The Moment thy Girl comes down to take place of these Ladies, I am gone, that's most certain.

WELL then, shall I go up, and oblige *Pamela* to sup by herself, and persuade Lady *Jenny* to come down to us?

WITH all my Soul, Nephew — A good Motion. — But, *Pamela* — did you say? — A *queer* sort of Name! I have heard of it somewhere! — Is it a Christian or a Pagan Name? — Linsey-wolfsey — half one, half *t'other* — like thy Girl — Ha, ha, ha.

LET



LET me be *hang'd*, whisper'd Mr. *H.* to his Aunt, if Sir *Jacob* has not a Power of Wit; tho' he's so whimsical with it. I like him much.

BUT hark-ye, Nephew, said Sir *Jacob*, as Mr. *B.* was going out of the Parlour — one Word with you: Don't fob upon us your Girl with the Pagan Name, for Lady *Jenny*. I have set a Mark upon her, and should know her from a Thousand, altho' she had chang'd her Hoop. — Then he laugh'd again, and said, He hoped Lady *Jenny* would come — And come without any body with her — But I smell a Plot, said he — By my Soul I won't stay, if they both come together. I won't be put upon — But here comes One or Both — Where's my Whip? — I'll go.

INDEED Mr. *B.* I had rather have staid with Mrs. *B.* — said I, as I enter'd — as he had bid me.

'TIS she, 'tis she! — You've nobody behind you? — No, she han't. — Why now, Nephew, you're right. I was afraid you'd have put a Trick upon me. — You'd *rather*, repeated he to me, have stay'd with Mrs. *B.*! — Yes, I warrant. — But you shall be plac'd in better Company, my dear Child.

SISTER, said Mr. *B.* will you be pleased to take that Chair; for *Pamela* does not chuse to give my Uncle Disgust, who so seldom comes to see us.

My Lady took the upper End of the Table, and I sat next below my new Mamma: So, *Jenny*, said she, How have you left Mrs. *B.*?

A LITTLE concern'd: — But she was the easier, as Mr. *B.* himself desir'd I'd come down.

MY

MY Lord *Davers* sat next me, and Sir *Jacob* said, Shall I beg a Favour of you, my Lord; to let me sit next to Lady *Jenny*?

MR. *B.* said, Won't it be better to sit over-against her, Uncle?

AY, that's right. I'faith, Nephew, thou know'st what's right. Well, so I will. — He accordingly removed his Seat, and I was very glad of it; for tho' I was sure to be star'd at sufficiently by him, yet I was afraid, if he sat next me, he would not keep his Hands off my Hoop.

HE run on a deal in my Praises, after his manner; but so rough at times, that he gave me Pain; and I was under a Difficulty too, lest he should observe my Ring: But he stared so much in my Face, that That escap'd his Notice.

AFTER Supper, the Gentlemen sat down to their Bottle, and the Ladies and I withdrew; and about Twelve they broke up, Sir *Jacob* talking of nothing but Lady *Jenny*, and wishing Mr. *B.* had marry'd so happily as with such a charming Creature; One, he said, that carried Tokens of her high Birth in her Face, and whose every Feature, and Look, shew'd her to be nobly descended.

THEY let him go to-bed with his Mistake: But the Countess said next Morning, She thought she never saw a greater Instance of stupid Pride, and Churlishness; and she should be sick of the Advantage of Birth or Ancestry, if this was the natural Fruit of it. For a Man, said her Ladyship, to come to his Nephew's House, and to suffer the Mistress of it to be closeted up, (as he thinks)  
and

and not permitted to appear, in order to humour his absurd and brutal Insolence, and to behave as he has done; is such a Ridicule upon the Pride of Descent, that I shall think of it as long as I live. O Mrs. *B.* said she, what Advantages have you over every one who sees you; but most over those who pretend to treat you unworthily!

I EXPECT to be called to Breakfast every Minute, and shall then, perhaps, see how this Matter will end. I wish, when it is revealed, he is not in a Fury, and don't think himself imposed on. I fear it won't go off so well as I wish; for every body seems to be grave, and angry at Sir *Jacob*.

---

## T H U R S D A Y.

I NOW proceed with my Tale. At Breakfast-time, when every one was sat, and a Chair left for me, Sir *Jacob* began to call out for Lady *Jenny*. But, said he, I'll have none of your Girl, Nephew, altho' the Chair at the Tea-Table is left for somebody.

No, said Mr. *B.* we'll get Lady *Jenny* to supply Mrs. *B.*'s Place, since you don't care to see her.

W I T H all my Heart, reply'd he,

BUT, Uncle, said Mr. *B.* have you really no Desire, no Curiosity, to see the Girl I have marry'd?

No, none at all, by my Soul.

J U S T then I came in, and paying my Compliments to the Company, and to Sir *Jacob*,  
Shall



Shall I, said I, supply Mrs. *B.*'s Place, in her Absence? And down I sat.

AFTER Breakfast, and the Servants were withdrawn; Lady *Jenny*, said Lady *Davers*, you are a young Lady, who have all the Advantages of Birth and Descent, and some of the best Blood in the Kingdom runs in your Veins; and here Sir *Jacob Swynford* is your great Admirer: Cannot *you*, from whom it will come with a double Grace, convince him, that he does an unkind thing, at my Brother's House, to keep the Person my Brother has thought worthy of making the Mistress of it, out of Company? And let us know your Opinion, Whether my Brother himself does right, to comply with such an unreasonable Distaste?

WHY, how now, Lady *Davers*! This from you! I did not expect it!

MY Uncle, said Mr. *B.* is the only Person in the Kingdom that I would have humoured thus: And I made no doubt, when he saw how willing I was to oblige him in so high a Point, he would have acted a more generous Part than he has yet done. But, Lady *Jenny*, what say you to my Sister's Questions?

IF I must speak my Mind, reply'd I, I should take the Liberty to be very serious with Sir *Jacob*; and to say, That when a thing is done, and cannot be help'd, he should take care how he sows the Seeds of Indifference and Animosity between Man and Wife: And how he makes a Gentleman dissatisfy'd with his Choice, and perhaps unhappy as long as he lives.

NAY,

NAY, Miss, said he, if all are against me, and you, whose good Opinion I value more than all, you may e'en let the Girl come, and sit down, if you will. — If she is but half as pretty, and half as wise, and modest, as you, I shall, as it cannot be help'd, as you say, be ready to think better of the Matter. For 'tis a little hard, I must needs say, if she has hitherto appear'd before all the good Company, to have her kept out of the way on my Account.

REALLY, Sir *Jacob*, said the Countess, I have blush'd for you more than once, on this Occasion. But the Mistress of this House is *more* than half as wise, and modest, and lovely: And in hopes you will return me back some of the Blushes I have lent you, see *there*, in my Daughter *Jenny*, whom you have been so justly admiring, the Mistress of the House, and the Lady with the Pagan Name!

SIR *Jacob* sat aghast, looking at one, and at another, and at me, each in Turn, and then cast his Eyes on the Floor. — At last, up he got, and swore a sad Oath, And am I thus trick'd and bamboozled, that was his Word; am I? — There's no bearing this House, nor her Presence now, that's certain; and I'll be gone.

MR. *B.* looking at me, and nodding his Head towards Sir *Jacob*, as he was in a Flutter to be gone, I arose from my Chair, and went to him, and took his Hand: I hope, Sir *Jacob*, you will be able to bear *both*, when you shall see that there is no other Difference but that of Descent, between the supposed Lady *Jenny*,

whom you so kindly praised, and the Girl your dear Nephew has so much exalted.

LET me go, said he, I'm most confoundedly bit. — I cannot look you in the Face! — By my Soul I cannot! — For 'tis impossible you should forgive me.

INDEED it is not, Sir; you have done nothing but what I can forgive you for, if your dear Nephew can; for to him was the Wrong, if any, and I'm sure he can overlook it. — And for his sake, to the Uncle of so honoured a Gentleman, to the Brother of my late good Lady, I can, with a bent Knee, *thus*, ask your Blessing, and desire your Excuse, for joining to keep you in this Suspense.

BLESS you! ——— O Christ! said he, and stamp'd — Who can but bless you? And he kneeled down, and wrapp'd his Arms about me. But curse me, that was his strange Word, if ever I was so touch'd before!

MY dear Mr. *B.* for fear my Spirits should be too much affected, (for the rough Baronet, in his Transport, had bent me down lower than I kneeled) came to me, and held me by my Arm; but permitted Sir *Jacob* to raise me, only saying, How does my Angel? Now she has made this Conquest, she has completed all her Triumphs.

ANGEL did you call her? — By my Soul, I'm confounded with her Goodness, and her sweet Carriage! — Rise, and let me see if I can stand myself! — And, believe me, I am sorry I have acted so much like a Bear as I have done; and the more I think of it, the more I shall be ashamed

of



of myself. — And the Tears, as he spoke, ran down his rough Cheeks, which moved me a good deal; for, to see a Man with so hard a Countenance weep, was a touching Sight.

MR. *H.* putting his Handkerchief to his Eyes, his Aunt said, What's the Matter, *Jackey*? — The Matter! answer'd he; I don't know how the D—l 'tis — But here's strange Doings, as ever I knew — For here, Day after Day, one's ready to cry, without knowing whether it be for Joy or Sorrow! — What a Plague's the Matter with me, I wonder! — And out he went, the Two Ladies, whose charming Eyes, too, glisten'd with Pleasure, smiling at the Effect the Scene had upon Mr. *H.* and at what he said.

WELL, Madam, said Sir *Jacob*, approaching me; for I had sat down, but then stood up — You will forgive me; and from my Heart I wish you Joy. By my Soul I do — and saluted me — I could not have believed there had been such a Person breathing. I don't wonder at my Nephew's loving you! — And you call her Sister, Lady *Davers*, don't you? — If you do, I'll own her for my Niece.

DON'T I! — Yes, I do, said her Ladyship, coming to me, and am proud so to call her. And this I tell you, for *your* Comfort, tho' to *my own* Shame, that I used her worse than you have done, before I knew her Excellence; and have repented of it ever since.

I BOW'D to her Ladyship — and kissing her Hand — My dearest Lady, said I, you have made me such rich Amends since, that I am sure I

may say, *It was good for me, that I was afflicted.*

WHY, Nephew, she has the Fear of God, I perceive, before her Eyes too! I'm sure I've heard those Words. They are somewhere in the Scripture, I believe! — Why, who knows, but she may be a means to save your Soul? — Hay, you know!

AY, Sir *Jacob*. she'll be a means to save a Hundred Souls, and might go a great way to save yours, if you were to live with her but one Month.

WELL, but, Nephew, I hope *you* forgive me, too; for, now I think of it, I never knew you take any Matter so patiently in my Life.

I KNEW, said the dear Gentleman, that every Extravagance you insisted upon, was heightening my Charmer's Triumph, and increasing your own Contrition; and as I was not *indeed* depriv'd of her Company, I could bear with every thing you said or did — Yet, don't you remember, that I caution'd you, that the less you said against her, the less you'd have to unsay, and the less to repent of?

I DO; and let me ride out, and call myself to Account for all I have said against her, in her own Hearing; and when I can think of but one half, and how she has taken it, by my Soul, I believe 'twill make me *more* than half mad.

AT Dinner (when we had Mr. *Williams's* Company) the Baronet told me, He admir'd me now, as much as he did when he thought me Lady *Jenny*; but complain'd of the Trick put upon

upon him by us all, and seem'd now-and-then a little serious upon it.

HE took great Notice of the Dexterity which he imputed to me, in performing the Honours of the Table. And every now-and-then, he lifted up his Eyes, God take me! Very clever, by my Soul! — Why, Madam, you seem to me to be born to these Things! — I will be help'd by nobody but you — And you'll have a Task of it, I can tell you; for I have a whipping Stomach, and were there Fifty Dishes, I always taste of every one. And indeed *John* was in a manner wholly imploy'd, in going to and fro between the Baronet and me, for half an Hour together.

HE went from us afterwards to Mrs. *Fervis*, and made her answer him abundance of Questions about me, and how all these Matters had *come about*, as he phrased it; and returning, when we drank Coffee, said, I have been *confabbing*, that was his Word, with Mrs. *Fervis*, about you, Niece. By my Soul, I never heard the like! She tells me, You can play on the Harpsichord, and sing too: Will you let a body have a Tune or so? My *Mab* can play pretty well, and so can *Dolly*: I'm a Judge of Musick, and would fain hear you. I said, If he was a Judge, I should be afraid to play before him; but I would not be ask'd twice, when we had taken our Coffee.

ACCORDINGLY, he repeating his Request, I gave him a Tune, and, at his Desire, sung to it; Od's my Life, said he, you do it purely! — But I see where it is — My Girls have got *my* Fingers! And then he held both Hands out, and a fine



Pair of Paws shew'd he! — Plague on't! they touch Two Keys at once; but those slender and nimble Fingers, how they sweep along! My Eye can't follow 'em — Whew — whistled he — They are here and there, and every-where at once! — Why, Nephew, I believe you've put another Trick upon me. My Niece is certainly of Quality! And Report has not done her Justice. — One more Tune, one more Song — By my Faith, your Voice goes sweetly to your Fingers. 'Slife ——— I'll thrash my Jades ——— that was his polite Phrase, ——— when I come home. ——— Lady *Davers*, you know not the Money they have cost me to qualify them; and here is a mere Baby to them, out-does 'em by a Bar's Length, without any Expence at all bestow'd upon her. Go over that again — Confound me for a Puppy! I lost it by my Prating. — Ay, there you have it! — That's it! By my Soul, it is! Oh! that I could but dance as well as thou sing'st! I'd give you a Saraband, as old as I am.

AFTER Supper, we fell into a Conversation, of which I must give you some Account, because it was upon a Topick that Mr. *B.* has been blam'd for in his marrying me, and which has stuck by some of his Friends, even after they have, in Kindness to me, acquitted him in every other respect; and that is, *The Example that he has set to young Gentlemen of Family and Fortune to marry beneath them.*

It was begun by Sir *Jacob*, who said, I am in Love with my new Niece, that I am: But still, one thing sticks with me in this Affair; and that  
is,

is, What will become of Degree or Distinction' if this Practice of Gentlemens marrying their Mothers Waiting-maids (Excuse me, Madam) should come into Vogue? Already, young Ladies and young Gentlemen are too apt to be drawn away in this manner, and to disgrace their Families. We have too many Instances of this. You'll forgive me, both of you.

T H A T, said Lady *Davers*, is the only thing! I must needs say, Sir *Jacob* has hit upon the Point, that would make one wish this Example had not been set by a Gentleman of such an antient Family; till one comes to be acquainted with this dear Creature; and then every body thinks it ought not to be otherwise than it is.

A Y, *Pamela*, said Mr. *B.* what can you say to this? Cannot you defend me from this Charge? This is a Point that has been often objected to me: Try for one of your pretty Arguments in my Behalf.

I N D E E D, Sir, reply'd I, looking down, it becomes not me to say any thing to this.

B U T indeed it does, if you can: And I beg you'll help me to some Excuse, if you have any at hand.

W O N ' T you, Sir, dispense with me, on this Occasion? Indeed I know not what to say. Indeed I should not, if I may judge for myself, speak one *Word* to this Subject. — For it is my absolute Opinion, that Degrees in general should be kept up; altho' I must always deem the present Case a happy Exception to the Rule.

MR. *B.* looking as if he still expected I should say something, Won't you, Sir, dispense with me? repeated I: Indeed I should not speak to this Point, if I may be my own Judge.

I ALWAYS intend, my Dear, you shall judge for yourself: And you know, I seldom urge you farther, when you use those Words. But if you have any thing upon your Mind to say, let's have it: For your Arguments are always new and unborrow'd.

I WOULD then, if I *must*, Sir, ask, If there be not a Nation, or if there has not been a Law in some Nation, That whenever a young Gentleman, be *his* Degree what it would, has seduced a poor Creature, be *her* Degree what it would, obliges the Gentleman to marry that unhappy Person?

I THINK there is such a Law in some Country, I can't tell where, said Sir *Jacob*.

AND do you think, Sir, whether it be so, or not, that it is equitable it should be so?

YES, by my Troth — Tho', I must needs own, if it were so in *England*, many Men, that I know, would not have the Wives they now have.

YOU speak to your Knowledge, I doubt not, Sir *Jacob*? said Mr. *B.*

WHY, indeed — Why, truly — I don't know but I do.

ALL then, said I, that I would infer is, Whether another Law would not be a still more just and equitable one, that the Gentleman who is repuls'd, from a Principle of Virtue and Honour, should not be censur'd, for marrying a Person  
he



he could *not* seduce? And whether it is not more for both their Honours, if he does? inasmuch as it is nobler to reward a Virtue, than to repair a Shame, were that Shame to be repair'd by Matrimony; which I take the Liberty to doubt. But I beg Pardon; you commanded me, Sir — Else this Subject should not have found a Speaker to it, in me.

THIS is admirably said — By my Soul, it is, said Sir *Jacob*.

BUT yet this comes not up to the Objection, said Mr. *B*. The setting an Example to Waiting-maids to aspire, and to young Gentlemen to descend. And I will enter into the Subject myself; and the rather, because, as I go along, I will give Sir *Jacob* a faint Sketch of the Merit and Character of my *Pamela*, of which he cannot be so well inform'd, as he has been of the Disgrace, which he imagin'd I had brought upon myself by marrying her.

IN order to this, give me Leave to say, That I think it necessary, that as well those Persons who are afraid the Example should be taken, as those who are inclin'd to follow it, should take *all* the material Parts of it into their Consideration: Otherwise, I think the Precedent may be justly cleared; and the Fears of the one be judged groundless, and the Plea of the other but a Pretence, in order to cover a Folly, into which they would have fallen, whether they had this Example or not.

FOR Instance: In order to lay Claim to the Excuses which my Conduct, if I may suppose it  
of

of Force enough to do either Good or Hurt, will furnish, it is necessary,

THAT the Object of their Wish should be a Girl of exquisite Beauty, (and that not only in their own blinded and partial Judgments, but in the Opinion of *every one* who sees her, Friend or Foe) in order to justify the Force which the *first* Attractions have upon him.

THAT she be descended of honest and conscientious, tho' poor and obscure Parents ; who having preserved their Integrity, thro' great Trials and Afflictions, have, by their Examples, as well as Precepts, laid deep in the Girl's Mind the Foundations of Piety and Virtue.

IT is necessary, that to the Charms of Person, this Waiting - maid should have an humble, teachable Mind, fine natural Parts, a sprightly, yet inoffensive Wit, a Temper so excellent, and a Judgment so solid, as should promise for her, (by the Love and Esteem these Qualities should attract to herself from her Fellow-servants, superior and inferior) that she would become a higher Station, and be respected in it.

IT is necessary, that after so good a Foundation laid by her Parents, she should have all the Advantages of Female Education confer'd upon her: The Example of an excellent Lady, improving and building upon so worthy a Foundation : A Capacity surprisingly ready to take in all that is taught her : An Attention, Assiduity, and Diligence almost peculiar to herself, at her Time of Life ; insomuch as, at Fifteen or Sixteen Years of Age, to be able to vie with any young Ladies of Rank,

Rank, as well in the natural Genteelness of her Person, as in her Acquirements: And that in nothing but her *Humility*, she should manifest any Difference between herself and the High-born.

It will be necessary, moreover, that she should have a Mind above Temptation; that she should resist the *Offers* and *Menaces* of one upon whom all her worldly Happiness seemed to depend; the Son of a Lady to whom she owed the greatest Obligations; a Person whom she did not *hate*, but greatly *feared*, and whom her grateful Heart would have been *glad* to oblige; and who sought to prevail over her Virtue, by all the Inducements that could be thought of, to *attract* a young unexperienced Virgin, at one time, or to *frighten* her, at another, into his Purposes; who offer'd her high, very high Terms, her Circumstances consider'd, as well for herself, as for Parents she loved better than herself, whose Circumstances at the same time were low and distressful.

YET to all these *Offers* and *Menaces*, that she should be able to answer in such Words as these, which will always dwell upon my Memory: — “ \* I reject your Proposals with all my Soul.” — “ May GOD desert me, whenever I make worldly Grandeur my chiefest Good!” — “ I know I am in your Power; I dread your Will to ruin me is as great as your Power.” — “ Yet, will I dare to tell you, I will make no Free-will Offering of my Virtue.

\* See Vol. I. p. 315, & seq.



“ All that I *can* do, poor as it is, I *will* do, to  
 “ shew you, that my Will bore no Part in the  
 “ Violation of me.” — And when future Marriage was intimated to her, to induce her to yield, to be able to answer, “ The Moment I  
 “ yield to your Proposals, there is an End of all  
 “ Merit, if now I have any. — And I should  
 “ be so far from *expecting* such an Honour, that  
 “ I will pronounce, I should be most *unworthy*  
 “ of it.”

IF, I say, my dear Friends, such a Girl can be found, thus beautifully attractive in *every one's* Eye, and not partially so only in a young Gentleman's *own*; and after that, (what good Persons would infinitely prefer to Beauty) thus piously principled; thus genteelly educated and accomplished; thus brilliantly witty; thus prudent, modest, generous, undesigning; and having been thus tempted, thus try'd, by the Man she hated not, pursued, (not intriguingly pursuing) be thus inflexibly virtuous, and Proof against Temptation; Let her reform her Libertine, and let him marry her: And were he of princely Extraction, I dare answer for it, that no *Two* Princes in *One* Age, take the World through, would be in Danger. For, altho' I am sensible it is not to my Credit, I will say, that I never met with a Repulse, nor a Conduct, like this; and yet I never sunk very low, for the Subjects of my Attempts, either at home or abroad.

THESE are obvious Inferences, added the dear Gentleman, and not Refinements upon my *Pamela's* Story; and if the Gentleman were capable

capable of Thought and Comparison, would rather make such an Example as is apprehended, *more*, than *less*, difficult than *before*.

BUT if indeed, added he, the young Fellow be such a Booby, that he cannot *reflect* and *compare*, and take the Case with *all its Circumstances* together, I think his good Papa or Mama should get him a Wife to their own Liking, as soon as possible; and the poorest Girl in *England*, who is honest, would rather have Reason to bless herself for escaping such a Husband, than to glory in the Catch she would have of him. For such a young Fellow as that, would hardly do Honour to his Family in any *one* Instance.

INDEED, said the Countess, it would be pity, after all, that such a one should marry any Lady of Prudence and Birth; for, 'tis enough in Conscience, that he is a Disgrace to *One* worthy Family; it would be pity he should make *Two* unhappy.

WHY, really, Nephew, said Sir *Jacob*, I think you have said a great deal to the Purpose. There is not so much Danger from the Example, as I apprehended, from *sensible* and *reflecting* Minds. I did not consider this Matter thoroughly, I must needs say.

ALL the Business is, said Lady *Davers* — You'll excuse me, Sister — There will be more People will hear, that Mr. *B.* has marry'd his Mother's Waiting-maid, than will know his Inducements.

NOT many, I believe, Sister. — For when 'tis known, I have some Character in the World, and am not quite an Idiot, (And my Faults, in having not been one of the most virtuous of Men, will stand me in some stead in *this* Case, though hardly in *any other*) they will naturally inquire into my Inducements.

BUT see you not, when we go abroad, to Church, or elsewhere, what Numbers of People her Character draws to admire the dear Creature? Does not this shew, that her Virtue has made her more conspicuous, than my Fortune has made me? For I pass'd up and down quietly enough before, (handsome as my Equipage always was) and attracted not any body's Notice: And indeed I had as lieve these Honours were not so publicly paid *her*; for even, were I *fond* of Shew and Parade, what are they, but a Reproach to me? — And can I have any Excellence, but a secondary one, in having, after all my Persecutions of her, done but common Justice to her Merit?

THIS answers your Objection, Lady *Davers*, and shews, that *my* Inducements, and *her* Story, must be equally known. And, upon my Conscience, I think, (every thing I have said considered, and every thing that might still farther be urged, and the Conduct of that dear Creature in the Station she adorns, so much exceeding all I hoped, or could flatter myself with, from the most promising Appearances) that she does *me* more Honour than I have done *her*; and if I am capable of putting myself in a third Person's Place,



Place, I think I should be of the same Opinion, were I to determine upon such another Pair, exactly circumstanc'd as we are.

YOU may believe, Miss, how much this generous Defence of the Step he had taken, attributing every thing to me, and depreciating his worthy Self, affected me. I play'd with a Cork one while; with my Rings another, turning them round my Fingers, looked down, and on one Side, and every Way I looked, but on the Company; for they gazed too much upon me all the Time; so that I could only glance a tearful Eye now-and-then upon the dear Gentleman; and when it would overflow, catch in my Handkerchief the escaped Fugitives, that would start unbidden beyond their proper Limits, tho' I often endeavour'd, by a twinkling Motion, to disperse the gathering Water, before it had formed itself into Drops too big to be restrained.

ALL the Company praised the dear generous Speaker, and he was pleas'd to say farther, Altho', my good Friends, I can truly say, that, with all the Pride of Family, and the Insolence of Fortune, which once made me doubt whether I should not sink too low, if I made my *Pamela* my Mistress, (for I should have treated her not ungenerously, and should have suffered her perhaps to call herself by my Name) I have never once repented of what I have done: On the contrary, I have always rejoiced in it, and it has been, from the first Day of our Marriage, my Pride and my Boast, (and shall be, let others say what they will) that I can call such an Excellence, and such a Purity, which I so  
little

ittle deserve, mine; and I look down with Contempt upon the Rashness of all such as reflect upon me; for they can have no Notion of my Happiness, or her Merit.

O DEAR Sir! said I, how do you over-rate my poor Merit! — Some Persons are happy in a Life of *Comforts*, but mine's a Life of *Joy*! — One rapturous Instance follows another so fast, that I know not how to bear them.

WHEW! — whistled Sir *Jacob*. — Whereabouts am I? — I hope, by-and-by, you'll come down to our Pitch, that one may put in a Word or two with you.

MAY you be long thus blest, and thus happy together! said Lady *Davers*. I know not which to admire most, the dear Girl, that never was bad, or the dear Gentleman, that, having been bad, is now so good!

SAID my Lord *Davers*, There is hardly any bearing these moving Scenes, following one another so quick, as my Sister says.

THE Countess was pleased to say, That till now she had been at a Loss to form any Notion of the Happiness of the First Pair before the Fall; but now, by so fine an Instance as this, she comprehended it in all its Force. — GOD continue you to one another, added her Ladyship, for a Credit to the State, and to human Nature!

MR. *H.* having his Elbows on the Table, folded his Hands, shaking them, and looking down, Egad, this is uncommon Life, that it is! Your Two Souls, I can see that, are like well-tun'd

tun'd Instruments: But they are too high-set for me a vast deal.

THE best thing, said Lady *Davers*, (always severe upon her poor Nephew) thou ever saidst! The Musick must be equal to that of *Orpheus*, which can make such a Savage as thee dance to it. I charge thee, say not another Word To-night.

WHY, indeed, Aunt, return'd he, laughing, I believe it *was* pretty well said for your foolish Fellow: Tho' it was by Chance, I must confess: I did not think of it.

THAT I believe, reply'd my Lady; — if thou hadst, thou'dst not have spoken so well.

SIR *Jacob* and Mr. *B.* afterwards fell into a Family Discourse; and Sir *Jacob* gave us an Account of two or three Courtships *by* his Three Sons, and *to* his Two Daughters, and his Reasons for disallowing them: And I could observe, he is an absolute Tyrant in his Family, tho' they are all Men and Women grown, and he seem'd to please himself how much they stood in Awe of him.

ONE odd Piece of Conversation I must tell you, Miss, because of the Inference that follow'd it.

SIR *Jacob* ask'd Mr. *B.* If he did not remember *John Wilkins*, his Steward? He was an honest Fellow, said he, as ever liv'd. — But he's dead. Alas for him, poor *Jack*! — He physick'd himself out of his Life. — He would be always taking Slops: Had I done so, I should have gone to the Dogs long ago. — But whom do



you think, Nephew, I've got in his Place? — Nay, you can't know him neither. Why, 'tis *Jerry Sherwood*, a Boy I took upon Charity, and taught to write and read; or paid for't: and that's the same thing — Hay, you know! — And now *Jerry's* a Gentleman's Fellow, and is much respected by all our Hunters; for he's a keen Sportsman, I'll assure you. I brought him up to that myself, and many a Jirk has the Dog had from me, before I could make any thing of him. Many and many a good time have I thwack'd the Rascal's Jacket; and he owes all he is, and will be, to me: And I now suffer him to sit down at Table with me, when I have no Guests.

BUT is not this a bad Example, said Mr. B. to promote so low a Servant to the Command of the Family, under you? What do *Gentlemen* say to this?

GENTLEMEN say to it! — Why, what Gentlemen have any thing to do with my Family Management? — Surely, I may do as I will in my own House, and in my own Family; or else it would be very hard.

TRUE, Sir *Jacob*; but People will be meddling, where they have least Business. But are not all the Gentlemen uneasy, for fear their *lowest Servants*, from the Example set by so leading a Man as you, a Chairman of the Sessions, a Colonel of Militia, a Deputy Lieutenant, and a Justice of Quorum, should want to be made their *Stewards*?

WHY, I can't say that any body has taken it into their Heads to question me upon this Subject. I should think 'em plaguy impertinent, if they had, and bid them mind their own Business.

BUT you'll allow, Sir *Jacob*, that every one who knows you have raised your Foot-boy to be your Steward, will not know your *Inducements*; altho', I doubt not, they are very good ones.

LADY *Davers* shook her Head at her Brother, saying, Very well, Sir; very well!

SIR *Jacob* cry'd out, O ho, Nephew! are you thereabouts with your Bears? Why, I can't say, but you're *in* with me now. — Let's see, what have I said? — Ay, by my Soul, you have nabb'd me cleverly. Faith and Troth, you have convinc'd me, by an Example of my own, that I was impertinent to trouble my Head about the Management of your Family. — Tho' near Kindred makes some Excuse for me too. — And, besides, a *Steward* and a *Wife* are Two Things.

So I'd have 'em be, Sir *Jacob*: But good Wives are but Stewards to their Husbands, in many Cases; and mine is the best that ever Gentleman had.

P R E T T Y expensive ones, Nephew, for all that, as the World runs. — Most Gentlemen find, I believe, Stewards of this sort, run 'em out more than they save: But that's not your Case, I dare say. — I'faith, tho', you have nick'd me cleverly, that you have.

BUT, my witty Brother, said my Lady, I believe you'd better, for all your Fling at me, as

to *Inducements*, stick to your first Defence, as to the Example sake; for, who stands upon Birth or Degree in the Office of a Steward?

It will answer several Purposes, Sister, and come nearer the Point in what you object, than you are aware of, were we to dispute upon it. But I have gain'd my End in the Observation: Sir *Jacob* takes the Force of the Comparison, and is convinced, I dare say, there is some Justice in it.

Ay, ay, a great deal, said Sir *Jacob*; for a Wife is, or ought to be, her Husband's Steward. I'm sure, when mine was living, I made her so, and had no other; for she made Memorandums, and I digested them into a Book: and yet she brought me a noble Fortune too, as you all know.

HERE, Miss, I conclude my tedious Narrations. Be so good as to skim them over lightly, that you may not think the worse of me; and then return them, (with some of your charming Penmanship) that I may send them on to *Kent*. To be sure, I would not have been so tediously trifling, but for the sake of my dear Parents: And there is so much Self-praise, as it may seem, from a Person repeating the fine Things said of herself, that I am half of Opinion I should send them to *Kent* only, and to think you should be obliged to me for saving you so much Trouble and Impertinence.

Do, dear Miss, be so free as to forbid me to send you any more long Journals; but common Letters only, of How do you? and Who and who's



who's together, and of Respects to one, and to another, and so forth — Letters that one might dispatch, as Sir *Jacob* says, in a *Twinkling*; and perhaps be more to the Purpose, than the tedious Scrawl, which kisses your Hands, from, dear Miss,

*Tours most sincerely,*

P. B.

Do, dear good Sir *Simon*, let Miss *Polly* add to our Delights, by her charming Company. Mr. *Murray*, and the new Affair, will divert *you*, in her Absence. — So pray, since my good Lady *Darnford* has consented, and Miss is willing, and her Sister can spare her, don't be so cross as to deny me.

## L E T T E R XXXIV.

*From Miss DARNFORD to Mrs. B.*

*My dear Mrs. B.*

**Y**OU have given us great Pleasure in your Accounts of your Conversations with your noble Guests, and of the Verses put so boldly and wickedly under your Seat; and in your just Observations on the Lines, and the Occasion.

I AM quite shock'd, when I think of Lady *Davers's* passionate Intentions, at her first coming down to you to the Hall; but have let nobody into the worst of the Matter, in Compliance with your Desire. We are delighted with your Ac-

count of your Family Management, and your *Sunday* Service.—What an excellent Lady are you! And how happy, and how good, you make every one who knows you, is seen by the Ladies joining in your Evening Service, as well as their Domesticicks.

WE go on here swimmingly with our Courtship. Never was there a fonder Couple than Mr. *Murray* and Miss *Nancy*. The moody Girl is quite alive, easy and pleas'd; except now-and-then with me.—We had a sad Falling-out t'other Day. Thus it was:

SHE had the Assurance, on my saying, They were so fond and so free before-hand, that they would leave nothing for Improvement afterwards; to tell me, She had for some time perceived, that my Envy was very disquieting to me. This she said before Mr. *Murray*, who had the good Manners to retire, seeing a Storm rising between us.

POOR, foolish Girl! cry'd I, when he was gone, provok'd to great Contempt by her Expression before him, Thou wilt make me despise thee, in spite of my Heart.—But pr'ythee, manage thy Matters with common Decency, at least.

GOOD-LACK! *Common Decency*, did you say? When my Sister *Polly* is able to shew me what it is, I shall hope to be better for her Example.

No, thou'lt never be better for any body's Example! Thy Ill-nature and Perverseness will keep thee from that, as it has always hitherto done.

My Ill-temper, you have often told me, is *natural* to me; so it must become *me*: But upon  
such

such a sweet-temper'd young Lady as Miss *Polly*, her late-assum'd Petulance sits but ill!

I MUST have had no bad Temper, and that every one says, to bear with thy sullen and perverse one, as I have done, all my Life.

BUT why can't you bear with it a little longer, Sister? — Does any thing provoke you *now*, (with a sly Leer, and affected Drawl) that did not *formerly*?

PROVOKE me! — What should provoke me? — I gave thee but a Hint of thy fond Folly, which makes thee behave so before Company, that every one smiles at thee; and I'd be glad to save thee from Contempt for thy *new* good Humour, as I used to try to do, for thy *old* bad Nature.

Is that it? — What a kind Sister have I! — But perhaps I see it vexes you; and *ill-natur'd* Folks love to teize, you know. — But, dear *Polly*, don't let the Affection Mr. *Murray* expresses for me, put such a good-temper'd Body out of Humour; pray don't! — Who knows, (continued the Provoker, who never says a tolerable thing that is not *ill-natur'd*, that being her Talent) but the Gentleman may think himself happy, that he has found a Way, with so much Ease, to dispense with the Difficulty that Eldership laid him under? — But as he did you the Favour to let the Repulse come from you, don't be angry, Sister, that he took you at the *first* Word.

INDEED, indeed, said I, with a contemptuous Smile, thou'rt in the right, *Nancy*, to take the



Gentleman at *his* first Word. Hold him fast, and play over all thy Monkey Tricks with him, with all my Heart : Who knows but it may engage him more? For should *he* leave thee, I might be too much provok'd at thy Ingratitude, to *turn over* another Gentleman to thee — And, let me tell thee, without such an Introduction, thy Temper would keep any body from thee, that knows it.

POOR Miss *Polly* ! — Come, be as easy as you can! Who knows but we may find out some Cousin or Friend of Mr. *Murray's* between us, that we may *persuade* to address you? Don't make us your Enemies : We'll try to make you easy, if we can — 'Tis a little hard, that you should be so cruelly taken at your Word, that it is.

DOST think, said I, poor, stupid, ill-judging *Nancy*, that I can have the same Regret for parting with a Man I could not like, that thou hadst, when thy vain Hopes met with the Repulse they deserved from Mr. *B.* ?

MR. *B.* come up again! I have not heard of Mr. *B.* a great while!

No, but it was necessary, that one Nail should drive out another; for thou'dst been repining still, had not Mr. *Murray* been *turn'd over* to thee.

TURN'D OVER! you used that Word once before, Sister : Such great Wits, as you, methinks, should not use the same Word twice.

How dost *thou* know what Wits *should*, or should *not* do? Thou hast no Talent but Ill-nature, and 'tis enough for thee, that *one* View takes up thy whole Thought. Pursue that —

But

But I would only caution thee, not to *satiate* where thou wouldst *oblige*, that's all: Or if thy Man can be so gross, as to like thy Fondness, to leave something for *Hereafter*.

I'LL call him in again, Sister, and you shall acquaint us how you'd have it. *Bell*, (for the Maid came in just then) tell Mr. *Murray* I desire him to walk in.

I'm glad to see thee so teachable all at once! — I find out now what was the Cause of thy constant Perverseness: for had the unavailing Lessons, my Mamma was always inculcating into thee, come from a *Man* thou couldst have had Hopes of, they had succeeded better.

IN came Sir *Simon*, with his Crutch-Stick — But can you bear this Nonsense, Mrs. *B.*? — What! sparring, jangling again, you Sluts! — O what fiery Eyes on one side, and contemptuous Looks on t'other!

WHY, Papa, my Sister *Polly* has *turn'd over* Mr. *Murray* to me, and she wants him back again, and he won't come — That's all the Matter!

YOU know your Daughter *Nancy*, Papa — She could never *bear* Reproof, and yet would always *deserve* it! — I was only gently remarking, for her Instruction, on her Fondness before Company, and she is as she *used to be*! — Courtship, indeed, is a new Thing, to the poor Girl, and so she knows not how to behave herself in it.

So, *Polly*, because you have been able to run over a long List of humble Servants, you must insult your Sister, must you? — But are you really concern'd, *Polly*? — Hay!

SIR,

SIR, this, or any thing, is very well from you. — But these Imputations of Envy, before Mr. *Murray*, must make the Man very considerable with himself. Poor *Nancy* don't consider that. ---- But indeed how should she? How should *she* be able to reflect, who knows not what Reflection is, except of the spiteful sort? But, Papa, should the poor Thing add to *his* Vanity, which wants no Addition, at the Expence of that Pride, which can only preserve her from Contempt?

I SAW her affected, and was resolved to pursue my Advantage.

PRYTHEE, *Nancy*, continu'd I, canst thou not have a *little* Patience, Child? — My Papa will set the Day as soon as he shall think it proper. And don't let thy Man toil to keep Pace with thy Fondness; for I have pity'd him many a time, when I have seen him stretched on the Tenters to keep thee in Countenance.

THIS set the ill-natur'd Girl into Tears and Fretfulness; all her old Temper came upon her, as I design'd it should; for she had kept me at Bay longer than usual; and I left her under the Dominion of it; and because I would not come into a fresh Dispute, got my Mamma's Leave, and the Chariot, and went and begg'd a Dinner at Lady *Jones's*; and then came home as cool and as easy, as I us'd to be; and found *Nancy* as sullen and silent, as was her Custom, before Mr. *Murray* rendered himself to her ready Acceptance. But I went to my Spinnet, and suffer'd her to swell on.



WE have said nothing but No, and Yes, ever since; and I wish I was with you for a Month, and all their Nonsense over without me. I am, my dear, obliging, and excellent Mrs. B.

*Your faithful and affectionate*

POLLY DARNFORD.

---

The Two following, anticipating the Order of Time, for the Reasons mentioned *p.* 195. we insert here.

## LETTER XXXV.

*From Miss DARNFORD to Mrs. B.*

*My dear Mrs. B.*

PRAY give my Service to your Mr. B. and tell him, he is very unpolite in his Reflections \* upon me, in relation to Mr. Murray, when he supposes I regret the Loss of him. You are much more favourable, and *just* too, I will say, to your *Polly Darnford*. These Gentlemen, the very best of them, are such Indelicates! They think so highly of their saucy Selves, and confident Sex, as if a Lady cannot from *her Heart* despise them: But if she turns them off, as they deserve, and happens to continue her Dislike, what should be interpreted in her Favour, as a just and *regular* Piece of Conduct, is turn'd against her, and it must proceed from Spite.

\* See this Vol. *p.* 322, 323.

MR. B.

MR. B. may think he knows a good deal of the Sex. But, perhaps, were I as malicious as he is reflecting, (and yet, if I have any Malice, he has raised it) I could say, That his Acquaintance was not with the most unexceptionable, till he had the Happiness to know you: And he has not long enough been happy in You, I find, to do Justice to those who are proud to emulate your Virtues.

BUT I can't bear, *it seems*, to see my Sister address'd and complimented, and prefer'd by one whom I had thought in my own Power! But he *may* be mistaken: With all his Sagacity, he *has been* often. Nor is it so mortifying a thing to me, as he imagines, to sit and see Two such Anticks playing their Pugs Tricks, as he calls them, with one another.

BUT you hardly ever saw *such* Pugs Tricks play'd as they play, at so early a Time of Courtship. The Girl hangs upon his Arm, and receives his empty Head on her Shoulder, already, with a Freedom that would be censurable in a Bride, before Folks. A stiff, sullen, proud, scornful Girl, as she used to be, she now puts on Airs that are not natural either to her Features or her Character; and judge then how it must disgust one: especially when one sees her Man so proud and vain upon it, that, like a *true* Man, he treats her with the less Ceremony for her Condescensions, putting on Airs of Consequence, while her Easiness of Behaviour makes him secure of Acceptance, and a kind Reception, let him be as *negligent* or as *forward* as he pleases.

I SAY,

I SAY, Mrs. *B.* there can be no living with these Men upon such Beginnings — They ought to know their Distance, or be taught it; and not to think it in their Power to confer that as a Favour, which they should esteem it an Honour to receive.

BUT neither can I bear, *it seems*, the Preparatives to Matrimony, the fine Cloaths, the Compliments, the *busy Novelty*, as he calls it, the new Equipages, and so forth. That's his Mistake again, tell him: For one, who can look forwarder than the Nine Days of Wonder, can easily despise so flashy and so transient a Glare. And were I fond of Compliments, it would not perhaps be the way to be pleased in that respect, if I were to marry.

COMPLIMENTS, in the single State, are a Lady's Due, whether courted or not; and she receives them, or ought always to receive them, as such: But in Courtship they are pour'd out upon one, like a hasty Shower, that one knows will soon be over! — A mighty comfortable Consideration this, to a Lady who *loves to be complimented!* — Instead of the refreshing *April-like* Showers, which beautify the Sunshine, she shall stand a Deluge of Complaisance, be wet to the Skin with it; and then — What then? — Why, be in a *Libyan* Desert ever after; — experience a constant parching Drought, and all her attributed Excellencies will be swallow'd up in the Quicksands of Matrimony.

It may be otherwise with You; and it *must* be otherwise; because there is such an infinite Variety



Variety in your Excellence. Every rising Sun adorns you with some new Rays, and sets not, without leaving you brighter than himself can hold it. — But does Mr. *B.* think it must be so in *every* Matrimony?

'Tis true, he improves every Hour, as I see in your kind Papers, in his fine Speeches to you: But it could not be Mr. *B.* if he did not: Your Merit *extorts* it from him: And what an ingrateful, as well as absurd Churl, would He be, who should seek to obscure a meridian Lustre, that dazles the Eyes of every one else!

BUT, let me observe, moreover, that you had so few of these fine Speeches *before-hand*, that you have all the Reason in the World to expect them *now*: And this lessens his Merit a good deal; as the most he can say, is but common Justice, on *full Proof*; for, can the like Generosity be attributed to him, as might to a Gentleman who praises on *Trust*?

YOU promise, if I will come to you, you will join with me against Mr. *B.* on this Subject. 'Tis very kindly offer'd; but when Mr. *B.* is in the Question, I expect very little Assistance from you, be the Argument what it will.

BUT 'tis not *my* Fault I don't come. I am quite tir'd with the perverse Folly of this *Nancy* of ours. She every Day behaves *more* like a Fool to Mr. *Murray*, and *less* like a Sister to me; and takes Delight to teize and vex me, by all the little ways in her Power. And then Surliness and Ill-temper are so natural to her, that I, who can but throw out a spiteful Word, by way of Flourish,

rish, as I may say, and 'tis over, and I am sorry for it as soon as spoken, am no Match for her --- For she *perseveres* so intolerably, and comes back to the Attack, tho' never so often repuls'd, rising like *Anteus*, with fresh Vigour for every Fall, or like the *Lernæan Hydra*, which had a new Head sprouting up, as fast as any One of the Seven was lopp'd of, that there is no bearing her. Wedlock, in fine, must be her *Hercules*, and will furnish me, I doubt, with a Revenge I wish not for.

BUT let me thank you for your delightful Narratives, and beg you to continue them. I told you how your *Saturday's* Conversation with Lady *Davers*, and your *Sunday* Employments, charm us all: So regular, and so easy to be perform'd! ---- That's the delightful thing. ---- What every body may do! ---- And yet so beautiful, so laudable, so uncommon in the Practice, especially among People in genteel Life!

YOUR Conversation and Decision in relation to the Two Parsons (more than charm) transport us. Mr. *B.* let me tell you, judges right, and acts a charming Part, to throw such a fine Game into your Hands. And so excellently do you play it, that you do as much Credit to your Partner's Judgment as to your own: Never, surely, was so happy a Couple!

HE has a prodigious Merit *with* me, I can tell him, tho' he thinks not so well *of* me as I would have him. To *see*, to *praise*, and to *reward* a Virtue, is *next* to having it *one's self*: And, in time, he will make as good a *Man* (these fine Appearances encourage one to hope so) as he is a *Husband*.

YOUR

YOUR Notions of Dispensations, and double Livings, are admirably just. Mr. *Williams* is more my Favourite than ever! — And the amply-rewarded Mr. *Adams*, how did that Scene affect us!

AGAIN, and again, I say, (for what can I say else, or more — since I can't find Words to speak all I think?) you're a charming Lady! — Yet, methinks, poor Mr. *H.* makes but a sorry Figure among you.

WE are delighted with Lady *Davers*; but still more, if possible, with the Countess: She is a fine Lady, as you have drawn her; but your Characters, tho' Truth and Nature, are the most shocking, or the most amiable, that ever I read.

WE are full of Impatience to hear of the Arrival of Sir *Jacob Swynford*. We know his Character pretty well; but when he has sat for it to your Pencil, it must be an Original indeed.

I WILL have another Trial with my Papa, to move him to let me attend you. I am rallying my Forces for that Purpose: I have got my Mamma on my Side again; who is concern'd to see her Girl vex'd and insulted by her younger Sister; and who yet minds no more what *she* says to her, than what *I* say; and Sir *Simon* loves at his Heart to make Mischief between us, instead of interposing to silence either: And truly, I am afraid, the Delight of this kind, which he takes, will make him deny his *Polly* what she so ardently wishes for.

I HAD a good Mind to be sick, to be with you. I could fast Two or Three Days, to give it  
the



the better Appearance; but then my Mamma, who loves not Deceit, would blame me, if she knew my Stratagem; and be griev'd, if she thought I was really ill. — I know, Fasting, when one has a Stomach to eat, gives one a very gloomy and mortify'd Air.

WHAT would I not do, in short, to procure to myself the inexpressible Pleasure that I should have in your Company and Conversation? But continue to write to me till then, however, and that will be *next Best*. I am

*Your most obliged and obedient*

POLLY DARNFORD.

---

## L E T T E R XXXVI.

*From the same.*

*My dearest Mrs. B.*

I AM all over Joy and Rapture. My good Papa has given me Leave to tell you, that he will put his *Polly* under your Protection, when you go to *London*. If you have but a *Tenth* Part of the Pleasure I have on this Occasion, I am sure I shall be as welcome as I wish. But he will insist upon it, he says, that Mr. *B.* signs some Acknowledgement, which I am to carry along with *me*, that I am intrusted to his Honour and yours, and to be returned to him *Heart-whole* and *Dutiful*, and with a Reputation as unsully'd as he receives me.

BUT do, dearest Mrs. *B.* continue your Journals till then; for I have promis'd to take them up where you leave off, to divert our Friends in these Parts. There will be Presumption! But yet I will write nothing but what I will shew you, and have your Consent to send: For I was taught early not to tell Tales out of School; and a School, the best I ever went to, will be your charming Conversation.

WE have been greatly diverted with the Trick put upon that Barbarian Sir *Jacob*. His Obstinacy, Repentance, and Amendment, follow'd so irresistibly in one Half-hour, from the happy Thought of the excellent Lady Countess, that I think no Plot was ever more fortunate. It was like springing a lucky Mine in a Siege, that blew up twenty times more than was expected from it, and answer'd all the Besieger's Ends at once.

MR. *B.*'s Defence of his own Conduct towards you, is quite noble; and he judges with his usual Generosity and good Sense, when, by adding to your Honour, he knows he inhances his own. Mr. *Pitt*'s fine Diamond met with a world of Admirers; but all turn'd upon this Reflection, What a happy Man is Mr. *Pitt*, who can call such a Jewel his own! — How greatly do you excel this Diamond! and how much does Mr. *B.* out-do Mr. *Pitt*! — who has contributed to give so rich a Jewel a Polish so admirable; and then has set it in so noble a Light, as makes its Beauty conspicuous to every Eye!

YOU bid me skim over your Writings lightly; but 'tis impossible. I will not flatter you, my dear

dear Mrs. *B.* nor will I be suspected to do so; and yet I cannot find Words to praise, so much as I think you deserve: So I will only say, that your good Parents, for whose Pleasure you write as well as for mine, cannot receive or read them with more Delight than I do — Even my Sister *Nancy*, judge of their Effect by this! will at any time leave Mr. *Murray*, and forget to frown or be ill-natur'd, while she can hear read what you write — And, angry as she makes me sometimes, I cannot deny her this Pleasure, because, possibly, among the innumerable improving Reflections they abound with, some one may dart in upon her, and illuminate her, as your Conversation and Behaviour did Sir *Jacob*.

BUT your Application in P. S. to my Papa, pleased him, and confirm'd his Resolution to let me go — He snatched the Sheet that contained this, That's to me! said he: — I must read this myself — He did — and said — I'faith, she's a sweet one! — *Do, dear, good Sir Simon*, repeated he aloud, *let Miss Polly add to our Delights!* — So she shall then; — If that will do it! — And yet this same Mrs. *B.* has so many Delights already, that I should think she might be contented. — But, Dame *Darnford*, I think I'll let her go. These Sisters then, you'll see, how they'll love at a Distance, tho' always quarrelling when together. He read on — *The new Affair will divert you — Lady Darnford has consented — Miss is willing; and her Sister can spare her —* Very prettily put, faith — *And don't you be so cross—Very sweet!—to deny me!*



WHY, dear Mrs. B. I won't be so cross, then; indeed I won't! — And so, *Polly*, let 'em send Word when they set out for *London*, and you shall join 'em there, with all my Heart: But I'll have a Letter every Post, remember that, Girl.

ANY thing, any thing, dear Papa, said I, so I can but go! He called for a Kiss, for his Compliance. I gave it most willingly, you may believe.

NANCY looked envious, altho' Mr. *Murray* came in just then. — She looked almost like a great Glutton, whom I remember, one Sir *Jonathan Smith*, who killed himself with eating: He us'd, while he was heaping up his Plate from One Dish, to watch the others, and follow the Knife of everybody else, with such a greedy Eye, as if he could swear a Robbery against any one who presumed to eat as well as he. This is a gross Simile; but all greedy and envious Folks look alike about the Eyes; and, thinking of *Nancy* on this Occasion, (who envied a Happiness she knew I preferr'd to that she has in Prospect) I could not but call to Mind Sir *Jonathan* at the same time.

WELL, let's know when you set out, and you shan't have been a Week in *London*, if I can help it, but you shall be told by my Tongue, as now by my Pen, how much I am

*Your obliged Admirer and Friend,*

POLLY DARNFORD.

LET-

## LETTER XXXVII.

*My dear Miss,*

I NOW proceed with my Journal, which I had brought down to *Thursday* Night.

## FRIDAY.

THE TWO Ladies resolving, as they said, to inspect all my Proceedings, insisted upon it, that I would take them with me in my *benevolent Round*, (as they, after we return'd, would call it) which I generally take once a Week, among my poor and sick Neighbours; and finding I could not get off, I set out with them; my Lady Countess proposing Mrs. *Werden* to fill up the fourth Place in the Coach.

WE talked all the Way of Charity, and the Excellency of that Duty; and my Lady *Davers* took Notice of the Text, that it would hide a *Multitude of Faults*. And if, she was pleased to say, there was to be any Truth in the Popish Doctrine of Supererogation, what abundance of *such* Merits would arise from the Life and Actions of our dear Friend here! kindly looking at me.

I SAID, That when we had the Pleasure to reflect, that we served a Master, who exacted no hard Terms from us, but in every Case almost that could be thought of, only required of us to do Justice, and shew Mercy, to one another, and gave us Reason to think He would judge us by those Rules, it must be a mighty Inducement to Acts of Charity and Benevolence. But indeed,

added I, were there not that Inducement, the Pleasure that attends such Acts, is a high Reward; and I am sure the Ladies I have the Honour to speak to, must have found it in an hundred Instances.

THE Countess said, She had once a much better Opinion of herself, than she found she had Reason for, within these *few Days* past: And indeed, Mrs. B. said she, when I get home, I shall make a good many People the better for your Example. And so said Lady *Davers*; which gave me no small inward Pleasure; and I acknowledg'd, in suitable Terms, the Honour they both did me.

THE Coach set us down by the Side of a large Common, about Five Miles distant from our House; and we alighted, and walked a little Way, chusing not to have the Coach come nearer, that we might be taken as little Notice of as possible; and they enter'd with me into Two mean Cots with great Condescension and Goodness; one belonging to a poor Widow, and Five Children, who had been all down in Agues and Fevers; the other to a Man and his Wife, Bed-ridden with Age and Infirmities, and Two honest Daughters, one a Widow with Two Children, the other married to a Husbandman, who had also been ill, but now, by comfortable Cordials, and good Physick, were pretty well, to what they had been.

THE Two Ladies were well pleased with my Demeanour to the good Folks: To whom I said, That as I should go so soon to *London*, I was willing



ing to see them before I went, to wish them better and better, and to tell them, that I should leave Orders with Mrs. *Jervis* concerning them, to whom they must make known their Wants; and that Mr. *Barrow* would take care of 'em, I was sure; and do all that was in the Power of Physick for the Restoration of their Healths.

Now you must know, Miss, that I am not so good as the old Ladies of former Days, who used to distil Cordial Waters, and prepare Medicines, and dispense them themselves. I knew, if I were so inclined, my dear Mr. *B.* would not have been pleased with it, because, in the Approbation he has kindly given to my present Method, he has twice or thrice praised me, that I don't carry my Charity to Extremes, and make his House a Dispensatory. I would not, therefore, by aiming at doing too much, lose the Opportunity of doing any Good at all, in these respects; and besides, as the vulgar Saying is, One must creep before one goes. But this is my Method :

I AM upon an Agreement with this Mr. *Barrow*, who is deemed a very skilful and honest Apothecary, and one Mr. *Simmonds*, a Surgeon of like Character, to attend all such Cases and Persons as I shall recommend; Mr. *Barrow* to administer Physick and Cordials, as he shall judge proper, and even, in necessary Cases, to call in a Physician. And now-and-then by looking in upon them one's self, or sending a Servant to ask Questions, all is kept right.

BESIDES, one can take this Method without the Ostentation, as some would deem it, which

would attend the having one's dear Friend's Gate always crouded with unhappy Objects, and with some who deserve no Countenance, perhaps, and yet would possibly be the most clamorous: And then one does not subject the Poor neither to the Insolence of Servants, who sometimes, in one's Absence, might, were they *some* Servants, shew that they were far from being influenced by the same Motives as their Principals: Besides the Advantage the Poor have from the Skill and Experience which constant Practice gives to the Gentlemen I imploy; and with whom I agree but by the Quarter, because if there were a just Foundation of Complaint, for Negligence, or Hardness of Heart, I would not be ty'd down from changing; for, in such Cases, in a Crisis, the poor People, depending on the Assistance of those Gentlemen, might look no farther, and so my good Intentions might not only be frustrated, but do Harm.

My Lady *Davers* observed a Bible, a Common Prayer Book, and a Whole Duty of Man, in each Cot, in Leathern outside Cases, to keep them clean, and a Church Catechism or two for the Children; and was pleased to say, It was right: And her Ladyship asked one of the Children, a pretty Girl, Who learnt her her Catechism? And she court'fy'd, and look'd at me; for I *do* ask the Children Questions, when I come, to know how they improve: 'Tis as I thought, said my Lady; my Sister provides for both Parts. God bless you, my Dear! said she, and tapp'd my Neck.

My

MY Ladies left Tokens of their Bounty behind them to both Families, and all the good Folks blessed and pray'd for us at parting: And as we went out, my Lady *Davers*, with a serious Air, was pleased to say to me, Take care of your Health, my dear Sister, and God give you, when it comes, a happy Hour; for how many real Mourners would you have, if you were to be called early to reap the Fruits of your Piety!

GOD'S Will must be done, my Lady, said I. The same Providence that has so wonderfully put it into my Power to do a little Good, will raise up new Friends to the honest Hearts that rely upon Him.

THIS I said, because some of the good People heard my Lady, and seem'd troubled, and began to redouble their Prayers for my Safety and Preservation.

WE walked thence to our Coach, and stretched a little farther, to visit Two Farmers Families, about a Mile distant from each other. One had the Mother of the Family, with Two Sons, just recovering, the former from a Fever, the latter from Tertian Agues; and I asked, When they saw Mr. *Barrow*? They told me, with great Commendations of him, That he had but just left them. So having congratulated their hopeful Way, and wished them to take care of themselves, and not go too early to Business, I said, I should desire Mr. *Barrow* to watch over them, for fear of a Relapse, and should hardly see them again for some time; and so, under the Notion of my Foy, I fill a Couple of Guineas into the  
good



good Woman's Hand: For I had a Hint given me by Mrs. *Jervis*, that their Illness had made it low with them.

WE proceeded then to the other Farm, where the Case was a marry'd Daughter, who had had a very dangerous Lying-in, and a wicked Husband, who had abus'd her, and run away from her: But she was mending apace, by good comfortable Things, which from time to time I had caused to be sent her. Her old Father had been a little unkind to her, before I took Notice of her; for she marry'd against his Consent; and indeed the World went hard with the poor Man, and he could not do much; and, besides, he had a younger Daughter, who had lost all her Limbs, and was forc'd to be ty'd in a Wicker Chair, to keep her up in it; which (having expended much to relieve her) was a great *Pull-back*, as the good old Woman call'd it. And having been a Year in Arrear to a harsh Landlord, who finding a good Stock upon the Ground, threatened to distress the poor Family, and turn them out of all, I advanced the Money upon the Stock; and the poor Man has already paid me half of it, (for, Miss, I must keep within Compass too) which was 50*l.* at first; and is in a fair Way to pay me the other Half, and make as much more for himself.

HERE I found Mr. *Barrow*, and he gave me an Account of the Success of Two other Cases I had recommended to him; and told me, That *John Smith*, a poor Man, who, in thatching a Barn, had tumbled down, and broken his Leg,  
and

and bruised himself all over, was in a fair way of Recovery.

THIS poor Creature had like to have perish'd by the Cruelty of the Parish Officers, who would have pass'd him away to *Effex*, where his Settlement was, tho' in a burning Fever, occasion'd by his Misfortune. But hearing of the Case, I directed Mr. *Simmonds* to attend him, and to provide for him, at my Expence, and gave my Word, if he dy'd, to bury him.

I WAS glad to hear he was in so good a way, and told Mr. *Barrow*, I hoped to see him and Mr. *Simmonds* together at Mr. *B.*'s, before I set out for *London*, that we might advise about the Cases under their Direction; and that I might acquit myself of some of my Obligations to them.

YOU are a good Man, Mr. *Barrow*, added I: God will bless you for your Care and Kindness to these poor destitute Creatures. They all praise you, and do nothing but talk of your Humanity to them.

O MY good Lady, said he, who can forbear following such an Example as you set? Mr. *Simmonds* can testify, as well as I, (for now-and-then a Case requires us to visit together) that we can hardly hear any Complaints from our poor Patients, let 'em be ever so ill, for the Praises and Blessings they bestow upon you.

IT is good Mr. *B.* that enables and encourages me to do what I do. Tell them, they must bless God, and bless him, and pray for me, and thank you and Mr. *Simmonds*: We all join together, you know, for their Good.

THE Countess and Lady *Davers* ask'd the poor lying-in Woman many Questions, and left with her, and for her poor Sister, a miserable Object-indeed! — (God be praised, that I am not such a one!) Marks of their Bounty in Gold, but I saw not how much; and looking upon one another, and then upon me, and lifting up their Hands, could not say a Word, till they were in the Coach: And so we were carry'd home, after we had just look'd in upon a Country School, where I pay for the Learning of Eight Children.

AND here, Miss, (— I hope I recite not this with Pride, tho' I do with Pleasure) is a cursory Account of my *Benevolent Weekly Round*, as my Ladies will call it.

I KNOW you will not be displeased with it; but it will highly delight my worthy Parents, who, in their way, do a great deal of discreet Good in their Neighbourhood: For, indeed, Miss, a little Matter, *prudently* bestowed, and on true Objects of Compassion, (whose Cases are soon at a Crisis, as are those of most labouring People) will go a great way, and especially if laid out properly for 'em, according to the Exigencies of their respective Cases. — For such poor People, who live generally low, want very seldom any thing but reviving Cordials at first, and good wholesome Kitchen Physick afterwards; and then the Wheels of Nature being unclogg'd, new-oil'd, as it were, and set right, they will go round again with Pleasantness and Ease, for a good while together, by virtue of that Exercise which their Labour gives them; while the Rich  
and



and Voluptuous are forced to undergo great Fatigues to keep theirs clean and in Order.

THIS is well remark'd in a Manuscript Poem, in Mr. *B.*'s Possession, written in Answer to a Friend, who recommended a poor Man of Genius to the Favour of the Author, in order to induce the benevolent Gentleman to lift him into a higher Life than that to which he was born; and as I am sure you will be pleased with the Lines, I will transcribe them for your Entertainment.

Warmly, once more, this *Rustick's* Cause you press,  
Whom Genius dignifies, amidst Distress:  
All, that *you* wish, my Friendship renders dear,  
And weeping Industry demands a Tear.  
Ease we his Pangs, ---- but let the *Means* be weigh'd;  
Lest Anguish meet him, in the Form of Aid.  
---Where-e'er kind Help can Want's bleak Waste repair,  
Whate'er touch'd Pity owes to chill Despair,  
*That* shall be his. ---- For he who claims *your* Grief,  
To *mine* brings Title, that commands Relief.

Premising this, permit me to maintain,  
That, wishing Happiness, you purpose Pain.  
What, tho' he sweats along the scorching Soil,  
'Till ev'ry aking Sinew burns, with Toil?  
Health, and Contempt of Spleen, -- and Sleep's soft Call --  
And unobstructed Spirits ---- balance all.

Nor let Fatigue, like his, presume Complaint,  
Where Exercise, of Choice, out-works Constraint.  
What

430 P A M E L A; or,

What length'ning Furrow, turn'd with tort'ring Fall,  
Heats like the *Racket*, when it hunts the *Ball*?  
What Lab'rer toils like him, o'er Hill or Dale,  
Whose Triumph is the Fox's Ear or Tail?  
All un-inur'd to *bear*----in Life's weak *Dawn*,  
Boy Sportsmen tire and shame those Sons of Brawn.

“ But, shall a Fire, like his, want Room to flame?  
“ And what is *Peace*, to one who pants for *Fame*?

Bless'd in his low-born Quiet, would he dare  
Adopt Distinction, to induce Despair?  
Wou'd he, for Envy, give up safe Neglect?  
And hazard Calumny, to gain Respect?  
Blow up Ambition's Storm, to blast his Race?  
And scorn Obscurity, to court Disgrace!

True, he is poor, ---- and so are *Kings*, no less:  
*They* want, whate'er they wish, and not possess:  
While *Swains*, who scorn to feel by others Sense,  
Are rich, in their own Right, of Competence.  
Bread, and Self-satisfy'd, is Wealth, *within*;  
Nor call that *Gain* ---- which Wisdom shuns to win.

From what proud Root cou'd this vain Error grow,  
That Poverty is *Want*; and Rest is *Woe*!  
Weigh ---- but let Reason hold th' impartial Scale,  
When Peace is purpos'd, what does Rank avail?  
Is it, to live in Noise, that makes us *blest*?  
Is it, to hear our flatter'd Faults carest?  
Is it, in idle Ease to yawn untaught,  
And, fatt'ning *Folly*, pine the famish'd *Thought*?

True.

True Happiness, disdaining all *Extreme*,  
Is measur'd Continnence ---- and reas'ning Phlegm.  
'This if your Rustick knows, confess him *Great*,  
Beyond the proudest Slave, that guides a *State*.  
'This if he knows not, shou'd he *Empire* gain,  
'Twere sharpen'd Appetite, for strengthen'd Pain.

“ But, Wit like his, you say, by Nature grac'd  
“ To charm in Cities, is, in Shades, *misplac'd*.”

Shines he so bright, within his rural Sphere ?  
There, let him still shine out ---- and still shine *clear* !  
Superior Genius, *there*, may gain him Weight  
To polish Rudeness, civilize Debate,  
Warn the too *Easy* Heart, excite the *Cold*,  
Impell the *Backward*, and repulse the *Bold* :  
Compose small *Fars*, ere Bitterness increase,  
And smile the factious Cottage into Peace :  
Wipe out each Spot that fades the flow'ry Plains,  
And reign, pacifick Father of the Swains.

Remote from Cities, peaceful Nature dwells ;  
There, exil'd Justice sits, in silent Cells.  
There, Truth, in naked Plainness, dares be seen :  
There, Pride provokes no Envy, ---- Shame no Spleen.  
There, unsupported Worth can Rev'rence draw ;  
And Probity disdains the Help of Law.  
There, Maids no Caution need ; ---- for Man is just :  
There, Love is Tenderness, and Friendship Trust.  
There, in-felt Flushes tinge the conscious *Heart* ;  
And modest Semblance is not, yet, an *Art*.

How



How weak a Judge, dear Friend, is human Pride!  
 To loath known Good, and long for Ills untry'd!  
 Stretching our greedy Eye to distant Height,  
 The Bliss, beneath us, lies too low for Sight.  
 Impatient Thirst of Pow'r but little thinks,  
 What troubled Waters fev'rish Greatness drinks:  
 Nor dreams distrustless *Vanity*, what Cares,  
 What Weights, what Torments, rash Distinction bears?  
 Hence, fears no aukward Actor to sustain  
 His Part of Danger, in those Scenes of Pain:  
 Yet, out of Character, mistakes his *Cue*,  
 And hiss'd, unheard, bawls on---and blunders through.

Or, grant him safe, behind some guardian Skreen,  
 Some Patron's transient Int'rest, push'd between:  
 Grant, that his suppliant Soul can Sense destroy;  
 Can bear Dependence, with unfeeling Joy:  
 Yet, comes a Time, when all his Props decay,  
 And each dishonour'd Ruin drops away.  
 Then the bleak Tott'rer shakes, in ev'ry Blast;  
 Dreads the dim Future; wishes for the Past:  
 Finds his first Loss, and with corrected View,  
 Envies the humble *Cot*, from which he flew.

And yet, perhaps, 'twas Heav'n's commission'd Plan,  
 That's Passion's restless Whirl should actuate Man:  
 That Pride, by Envy plagu'd, shou'd *Pity* know:  
 And Wealth, and Joy, take Birth, from Want, and  
 Woe.

Were hush'd Content to stop the busy Swing,  
 The stagnant Virtues all might lose their Spring:

One

One tideless Lake of Life engulph Mankind ;  
And the still Mass corrupt ---- for want of *Wind*.

Th' Almighty, then, ---- who sees beyond our Sense,  
Did various Parts, for various Minds, dispense.  
The meanest Slave, who lives to hedge and ditch,  
Is useful, in his Rank, to feed the Rich.  
The Rich, in Retribution, wastes his Store,  
And streams refreshful Floods, to float the Poor :  
Nor let the *Peer* the *Peasant's* Lot disdain ;  
Each Link, howe'er remote, connects the *Chain*.  
Both but Two diff'rent Marks, in One great View,  
Extend God's Landſchape, and adorn it too :  
And both, without Distinction, ---- *King* and *Slave*,  
At last lie levell'd, in the ſilent Grave.

This known, *your* Choice directs my ready Will,  
Say ---- Shall your Ruſtick be a Ruſtick ſtill ?  
With Eaſe augmented, hold his ſafe Degree ?  
Live, and grow old, in pangleſs Poverty ? ----  
Or, ſhall he tread the World's great *Wild of Hope* !  
Deſpiſe his Danger ---- and enlarge his Scope ? ----

Chuſe for his Wiſh whate'er his Virtues claim :  
And tax *my* Fortune ---- or reſtrain *his* Aim.

I DON'T remember ever to have read any thing  
of this Subject placed in theſe natural, eaſy, and,  
I therefore think, uncommon Lights, and be-  
lieve you'll allow them to be right Lights: For  
there are certainly no Caſes in the World that  
require more Judgment and Diſtinction, than

charitable ones. And except a casual Distress among those who make a Trade of Begging, such Persons (especially if I see them often, and so much in the same Place, as if they were as tenacious of their Stand, as others of their Freehold) move not my Compassion or Notice. They cannot be lower in Spirit, nor (being frequently brought up to it) do they often wish to be higher in Calling, or to change their idle State for a laborious one: But the poor industrious Souls, who are reduced by Sickness, or Misfortune, or even Mistake, not wilful or persisted in; who sigh in secret, and cannot make known what they suffer; such unhappy Objects are worthy of one's *Pains* to find out, and relieve.

---

*SATURDAY Morning.*

**I**T is hardly right to trouble either of you, my honoured Correspondents, with an Affair, that has vex'd me a good deal, and indeed *should* affect me more than any other Mistress of a Family, for Reasons which will be obvious to you, when I tell you the Case. And this (it is so present with me) I cannot forbear doing.

A PRETTY genteel young Body, my *Polly Barlow*, as I call her, having been well recommended, and indeed behaved with great Prudence till this Time, is the Occasion.

MY dear Mr. *B.* and the Two Ladies agreed with me to take a little Airing in the Coach, and to call in upon Mr. *Martin*, who had a Present made him for his Menagerie, in which he takes  
great



great Delight, of a rare and uncommon Creature, a Native of the *East Indies*. But just as Sir *Jacob* was on Horseback to accompany them, and the Ladies were ready to go, I was taken with a sudden Disorder and Faintishness, so that Lady *Davers*, who is very tender of me, and watches every Change of my Countenance, would not let me go with them, tho' my Disorder was going off, and my dear Mr. *B.* was pleased to excuse me; and just meeting with Mr. *Williams* as they went to the Coach, they took him with them, to fill up the vacant Place. So I retir'd to my Closet, and shut myself in.

THEY had asked Mr. *H.* to go with them, for Company to Sir *Jacob*; but he (on purpose as I believe, by what follow'd) could not be found, when they set out: So they supposed he was upon some Ramble with Mr. *Colbrand* his great Favourite.

I WAS writing to *you*, being pretty well recover'd, when I heard *Polly*, as I supposed, and as it proved, come into my Apartment; and down she sat, and sung a little Catch, and cry'd Hem! twice; and presently I heard Two Voices. But suspecting nothing, I wrote on, till I heard a kind of Rustling and Struggling, and *Polly's* Voice crying, Fie! — How can you do so! — Pray, Sir!

THIS alarm'd me much, because we have such orderly Folks about us; and I looked thro' the Key-hole, and, to my Surprize and Concern, saw Mr. *H.* — foolish Gentleman! — taking Liberties with *Polly*, that neither became him

to offer, nor, more foolish Girl! her to suffer. And, having Reason to think, that this was not their first Interview and Freedom — and the Girl sometimes encouragingly laughing, as at other times, inconsistently, struggling and complaining, in an Accent that was too tender for the Occasion, I forced a faint Cough. This frightened them both: Mr. *H.* swore, and said, Who can that be? — Your Lady's gone with them, i'n't she?

I BELIEVE so! I hope so! said the silly Girl--- Yet that was like her Voice! — Me'm, are you in your Closet, Me'm? said she, coming up to the Door, Mr. *H.* standing, like a poor Thief, half behind the Window-curtains, till he knew whether it was I.

I OPEN'D the Door; away sneak'd Mr. *H.* and she leap'd with Surprize, not hoping to find me there, tho' she asked the Question.

I THOUGHT — Indeed — Me'm — I thought, you were gone out.

IT is plain you did, *Polly*! — Go and shut the Chamber-door, and come to me again.

SHE did, but trembled, and was so full of Confusion, that I pity'd the poor Creature, and hardly knew how to speak to her, or what to say. — For my Compassion got the Upper-hand of my Resentment; and as she stood quaking and trembling, and looking on the Ground, with a Countenance I cannot describe, I now-and-then cast my Eye upon her, and was as often forced to put my Handkerchief to it.

A T last I said, How long have these Freedoms past, *Polly*, between you and Mr. *H.*?

SHE said never a Word.

I AM loth to be censorious, *Polly*: But 'tis too plain, that Mr. *H.* would not have follow'd you into my Chamber, if he had not met you at other Places before.

STILL the poor Girl said never a Word.

LITTLE did I expect, *Polly*, that you would have shewn so much Imprudence. You have had Instances of the vile Arts of Men against poor Maidens: Have you any Notion, that Mr. *H.* intends to do honourably by you?

ME'M — Me'm — I believe — I hope — I dare say, Mr. *H.* would not do otherwise.

So much the worse, that you believe so, if you have not very good Reason for your Belief. — Does he pretend he will marry you, *Polly*?

SHE was silent.

TELL me, *Polly*, if he does?

HE says, He will do honourably by me.

BUT you know there is but one Word necessary to explain that other precious Word *Honour*, in this Case: It is *Matrimony*. That Word is as soon spoken as any other; and if he *means* it, he will not be shy to *speak* it.

SHE was silent.

TELL me, *Polly*, (for I am really greatly concern'd for you) what you think *yourself*: Do you *hope* he will marry you?

SHE was silent.



Do, good *Polly*, I hope I may call you *good* yet! — answer me.

PRAY, Madam! and she wept, and turn'd from me, to the Wainscot — Pray, Madam, excuse me.

BUT, indeed, *Polly*, I *cannot* excuse you. You are under my Protection. I was once in as dangerous a Situation as you can be in: And I did not escape it, Child, by the Language and Conduct I heard from you.

LANGUAGE and Conduct, Me'm!

YES, *Polly*, Language and Conduct. For you have heard my Story, no doubt: All the World has. And do you think, if I had sat me down in my Lady's Bed-chamber, and sung a Song, and hem'd twice, and Mr. *B.* had come to me, upon that Signal, (for such I doubt it was) and I had kept my Place, and suffer'd myself to be rumpled, and only, in a soft Voice, and with an encouraging Laugh, cry'd, How can you do so? that I should have been what I am?

ME'M, I dare say, my Lord (so all the Servants call him, and his Aunt often, when she puts *Jackey* to it) means me no Hurt.

No Hurt, *Polly*! What, and make you cry, *Fie*! — Or do you intend to trust your Honour to his Mercy, rather than to your own Discretion?

I HOPE not, Me'm!

I HOPE not too, *Polly*! — But you know he was free enough with you, to make you say, *Fie*! — And what might have been the Case, who knows? had I not coughed on purpose; unwilling, for your sake, *Polly*, to find Matters  
so

so bad as I feared, and that you would have been led beyond what was reputable?

REPUTABLE, Me'm!

YES, *Polly*, Reputable: I am sorry you oblige me to speak so plain; but your Good requires it. Instead of flying from him, you not only laughed all the time you cry'd out, *Fie!* and *How can you do so?* but had no other Care than to see if any body heard you; and you observe how he slid away like a guilty Gentleman, as soon as I open'd my Door — Do these Things look well, *Polly?* Do you think they do? — And if you hope to emulate my good Fortune, do you think this is the Way?

I WISH, Me'm, I had never seen Mr. *H.* For nobody will look upon me, If I lose your Favour!

IT will still, *Polly*, (and I took her Hand, with a kind Look) be in your Power to keep it; and I will not mention this Matter, if you make me your Friend, and tell me all that has pass'd.

AGAIN she wept, and was silent.

THIS made me more uneasy. Don't think, *Polly*, said I, that I would envy any other Person's Preferment, when I have been so much exalted myself. If Mr. *H.* has talked to you of Marriage, tell me.

NO, Me'm, I can't say, he has *yet*.

YET, *Polly!* Then he *never* will. For when Men *do* talk of it, they don't always *mean* it: But whenever they *mean* it, how can they confirm a doubting Maiden, without mentioning it? But, alas, alas for you, poor *Polly!* — The

Freedoms you have permitted to him, previous, no doubt, to those I heard, and which would have been greater possibly, had I not surpris'd you with my Cough, shew too well, that he *need* not make any Promises to you.

INDEED, M<sup>e</sup>m — Indeed, said she, sobbing, I might be too little upon my Guard; but I would not have done any Ill for the World.

I HOPE you would not, *Polly*; but if you suffer these Freedoms, you can't tell *what* you'd have permitted — Tell me, Do you love Mr. *H.*?

HE is a very good-humour'd Gentleman, Madam, and is not proud.

No, 'tis not his Business to be proud, when he hopes to humble you — Humble you indeed! Beneath the lowest Person of the Sex, that is honest.

I HOPE —

YOU *hope*, interrupted I — You *hope* too much; and I *fear* a *great deal* for you, because you fear *so little* for yourself — But tell me, How often have you been in private together?

IN private, M<sup>e</sup>m! — I don't know what your Ladyship calls *private*!

WHY that is *private*, *Polly*, when, as just now, you neither imagined nor intended any body should see you.

SHE was silent; and I saw, Miss, by this poor Girl, how true Lovers are to their Secret, tho' perhaps, their Ruin depends upon keeping it. But it behov'd *me*, on more Accounts than it would any body else, as I hinted before, to examine this Matter narrowly; because, if Mr. *H.* should



should marry her, it would have been laid upon Mr. *B.*'s Example — And if *Polly* should be ruin'd, it would be a sad thing; and People would have said, Ay, she could take Care enough of herself; but none at all of her Servant: *Her* Waiting-maid had a much less watchful Mistress, than *Pamela* found, or the Matter would not have been thus.

WELL, *Polly*, I see, continued I, that you will not speak out to me. You may have *several* Reasons for it, possibly, tho' not *one* good one. But as soon as Lady *Davers* comes in, who has a great Concern in this Matter, as well as Lord *Davers*, and are answerable to Lord *H.* in a Matter of so much Importance as this, I will leave it to her Ladyship's Consideration, and shall no more concern myself to ask you Questions about it—For then I must take her Ladyship's Directions, and part with you, to be sure.

THE poor Girl, frightened at this, (for every body fears Lady *Davers*) wrung her Hands, and begg'd, for God's sake, I would not acquaint Lady *Davers* with it.

BUT how can I help it? — Must I not connive at your Proceedings, if I do not? You are no Fool, *Polly*, in other Cases. Tell me, How is it possible for me, in my Situation, to avoid it?

I WILL tell your Ladyship the whole Truth; indeed I will — if you will not tell Lady *Davers*. I am ready to sink at the Thoughts of Lady *Davers*'s knowing any thing of this.

THIS looked sadly. I pity'd her, but yet was angry in my Mind; for I saw too plainly, that  
her

her Conduct could not bear a Scrutiny, not even in *her own* Opinion, poor Creature!

ISAID, Make me acquainted with the Whole.

WILL your Ladyship promise —

I'LL promise nothing, *Polly* — When I have heard all you think proper to say, I will do what befits me to do; but with as much Tenderneſs as I can for you — and that's all you ought to expect me to promise.

WHY then, Madam — But how can I ſpeak it? — I can ſooner ſpeak to any body, than to Lady *Davers* and you, Madam — For her Ladyſhip's Paſſion, and your Ladyſhip's Virtue — How ſhall I? — And then ſhe threw herſelf at my Feet, and hid her Face with her Apron.

I WAS in Agonies for her almoſt; I wept over her; I raiſed her up, and ſaid, Tell me all — You cannot tell me worſe than I apprehend, nor, I hope, ſo bad! Oh! *Polly*, tell me ſoon — For you give me great Pain —

AND my Back, with Grief and Compaſſion for the poor Girl, was ready to open, as it ſeem'd to me — In my former Diſtreſſes, I have been overcome by Fainting next to Death, and was depriv'd of Senſe for ſome Moments — But elſe, I imagine, I muſt have felt ſome ſuch affecting Senſations, as the unhappy Girl's Caſe gave me.

THEN, Madam, I own, ſaid ſhe, I have been too faulty.

As how! — As what! — In what Way! — How faulty? — asked I, as quick as Thought: You are not ruin'd, are you? — Tell me, *Polly*.

No, Madam; but —

BUT,

BUT, what? — Say, but what?

I HAD consented —

To what?

To his Proposals, Madam.

WHAT Proposals?

WHY, Madam, I was to *live* with Mr. H.

I UNDERSTAND you too well — But is it too late to break so wretched a Bargain? — Have you already made a Sacrifice of your Honour?

No, Madam; but I have given it under my Hand.

UNDER your *Hand*! — Ah! *Polly*, it is well if you have not given it under your *Heart* too. But what Foolishness is this! What Consideration has he made you?

HE has given it under his Hand, That he will always love me, and when his Lordship's Father dies, he will own me.

WHAT Foolishness is this, on both sides! — But are you willing to be released from this vile Bargain?

INDEED I am, Madam, and I told him so Yesterday. But, he says, He will sue me, and ruin me, if I don't stand to it.

YOU are ruin'd, if you do! — And I wish — But, tell me, *Polly*, Are you not ruin'd as it is?

INDEED I am not, Madam.

I DOUBT then, you were upon the Brink of it, had not this providential Indisposition kept me at home — You met, I suppose, to conclude your shocking Bargain. — O poor unhappy Girl! — But let me see what he has given under his Hand?

HE



HE has 'em both, Madam, to be drawn up fair, and in a strong Hand, that shall be like a Record.

COULD I have thought, Miss, that a Girl of Nineteen could be so ignorant, in a Point so important, when in every thing else she has shewn no Instances like this stupid Folly?

HAS he given you Money?

YES, Madam, he gave me—he gave me—a Note. Here it is. He says, Any body will give me Money for it.

AND this was a Bank Note of 50 *l.* which she pulled out of her Stays.

I INSTANTLY thought of those Lines of Cowley, which my dear Lady several times made me read to her; tho' these supposed an infinitely more excusable Case — *Marriage* for Money.

*Take Heed, take Heed, thou lovely Maid!  
Nor be by glitt'ring Ills betray'd!  
Thyself for Money! O let no Man know  
The Price of Beauty fall'n so low!  
What Dangers ought'st thou not to dread,  
When Love, that's blind, is by blind Fortune led?*

THE Result was, He was to settle 100 *l.* a Year upon her and *hers*, poor, poor Girl!—And was to *own her*, as she calls it (but as Wife or Mistress, she stipulated not) when his Father dy'd, and he came into the Title and Estate.

I TOLD her, it was impossible for me to conceal the Matter from Lady *Davers*, if she would not, by her Promises to be govern'd intirely by me,

me, and to abandon all Thoughts of Mr. *H.* give me room to conclude, that the wicked Bargain was at an End.

AND to keep the poor Creature in some Spirits, and to enable her to look up, and to be more easy under my Direction, I blamed *him* more than I did *her* : Tho', considering what Virtue requires of a Woman, and Custom has made shameless in a Man, I think the poor Girl inexcusable, and shall not be easy while she is about me. For she is more to blame, because, of the Two, she has more Wit than the Man.

BUT what can I do? thought I. If I put her away, 'twill be to throw her directly into his Hands. He won't stay here long; and she *may* see her Folly. But yet, her Eyes were open: She knew what she had to trust to — And by their wicked Beginning, and her encouraging Repulses, I doubt she would have been utterly ruin'd that very Day.

I KNEW the Rage Lady *Davers* would be in with both. So this was another Embarrass. And yet, should my good Intentions be frustrated, and they should conclude their vile Bargain, and it appear'd that I knew of it, but would not acquaint her, then should I have been more blam'd than any Mistress of a Family, circumstanc'd as I am.

UPON the Whole, As to the Girl, I resolv'd to comfort her as well as I could, till I had gain'd her Confidence, that my Advice might have the more Weight with her, and by degrees be the more likely to reclaim her: For, poor Soul!  
there

there would be an End of her Reputation, the most precious of all Jewels, the Moment the Matter was known; and that would be a sad thing!

AND as to the Man, I thought it best to take Courage (and you, that know me, will say, I must have a good deal more than usual) to talk to Mr. *H.* on this Subject.

AND the poor Body consenting I should, and, with great Protestations, declaring her Sorrow and Repentance, begging me to get her Note of Hand again, on which she laid a foolish Stress, and desiring me to give him back his Note of 50*l.* I went down to find him.

HE shunn'd me, as a Thief would a Constable at the Head of a Hue and Cry. As I enter'd one Place or Room, he went into another, looking with conscious Guilt, but yet confidently humming a Tune. At last I fix'd him speaking to *Rachel*, bidding her tell *Polly*, He wanted to send a Message by her to her Lady. By which I doubted not, he was desirous to know what she had owned, in order to govern himself accordingly.

HIS Back was toward me; and I said, Mr. *H.* here I am myself, to take your Commands.

HE gave a Caper half a Yard high — Madam, I wanted — I wanted to speak to — I would have spoken with —

YOU wanted to send *Polly* to me, perhaps, Mr. *H.* to ask, If I would take a little Walk with you in the Garden?

VERY true, Madam! — Very true indeed! — You have guess'd the Matter — I thought it was



was pity, this fine Day, as every body was taking an Airing —

WELL then, Sir, please to lead the Way, and I'll attend you.

YET I fancy, Madam, the Wind is a little too high for you — Won't you catch Cold?

No, never fear, Mr. *H.* I am not afraid of a little Air.

I WILL attend you presently, Madam: You'll be in the great Gravel Walk, or on the Terrace — I'll wait upon you in an Instant.

I HAD the Courage to take hold of his Arm, as if I had like to have slipt; for, thought I, thou shalt not see the Girl, worthy Friend, till I have talk'd to thee a little, if thou dost then — Excuse me, Mr. *H.* I hope I have not hurt my Foot! — I must lean upon you.

WILL you be pleas'd, Madam, to have a Chair? I fear you have sprain'd your Foot! — Shall I help you to a Chair?

No, no, Sir, I shall walk it off, if I hold by you.

So he had no Excuse to leave me, and we proceeded into the Garden. But never did any thing look so silly! — So like a *foolish Fellow*, as his Aunt calls him. He look'd, if possible, half a dozen Ways at once; hem'd, cough'd, wriggled about, turn'd his Head behind him every now-and-then, and started half a dozen silly Subjects, in hopes to hinder me from speaking.

I APPEAR'D, I believe, under some Concern how to begin with him; for he would have it, I was

was not very well; and begg'd he might step in one Minute, to desire Mrs. *Jervis* to attend me.

So I resolv'd to begin with him, lest I should lose the Opportunity, seeing my Eel so very slippery. And placing myself on the Seat at the upper End of the Gravel Walk, I asked him to sit down. He declined it, and would wait upon me presently, he said, and again was going. So I began—It is easy for me, Mr. *H.* to penetrate the Reason why you are so willing to leave me: But 'tis for your *own* sake, that I desire you to hear me, that no Mischief may ensue among Friends and Relations, on an Occasion to which you are no Stranger.

LAUD, Madam, What can you mean? — Surely, Madam, you don't think amiss of a little innocent Liberty, or so!

MR. *H.* reply'd I, I want not any Evidence of your inhospitable Designs upon a poor unwary young Creature, whom your Birth and Quality have found it too easy a Task to influence.

INHOSPITABLE DESIGNS, Madam! — A harsh Word, by Gad! — You very nice Ladies cannot admit of the least Freedom in the world! — Why, Madam, I have kiss'd a Lady's Woman before now, in a civil way or so, and never was call'd to an Account for it, as a Breach of Hospitality.

'TIS not for me, Mr. *H.* to proceed to *very nice* Particulars with a Gentleman who can act as you have done, by a poor Girl, that could not have had the Assurance to look up to a Man of your Quality, had you not levell'd all Distinction  
between

between you, in order to level the weak Creature to the common Dirt of the Highway. I must tell you, that the poor Girl heartily repents of her Folly; and, to shew you, that it signifies nothing to deny it, she begs you will give her back the Note of her Hand you have extorted from her Foolishness; and I hope you'll be so much of a Gentleman, as not to keep in your Power such a Testimony of the Weakness of any of the Sex.

HAS she told you that, Madam?—Why may-be — indeed — I can't but say — Truly, it mayn't look so well to you, Madam: But young Folks will have Frolicks — It was nothing but a Frolick — Let me be *hang'd*, if it was!

BE pleas'd then, Sir, to give up her Note to me to return to her — Reputation should not be frolick'd with, Sir; especially that of a poor Girl, who has nothing else to depend upon.

I'LL give it to her myself, if you please, Madam, and laugh at her into the Bargain. Why, 'tis comical enough, if the little Pug thought I was in Earnest. I must have a Laugh or two at her, Madam, when I give it her up.

SINCE it is but a Frolick, Mr. *H.* you won't take it amiss, that when we are set down to Supper, we call *Polly* in, and demand a Sight of her Note; and that will make every one merry, as well as you.

COT-so, Madam, that mayn't be so well, neither! — For, perhaps, they will be apt to think it is in Earnest; when, as I hope to live,



'tis but a Jest: Nothing in the world else, upon Honour!

I PUT on then a still more serious Air — As you *hope to live*, say you, Mr. H.! — and *upon your Honour!* — How fear you not an instant Punishment for this Appeal! And what is the *Honour* you swear by? — Take that, and answer me, Sir; Do Gentlemen give away Bank Notes for *Frolicks*, and for *mere Jest*s? and *nothing in the world else?* — I am sorry to be oblig'd to deal thus with you. But I thought I was talking to a Gentleman, who would not forfeit his Veracity; and that in so solemn an Instance as this!

HE look'd like a Man Thunder-struck. His Face was distorted, and his Head seem'd to turn about upon his Neck, like a Weather-cock in a Hurricane, to all Points of the Compass. His Hands clench'd as in a Passion, and yet Shame and Confusion struggling in every Limb and Feature.

AT last he said, I am confoundedly betray'd. But if I am expos'd to my Uncle and Aunt, (for the Wretch thought of nobody but himself) I am undone, and shall never be able to look 'em in the Face. 'Tis true, I had a Design upon her; and since she has betray'd me, I think I may say, that she was as willing, almost, as I.

UNGENEROUS, contemptible Wretch, thought I! — But such of our Sex as can thus give up their Virtue, ought to expect no better: For *he* who sticks not at *one* bad Action, will not scruple *another* to vindicate himself: And so, Devil-like, become the Tempter, and the Accuser too!

BUT

BUT if you will be so good, said he, with Hands up-lifted, as to take no Notice of this to my Uncle, and especially to my Aunt and Mr. *B.* I swear to you, I never will think of her as long as I live.

AND you'll bind this Promise, will you, Sir? by *your Honour*, and as you *hope to live*!

DEAR, good Madam, forgive me, I beseech you: Don't be so severe upon me. By all that's —

DON'T swear, Mr. *H.* But as an Earnest that I may believe you, give me back the Girl's foolish Note, that, tho' 'tis of no Signification, she may not have *that* to witness to her Folly.

HE took out his Pocket-Book: There it is, Madam!—And I beg you'll forgive this Attempt. I see, I ought not to have made it. I doubt it was a Breach of the Laws of Hospitality, as you say. But to make it known, will only expose me, and it can do no Good; and Mr. *B.* will perhaps resent it, and my Aunt will never let me hear the last of it, nor my Uncle neither—And I shall be sent to travel again—And (added the poor Creature) I was once in a Storm, and the crossing the Sea again, would be Death to me.

WHAT a Wretch art thou, thought I! — What could such a one as thou find to say to a poor Creature, that, if put in the Scale against Considerations of Virtue, should make the latter kick the Beam? — Poor, poor *Polly Barlow*! thou art sunk indeed! Too low for Excuse, and almost beneath Pity!

I TOLD him, If I could observe, that nothing pass'd between them, that should lay me under a Necessity of revealing the Matter, I should not be forward to expose him, nor the Maiden either. But that he must, in his own Judgment, excuse me, if I made every body acquainted with it, if I were to see the Correspondence between them likely to be renewed or carried on: For, added I, in that Case, I should owe it to myself, to Mr. *B.* to Lord and Lady *Davers*, and to You, and to the unhappy Body too, to do so.

HE would needs drop down on one Knee to promise this; and, with a thousand Acknowledgements, left me, to find Mr. *Colbrand*, in order to ride to meet the Coach on its Return.

I WENT in, and gave the foolish Note to the silly Girl, which she receiv'd eagerly, and immediately burnt; and I told her, I would not suffer her to come near me but as little as possible, when I was in Company, while Mr. *H.* staid; but consign'd her intirely to the Care of Mrs. *Fervis*, to whom only, I said, I would hint the Matter as tenderly as I could: And for this, I added, I had more Reasons than One; First, to give her the Benefit of a good Gentlewoman's Advice, to which I had myself formerly been beholden, and from whom I concealed nothing: Next, To keep her out of Mr. *H.*'s Way: And, lastly, That I might have an Opportunity, from Mrs. *Fervis*'s Opinion, to judge of the Sincerity of her Repentance: For, *Polly*, said I, you must imagine, so regular and uniform as all our Family is, and so good as I thought all the People about me were,



were, that I could not suspect, that she, the Duties of whose Place made her nearest to my Person, was the farthest from what I wish'd.

I HAVE set this Matter so strongly before her, and Mrs. *Fervis* has so well seconded me, that I hope the best; for the Grief the poor Creature carries in her Looks, and expresses in her Words, cannot be described; frequently accusing herself with Tears, saying often to Mrs. *Fervis*, She is not worthy to stand in the Presence of a Mistress, whose Example she has made so bad a Use of, and whose Lessons she had so ill followed.

I AM sadly troubled at this Matter, however; but I take great Comfort in reflecting, that my sudden Indisposition look'd like a providential Thing, which may save one poor Soul, and be a seasonable Warning to her, as long as she lives.

MEAN time, I must observe, that at Supper last Night, Mr. *H.* look'd abject, mean, and like a poor Thief, as I thought; and (conscious of his disappointed Folly, tho' I seldom glanc'd my Eye upon him) had less to say for himself than ever.

AND once my Lady *Davers*, laughing, said, I think in my Heart, my Nephew looks more foolish every time I see him, than the last.

HE stole a Look at me, and blush'd; and my Lord said, *Jackey* has some Grace! — He blushes! — Hold up thy Head, Nephew! — Hast thou nothing at all to say for thyself?

SIR *Jacob* said, A Blush becomes a young Gentleman! — I never saw one before tho', in Mr. *H.* — What's the Matter, Sir?

ONLY, said Lady *Davers*, his Skin or his Conscience is mended, that's all.

THANK you, Madam, was all he said, bowing to his Aunt, and affecting a careless, yet confused Air, as if he whisper'd a Whistle.

OH Wretch! thought I, see what it is to have a condemning Conscience; while every *innocent* Person looks round, easy, smiling and erect!— But yet it was not the Shame of a bad Action, I doubt, but being discover'd and disappointed, that give him this Confusion of Face.

WHAT a sad thing it is for a Person to be guilty of such Actions, as shall put it into the Power of another, even by a Look, to mortify him! And if poor Souls can be thus abjectly struck at such a Discovery as this, by a Fellow Creature, how must they appear before an unerring and omniscient Judge, with a Conscience standing in the Place of a Thousand Witnesses? and calling in vain upon the *Mountains to fall upon them*, and the *Hills to cover them*!

How serious this Subject makes one!

---

### S A T U R D A Y Evening.

I AM just retir'd from a kind of fatiguing Service; for who should come hither to dine with Mr. *B.* but that sad Rake Sir *Charles Hargrave*, and Mr. *Walgrave*, Mr. *Sedley*, and Mr. *Floyd*, Three as bad as himself; inseparable Companions, whose whole Delight, and that avowedly, is Drinking, and Hunting, and Lewdness

ness; but otherwise, Gentlemen of Wit, and large Estates? Three of them broke in upon us, at the \* Hall, on the happiest Day of my Life, to our great Regret; and they had been long threatening to make this Visit, in order to see me, as they told Mr. *B.*

THEY whipt out Two Bottles of *Champaign* instantly, for a *Whet*, as they call'd it, and went to view the Stud and the Kennel, and then took a Walk in the Garden till Dinner was ready; my Lord *Davers*, Mr. *H.* and Sir *Jacob*, as well as Mr. *B.* (for they are all acquainted) accompanying them.

SIR *Charles*, it seems, as Lord *Davers* told me afterwards, said, He long'd to see Mrs. *B.* She was the Talk where-ever he went, and he had conceiv'd a high Opinion of her beforehand,

LORD *Davers* said, I defy you, Gentlemen, to think so highly of her as she deserves, take Mind and Person together.

MR. *Floyd* said, He never saw any Woman yet, who came up to what he expected, where Fame had been lavish in her Praise.

BUT how, Brother Baronet, said Sir *Charles* to Sir *Jacob*, came *you* to be reconcil'd to her?---- I heard that you would never own her.

OONS, Man, said Sir *Jacob*, I was taken in ---- I was, by my Soul!---- They contriv'd to clap her upon me, as Lady *Jenny C.* and pretended they'd keep r'other out of my Sight; and I

\* See Vol. II. p. 179.



was plaguily bit, and forc'd to get off as well as I could.

THAT was a Bite indeed, said Mr. *Walgrave*; and so you fell a praising Lady *Jenny*, I warrant, to the Skies!

YE—AS, by my Soul, (drawling out the affirmative Monosyllable) I was us'd most scurvily; 'faith I was.—I bear 'em a Grudge for't still, I can tell 'em that;—for I have hardly been able to hold up my Head like a Man ever since—but am forc'd to sneak about, and go, and come, and do as they bid me. By my Troth, I never was so manageable in my Life.

YOUR *Herefordshire* Neighbours, Sir *Jacob*, said Mr. *Sedley*, with an Oath, will rejoice to hear this; for the whole County there cannot manage you.

I'M quite cow'd now, by my Soul, as you will see by-and-by: Nay, for that Matter, if you can set Mrs. *B.* a talking, there's ne'er a Puppy of you all will care to open your Lips, except to say as she says.

NEVER fear, old Boy, said Sir *Charles*, we'll bear our Parts in Conversation. I never saw the Woman yet, who could give me either Awe or Love for Six Minutes together. What think you, Mr. *B.*? Have you any Notion, that your Lady will have so much Power over us?

I THINK, Sir *Charles*, I have one of the finest Women in *England*; but I neither expect nor desire you Rakes should see her with my Eyes.

You know, if I have a Mind to love her, and make Court to her too, Mr. *B.* I will: And I  
am

am half in Love with her already, altho' I have not seen her.

THEY came in when Dinner was near ready ; and the Four Gentlemen took each a large Bumper of old Hock for another Whet.

THE Countess, Lady *Davers*, and I, came down together. The Gentlemen knew our Two noble Guests, and were known to them in Person, as well as by Character. Mr. *B.* in his usual kind and encouraging Manner, took my Hand, and presented the Four Gentlemen to me, each by his Name. Sir *Charles* said, pretty bluntly, That he hop'd he was more welcome to me now, than the last time he was under the same Roof with me ; for he had been told since, That *that* was our happy Day.

I SAID, Mr. *B.*'s Friends were always welcome to me.

'TIS well, Madam, said Mr. *Sedley*, we did not know how it was. We should have quarter'd ourselves upon Mr. *B.* for a Week together, and kept him up Day and Night.

I THOUGHT this Speech deserved no Answer, especially as they were Gentlemen who wanted no Countenance ; and address'd myself to Lord *Davers*, who is always kindly making Court to me : I hope, my good Lord, you find yourself quite recover'd of your Head-ach ? — (of which he complain'd at Breakfast).

I THANK you, my dear Sister, pretty well.

I WAS telling Sir *Charles*, and the other Gentlemen, Niece, said Sir *Jacob*, how I was cheated here, when I came first, with a Lady *Fenny*.

IT

IT was a very lucky Cheat for me, Sir *Jacob*; for it gave you a Prepossession in my Favour, under so advantageous a Character, that I could never have expected otherwise.

I WISH, said the Countess, my Daughter, for whom Sir *Jacob* took you, had Mrs. *B.*'s Qualities to boast of.

How am I oblig'd to your Ladyship's Goodness, return'd I, when you treat me with even greater Indulgence than you use to so beloved a Daughter!

NAY, now you talk of treating, said Sir *Charles*, when, Ladies, will you treat our Sex with the Politeness which you shew to one another?

WHEN your Sex deserve it, Sir *Charles*, answer'd Lady *Davers*.

WHO is to be Judge of that? said Mr. *Walgrave*.

NOT the Gentlemen, I hope, reply'd my Lady.

WELL then, Mrs. *B.* said Sir *Charles*, we bespeak your good Opinion of *us*; for you have *ours*.

I AM oblig'd to you, Gentlemen; but I must be more cautious in declaring *mine*, lest it should be thought I am influenc'd by your kind, and perhaps too hasty Opinions of me.

SIR *Charles* swore they had *seen* enough of me the Moment I entered the Parlour, and *heard* enough the Moment I open'd my Lips, to answer for *their* Opinions of me.

I SAID, I made no doubt, when *they* had as good a Subject to expatiate upon, as I had in the  
Pleasure



Pleasure before me, of seeing so many agreeable Friends of Mr. *B.*'s, they would maintain the Title they claim'd to every one's good Opinion.

THIS, said Sir *Jacob*, is binding you over, Gentlemen, to your good Behaviour: — You must know, my Niece never shoots flying, as *you* do.

THE Gentlemen laugh'd: Is it shooting flying, Sir *Jacob*, return'd Sir *Charles*, to praise that Lady?

ADS-BUD, I did not think of that.

O, SIR *Jacob*, said the Countess, you need not be at a Fault; — for a good Sportsman always hits his Mark, flying or not: And the Gentlemen had so fair a one, that they could not well miss it.

YOU are fairly help'd over the Stile, Sir *Jacob*, said Mr. *Floyd*.

AND indeed I wanted it; tho' I limp'd like a Puppy, before I was lame. One can't think of every thing, as one us'd to do at your Time of Life, Gentlemen.

THIS flippant Stuff was all that pass'd, which I *can* recite; for the rest, at Table, and after Dinner, was too polite by half for me: Such as, The Quantity of Wine each Man could *carry off*, that was the Phrase; Dogs, Horses, Hunting, Racing, Cock-fighting; and all accompanied with Swearing, and Cursing, and that in good Humour, and out of Wantonness (the least excusable, and most profligate Sort of Swearing and Cursing of all); loud Laughing, with a little touching

touching now-and-then on the Borders of Sir *Simon's* beloved Subject, to try if they could make a Lady shew she *understood* their Hints by her *Blushes* \*; a certain Indication, that those who seek a Blush in others, are past it themselves, and, by their turning it into Ridicule, when they find it in their Friends, that they would not for the World have it imputed to them; talking Three or Four at once, and as loud as if they were in the Field pursuing their Game, at a Quarter of a Mile's Distance from one another.

THESE were the Subjects, and this the Entertainment, which held my Ladies and me for One Hour, after a tedious Dinner; when we retir'd: and glad we were to do so. The Gentlemen lik'd the Wine so well, that we had the Felicity to drink Tea and Coffee by ourselves; only Mr. *B.* (upon our inviting the Gentlemen to partake with us) sliding in for a few Minutes, to tell us, they would stick by what they had, and taking a Dish of Coffee with us.

I SHOULD not omit one Observation; That Sir *Jacob*, when they were gone, said, They were *pure Company*: And Mr. *H.* That he never was so delighted in his *born Days*. — While the Two Ladies put up their Prayers, that they might never have such another Entertainment. And, being encourag'd by their Declaration, I presumed to join in the same Petition.

YET, it seems, these are Men of Wit! I believe they must be so — because I could neither

\* See Vol. II. p. 96.

like, nor understand them. — Yet, if their Conversation had much Wit in it, I should think my Ladies would have found it out.

HOWEVER, this they did find out, and agree in, That these Gentlemen were of the true modern Cast of Libertines and Foxhunters, and, indifferently as they liked them, could not be easily out-done by any of the same Stamp in *England*.

GOD defend my dear Miss *Darnford*, and every worthy single Lady, from such a Husband, as a Gentleman of this Character would make!

I WONDER really, how Mr. *B.* who chuses not this sort of Conversation, and always (whatever Faults he had besides) was a *sober* Gentleman, can sit for Hours so easy and chearful in it; and yet he never says much, when they are in their high Delight.

WHEN all's done, Miss, there are very unpleasant Things, which Persons in *genteel* Life are forced to put up with, as well as those in *lower*; and were the one to be balanced against the other, the Difference, as to true Happiness, would not perhaps be so great, as People in the latter imagine, — if it did not turn in their Favour.

THE Gentlemen permit me to add, went away very merry, to ride Ten Miles by Owl-light; for they would not accept of Beds here. They had Two *French* Horns with them, and gave us a Blast, or Flourish or two, at going off. Each had a Servant besides: But the Way they were in, would have given me more Concern than it did, had they been related to Mr. *B.* and  
less



less used to it. And indeed it is a Happiness, that such Gentlemen take no more Care, than they generally do, to interest any body, intimately, in their Healths and Preservation; for these are all single Men. Nor is the Publick, any more than the Private, under any Necessity to be much concern'd about them; for let such Persons go when they will, if they continue single, their next Heir cannot well be a worse Commonwealth's-man; and there is a great Chance he may be a better.

You know I end my *Saturdays* seriously. And this, to what I have already said, makes me add, that I cannot express how much I am, my dear Miss,

*Your faithful and affectionate*

P. B.

## LETTER XXXVIII.

*From Mrs. B. to Miss DARNFORD. In Answer to Letters XXXV. and XXXVI.*

*My dear Miss DARNFORD,*

I SKIP over the little Transactions of several Days, to let you know how much you rejoice me, in telling me \* *Sir Simon* has been so kind as to comply with my Wishes. Both your charming Letters came to my Hand together, and I thank you a hundred times for them; and I thank

\* See p. 419.

your

your dear Mamma, and Sir *Simon* too, for the Pleasure they have given me in this obliging Permission. How happy shall we be together! — But how long will you be permitted to stay, tho'? All the Winter, I hope: — And then, when that is over, let us set out together, if God shall spare us, directly for *Lincolnshire*, and so pass most of the Summer likewise in each other's Company. What a sweet Thought is this! — Let me indulge it a little while.

MR. *B.* read your Letters, and says, You are a charming young Lady, and surpass yourself in every Letter. I told him, that he was more interested in the Pleasure I took in this Favour of Sir *Simon's*, than he imagin'd. As how, my Dear? said he. A plain Case, Sir, reply'd I: For, endeavouring to improve myself by Miss *Darnford's* Conversation and Behaviour, I shall every Day be more worthy of your Favour. He kindly would have it, that nobody, no, not Miss *Darnford* herself, excell'd me.

'T is right, you know, Miss, that Mr. *B.* should think so; tho' I must know nothing at all, if I was not sensible how inferior I am to my dear Miss *Darnford*: And yet, when I look abroad now-and-then, I could be a proud Slut, if I would, and not yield the Palm to many others. — But don't let every body know how vain I am. Yet they may, too, if they take in, at the same time, the Grounds of my Vanity; for they must then allow, that I have no small Reason to be proud, in having so happily won the Favour of Two such  
Judges,

Judges, as Mr. *B.* and Miss *Darnford*, and have the good Fortune, likewise, to rejoice in that of Lady *Davers*, and the Countess of *C.*

WELL, my dear Miss,

### SUNDAY

**I**S past and gone, as happily as the last; the Two Ladies, and, at *their* earnest Request, Sir *Jacob*, bearing us Company, in the Evening Part. My *Polly* was there, Morning and Evening, with her Heart broken almost, poor Girl!— I put her in a Corner of my Closet, because her Concern should not be minded. Mrs. *Jervis* gives me great Hopes of her: — And she seems to abhor the Thoughts of Mr. *H.* — But as there proves to be so little of real Love in her Heart, (tho', even if there had, she would have been without Excuse) is she not the wickedder by half for that, Miss? To consent, and take *Earnest*, as I may say, to live with a Man, who did not pretend to marry her!—How inexcusable this!— What a Frailty! — Yet, so honestly descended, so modest in Appearance, and an Example so much better — forgive me to say — before her! — Dear, dear! how could it be?

SIR *Jacob* was much pleased with our Family Order, and said, 'Twas no Wonder I *kept* so good myself, that was his Word, and made others so; and he was of Opinion, that the Four Rakes (for he run on, how much they admir'd me) would be converted, if they saw how well I pass'd my Time, and how chearful and easy every

one,



one, as well as myself, was under it. He said, When he came home, he thought he must take such a Method himself in *his* Family; for, he believ'd, it would make not only better Masters and Mistresses, but better Children, and better Servants too. But, poor Gentleman! he has, I doubt, a great deal to mend in *himself*, before he can begin such a Practice with Efficacy in his *Family*.

---

## M O N D A Y.

I N the Afternoon, Sir *Jacob* took his Leave of us, highly satisfy'd with us both, and *particularly* — so he said — with me; and promis'd, that my *Two Cousins*, as he call'd his Daughters, and his Sister, an old Maiden Lady, if they went to Town this Winter, should visit me, and be improved by me; that was his Word. Mr. *B.* accompany'd him some Miles on his Journey, attended by Mr. *Colbrand* and *Abraham*; and the Two Ladies, and Lord *Davers*, and I, took an Airing in the Coach.

Mr. *B.* was so kind as to tell me, when he came home, with a Whisper, that Miss *Goodwin* presented her Duty to me.

I HAVE got a Multitude of fine Things for the dear little Creature, and Mr. *B.* promises to give me a Dairy-house Breakfast, when our Guests are gone.

I INCLOSE the History of this little Charmer\*, by Mr. *B.*'s Consent, since you are to do us the

\* See Vol. II. p. 401, & seq.

Honour, as he (as well as I) pleases himself, to be one of our Family — But keep it to yourself, whatever you do. I am Guaranty, that you will; and have put it in a separate Paper, that you may burn it as soon as you have read it. — For I shall want your Advice, it may be, on this Subject, having a great Desire to get this Child into my Possession; and yet Lady *Davers* has given me a \* Hint, that dwells a little with me. When I have the Pleasure I hope for, I will lay all before you, and be determin'd, and proceed, as far as I have Power, by you. You, my good Father and Mother, have seen the Story in my former Papers.

---

*T U E S D A Y.*

**Y**OU must know, I pass over the Days thus swiftly, not that I could not fill them up with Writing, as ample as I have done the former: But intending only to give you a general Idea of our Way of Life and Conversation, and having gone thro' a whole Week and more, you will be able, from what I have recited, to form a Judgment how it is with us, one Day with another. As for Example, Now-and-then neighbourly Visits received and paid. Needle-work between whiles. Musick. Cards sometimes, tho' I don't love them — One more benevolent Round — Improving Conversations with my dear Mr. *B.* and my Two good Ladies — A Lesson

\* See p. 121. of this Volume.

from him, when alone, either in *French*, or *Latin*. — A new Pauper Case or two — A Visit from the good Dean — Mr. *Williams's* Departure, in order to put the new-projected Alteration in Force, which is to deprive me of my Chaplain — (By the way, the Dean is highly pleased with this Affair, and the Motives to it, Mr. *Adams* being a Favourite of his, and a distant Relation of his Lady) Mr. *H.'s* and *Polly's* mutual Endeavour to avoid one another — My Lessons to the poor Girl, and Cautions, as if she were my Sister.

THESE, my dear Miss, and my honoured Father and Mother, are the pleasant Employments of our Time; so far as we Females are concern'd: For the Gentlemen hunt, ride out, and divert themselves in their way, and bring us home the News and Occurrences they meet with abroad, and now-and-then a straggling Gentleman they pick up in their Diversions. And so I shall not inlarge upon these Articles, after the tedious Specimens I have already given. Yet the Particulars of One Conversation, possibly, I may give you another time, when I have least to do; because Three young Ladies, Relations of Mrs. *Towers*, and Mrs. *Artkur*, were brought to visit me, for the Benefit of my Instructions; for that was the kind Compliment of those Ladies to me.

---

### WEDNESDAY, THURSDAY.

COULD you ever have thought, Miss, that Husbands have a Dispensing Power over their Wives, which Kings are not allowed over the



Laws? I have this Day had a smart Debate with Mr. *B.* and I fear it will not be the only one upon this Subject. Can you believe, that if a Wife thinks a Thing her Duty to do, and her Husband does not approve of her doing it, he can dispense with her performing it, and no Sin shall lie at her Door? Mr. *B.* maintains this Point. I have great Doubts about it; particularly One; That if a Matter be my Duty, and he dispenses with my Performance of it, whether, even altho' that were to clear *me* of the Sin, it will not fall upon *himself*? And to be sure, Miss, a good Wife would be as much concern'd at this, as if it was to remain upon *her*. Yet he seems set upon it. What can one do? — Did you ever hear of such a Notion before, Miss? Of such a Prerogative in a Husband? Would you care to subscribe to it?

THIS is one of Mr. *B.*'s Particularities. He has several of them, the Effects, as I take it, of his former free Life. Polygamy, as I have mention'd heretofore, is another. That is a bad one indeed. Yet he is not so determin'd on this, as he seems to be on the other, in a certain Case, that is too *nice* for me, at present, to explain to you; and so I might as well have taken no Notice of it, as yet—Only the Argument was so present to my Mind: Held within this Hour, and I write a Journal, you know, of what passes.

BUT I will, some time hence, submit it, at least to *your* Judgments, my Father and Mother. You are well read in the Scriptures, and have gone thro' the Occasion often; and both Mr. *B.* and I build our Arguments on Scripture, tho' we  
are

are so different in our Opinions. He says, My Ladies are of his Opinion. I'm afraid they are, and so will not ask them. But perhaps, I mayn't live, and other things may happen; and so I'll say no more of it at present \*.

## F R I D A Y.

**M**R. H. and my Lord and Lady *Davers*, and the excellent Countess of C. having left us this Day, a good deal to my Regret, and, as it seemed, to their own, the former put the following Letter into my Hands, with an Air of Respect, and even Reverence. You will observe in it, that he says, He spells most lamentably; and this obliges me to give it you *literally*:

‘ *Deare good Madam,*

‘ **I** CANNOTT contente myselfe with common  
 ‘ Thanks, on leaving youres and Mr. B.’s hosp-  
 ‘ pitabel House, because of *thatt there* Affaire,  
 ‘ which I neede nott mention; and truly am  
 ‘ *ashamed* to mention, as I *have been* to looke  
 ‘ you in the Face, ever since itt happen’d. I don’t  
 ‘ knowe *how itt came aboute*; butt I thought  
 ‘ butt att first of *Joking* a little, or *soe*; and seeing  
 ‘ *Polley* heard me with more Atentiveness then I  
 ‘ expected, I was encouraged to proceede; and  
 ‘ *soe*, now I recollecte, itt *came aboute*.

‘ But shee is innoſent for mee; and I don’t  
 ‘ knowe how *thatt* came aboute neither; for wee

\* For the Sequel of this Matter, see Vol. IV. p. 10 & seq.

‘ were oute one Moone-lighte Nighte together,  
 ‘ in the Gardin, walking aboute; and afterwardes  
 ‘ tooke a *Napp* of two Houres, as I beleefe, in  
 ‘ the Summer-house in the littel Gardin, beeing  
 ‘ overpowred with Sleepe; for I woulde make  
 ‘ her lay her Head uppon my Breste, till, before  
 ‘ wee were awar, wee felle asleepe together.  
 ‘ Butt before thatt, wee hadd agreed on whatt  
 ‘ you discover’d.

‘ THISS is the whole Truthe, and all the In-  
 ‘ timasies wee ever hadd, *to speake off*. Butt I  
 ‘ beleefe wee shoulde have been better acquaintid,  
 ‘ hadd you nott, *luckily for mee!* prevented itt,  
 ‘ by beeing att home, when wee thought you  
 ‘ abroad. For I was to come to her, when shee  
 ‘ hemm’d *two or three times*; for, having made  
 ‘ a Contract, you knowe, Madam, it was nat-  
 ‘ turall enough to take the first Occasion to putt  
 ‘ itt in Force.

‘ SHE coulde not keepe her owne Secritt, and  
 ‘ may have tolde you more, perhapps, then is  
 ‘ true: So whatt I write is to *cleare mysefse*;  
 ‘ and to tell you, how sorry I am, in such a good  
 ‘ House as youres, and where their is so much  
 ‘ true Godlinefs, that I shoulde ever be *drawne*  
 ‘ *away* to have a Thoughte to dishonour itt. Butt  
 ‘ I will take care of being over-famillier for the  
 ‘ future with *Underlinges*; for, see how a Man  
 ‘ may bee *taken in!* — If shee hadd resented itt  
 ‘ att first, when I begun to kisse her, *or soe*, (for,  
 ‘ you knowe, wee younge Fellows will take Li-  
 ‘ berties sometimes, where they don’t become  
 ‘ us, to our owne Disparadgements chiefly, *that’s*  
 ‘ true)



‘ *true*) I should have hadd an *Awe* uppon mee ;  
‘ or iff shee had *tolde you* ; or butt *said* shee  
‘ woulde ; I shoulde have *flowne*, as soone as had  
‘ any Thoughtes further aboute *the matter*. —  
‘ But whatt hadd one of oure Sexe to do, *you*  
‘ *knowe*, Madam, when they finde *littell* Resist-  
‘ ence, and thatt shee woulde *stande quietly*, and  
‘ *telle no Tales*, and make no *greate Struggell*,  
‘ and not keepe out of *one’s Way* neither, butt  
‘ to *dilly-dally* on, till one broughte itt to more  
‘ then one att first intended ?

‘ *POOR Polley !* I pity her too. Don’t think  
‘ the worse of her, deare Madam, so as too turn  
‘ her away, because it may bee her Ruin. I don’t  
‘ desier too see her. I mought have been *drawne*  
‘ *in* to do strange foolish thinges, and been ruin’d  
‘ at the long Run ; for who knows where this  
‘ thing mought have ended ? My *Unkell* woulde  
‘ have never scene me. My *Father* too (his Lord-  
‘ shipp, you have hearde, Madam, is a very *croffe*  
‘ *Man*, and never lov’d *mee much*) mought have  
‘ cut off the Intaile. My *Aunte* woulde have  
‘ dispis’d mee, and scorn’d mee. I should have  
‘ been her foolishhe Fellowe in *Earneste*, nott in  
‘ *Jeste*, as now. *You* woulde have resented itt,  
‘ and Mr. *B.* who knows ? mought have call’d  
‘ me to Account, (for he is bloody *passionate*,  
‘ I saw thatt att the Hall, and has foughte Two or  
‘ Three Duells, as I have hearde) for abusing the  
‘ *Freedome of his House*, and breakeing the Lawes  
‘ of Hospitallity, as you tolde mee ; and so, it is  
‘ nott unlikely, I mighte have dy’d *like a Dogge*  
‘ *in a Ditch* ; and there would have been an

' Ende of a noble Family, that have been Peeres  
 ' of the Realme Time out of Minde. What a  
 ' fadd thing woulde this have been! A *publicke*  
 ' as well as *private* Loffe: For you know, Ma-  
 ' dam, whatt my Lady Countess said, and nobody  
 ' says better thinges, or knowes more of the  
 ' Matter, then her Ladyshipp, That every Peere  
 ' of the Realme is a Jewell in the Crowne. A  
 ' fine Saying! God grante, I may keep itt in  
 ' Minde, when my *Time comes*, and my Father  
 ' shall *happen too die*!

' WELL, butt, good Madam, cann you for-  
 ' give mee? You see how happy I am in my Dis-  
 ' apointment. But I must take another Sheete  
 ' of Paper. — I did nott think too write so  
 ' much; — for I don't love itt: Butt on this  
 ' Occasion, knowe nott how too leave off. — I  
 ' hope you cann reade my Letter: I knowe I write  
 ' a *clumsy* Hand, and *spelle moste lamentabelly*; for  
 ' I never had a Talient for these thinges. I was  
 ' readier by halfe to admire the *Orcherd-robbing*  
 ' *Picture* in *Lillie's Grammer*, then any other  
 ' Parte of the Book. Excuse my Nonsense, Ma-  
 ' dam: Butt many a time have I help'd to fill a  
 ' *Sackil*; and always supposed thatt Picture was  
 ' putt there on purpose to tell Boyes whatt Di-  
 ' versions are *alowed* them, and are *proper* for  
 ' them. Severall of my Schoole-fellows tooke it  
 ' for granted, as well as I, and wee coulde never  
 ' reconfile itt to oure Reason, why wee shoulde  
 ' bee punished for *practissing* a Lesson *taughte*  
 ' us by our Grammers.

' BUTT,

BUTT, hey, whither am I running! I never writt to you before, and never may againe, unlesse you, or Mr. *B.* commande itt, for youre Service. So pray excuse me, Madam.

I KNOWE I neede give no Advise to *Polley*, to take care of *first* Incouragements. Poore Girl! she mought have suffer'd sadly, as well as I. — For iff my Father, and my Unkell and Aunte, had requir'd mee to turne her off, you knowe itt woulde have been undutifull to have refus'd them, notwithstandinge our Bargaine. And Want of Duty to them, woulde have been to have added Faulte too Faulte: As you once observed, I remember, that One Faulte never comes alone, but drawes after itt generally Five or Six, to hide or vindicate itt, and *they* every one perhapps as many more *each*.

I SHALL never forgett severall of youre wise Sayinges. I have been vex'd, may I be *hang'd* if I have nott, many a time, thatt I coulde nott make such Observations as you make; who am so much *older* too, and a *Man* besides, and a *Peere's Son*, and a *Peere's Neffew*! But my Tallents lie *another way*; and by thatt time my Father dies, I hope to improve myselfe, in order to *cutt* such a Figgure, as may make mee no Disgrase to my *Name* or *Countrey*; for I shall have one Benefitt over many younge Lordes; thatt I shall be more fond of makeing *Observations* then *Speeches*, and so shall improve of course, you knowe.

WELL, butt whatt is all this to the Purpose? — I will keepe close to my Texte; and  
C  
thatt



‘ thatt is, to thank you, good Madam, for all the  
 ‘ Favours I have received in youre House; to  
 ‘ thank you for disapointing mee, and for con-  
 ‘ vinsing mee, in so kinde, yet so shameing a  
 ‘ manner, how wrong I was in the Matter of  
 ‘ *that there Polley*; and for not exposing my  
 ‘ Folly to any boddy but *myselfe* (for I shoulde  
 ‘ have been ready to *hang* myselfe, if you hadd);  
 ‘ and to begg youre Pardon for itt, and to assuer  
 ‘ you, thatt I will never offerr the like as long as  
 ‘ I breathe. I am, Madam, with the greatest  
 ‘ Respects,

*Toure moste obliged, moste faithfull, and  
 moste obedient humbell Servante,*

‘ J. H.

‘ Pray excuse Blotts and Blurrs.’

WELL, Miss *Darnford*, what shall we say to this fine Letter?—You’ll allow it to be an Original, I hope. Yet, may-be not. For how does one know, but it may be as well written, and as sensible a Letter, as this Class of People generally write?—But what then shall we be able to say for such poor Creatures of our Sex, as are *taken in*, as Mr. *H.* calls it, by such Pretty Fellows as this; who, if they may happen to *write* better, hardly *think* better, or design to *act* better, and are not so soon brought to Repentance, and Promises of Amendment?

MR. *H.* dresses well, is not a contemptible Figure of a Man, laughs, talks, where he can be heard, and his Aunt is not present;—and *cuts*, to use his own Word, a considerable Figure  
 in

in a Country Town — But see — Yet I will not say what I might — He is Lord *Davers's* Nephew; and if he makes his *Observations*, and *forbears* his *Speeches*, (I mean, can be silent, and only laugh when he sees somebody of more Sense laugh, and never *approve* or *condemn* but in *Leading-strings*) he may, possibly, pass in a Croud of Gentlemen. --- But poor, poor *Polly Barlow*! What *can* I say for *Polly Barlow*?

I HAVE a Time in View, when, possibly, my Papers may fall under the Inspection of a dear Gentleman, to whom, next to God, I am accountable for all my Actions and Correspondencies; so I will either write an Account of the Matter, and seal it up, separately, for Mr. *B.* or, at a proper Opportunity, will break it to him, and let him know (under Secrecy, if I can engage him to promise it) the Steps I took in it; for fear something should arise hereafter, when I cannot answer for myself, to render any thing dark or questionable in it. A Method, I believe, very proper to be taken by every marry'd Lady; and I presume the rather to say so, having had a good Example for it: For I have often thought of a little seal'd-up Parcel of Papers, my Lady made me burn in her Presence about a Month before she dy'd. — They are, *Pamela*, said she, such as I have no Reason to be concern'd about, let who will see them, could they know the Springs and Causes of them: But, for want of a Clue, my Son might be at a Loss what to think of several of those Letters, were he to find them, in looking over my other Papers, when I am no more.

LET

LET me add, that nothing could be more endearing than our Parting with our noble Guests. My Lady repeated her Commands for what she often engaged me to promise, that is to say, to renew the Correspondence begun between us, so much (as she was pleased to say) to her Satisfaction.

I COULD not help shewing her Ladyship, who was always inquiring after my Writing Employment, most of what pass'd between you and me, Miss; and she admires you much, and wish'd Mr. H. had more Wit, that was her Word: She should, in that Case, she said, be very glad to set on Foot a Treaty between you and him.

BUT that, I fancy, can never be tolerable to you; and I only mention it *en passant*. — There's a *French* Woman for you!

THE Countess was full of her kind Wishes for my Happiness; and my Lady *Davers* told me, That if I could give her timely Notice, she would be present on a *certain* Occasion.

BUT, my dear Miss, what could I say? — I know nothing of the Matter! — Only, that I am a sad Coward, and have a thousand Anxieties, which I cannot mention to any body.

BUT, if I have such in the honourable Estate of Matrimony, what must those poor Souls have, who have been seduced, and have all manner of Reason to apprehend, that the Crime shall be followed by a Punishment so *natural* to it? A Punishment *in kind*, as I may say; which, if it only ends in Forfeiture of Life, following the Forfeiture of Fame, must be thought merciful  
and



and happy beyond Expectation ; for how shall they lay Claim to the Hope that is given to Persons in their Circumstance, that *they shall be saved in Child-bearing*, since the Condition is, *if they CONTINUE in Faith, and Charity, and HOLINESS with SOBRIETY?*

Now, my honoured Mother, and my dear Miss, since I am upon this affecting Subject, does not this Text seem to give a comfortable Hope to a virtuous Woman, who shall die in this Circumstance, that she shall be happy in the Divine Mercies? For the Apostle, in the Context, says, *That he suffers not a Woman to teach, nor to usurp Authority over the Man, but to be in Silence.*—And what is the Reason he gives? Why, a Reason that is a natural Consequence of the Curse, on the first Disobedience, that she shall be in Subjection to her Husband. — For, says he *Adam was NOT deceived ; but the Woman, being deceived, was in the Transgression.* As much as to say, “ Had it not been for the Woman, “ *Adam* had kept his Integrity ; and therefore “ her Punishment shall be, as it is said, *I will “ greatly multiply thy Sorrow in thy Con- “ ception : In Sorrow shalt thou bring forth “ Children, — and thy Husband shall rule over “ thee.* But nevertheless, if thou shalt not survive the Sharpness of thy Sorrow, thy Death “ shall be deemed to be such an Alleviation of “ thy Part of the intailed Transgression, that thou “ shalt *be saved*, if thou hast CONTINUED in “ Faith, and Charity, and HOLINESS with “ SOBRIETY.”

THIS,

THIS, my honoured Parents, and my dear Friend, is *my* Paraphrase; and I reap no small Comfort from it, when I meditate upon it.

BUT I shall make you as serious as myself; and, my dear Miss, perhaps, frighten you from entering into a State, in which our poor Sex suffer so much, from the Bridal Morning, let it rise as gayly as it will upon a thoughtful Mind, to that affecting Circumstance, (throughout its whole Progression) for which, nothing but a tender, a generous, and a worthy Husband, can make them any Part of Amends. — And when one *is* so blest'd, one has so many Fears added to one's Sorrows; and so much Apprehension, thro' human Frailty, of being separated from so beloved a Partner, that a body had need of the greatest Fortitude to support one's self. But it may be I am the weakest and most apprehensive of my Sex — It may be I am! — And when one sees how common the Case is, and yet how few die in it; how uneasy many Ladies are, *not* to be in this Circumstance, (my good Lady *Davers* particularly, at times) and *Rachel* and *Hannah* in Holy Writ; and then how a childless Estate might lessen one in the Esteem of one's Husband, one ought to bring these Considerations in Balance, and to banish needless Fears. And so I will, if I can.

BUT a Word or two more, as to the parting with our honoured Guests. I was a little indispos'd, and my Ladies would excuse me, against my Will, from attending them in the Coach some Miles, which their dear Brother did. Both Ladies  
most

most tenderly saluted me, twice and thrice apiece, folding their kind Arms about me, and wishing my Safety and Health, and charging me to *think* little, and *hope* much; for they saw me thoughtful at times, tho' I endeavour'd to hide it from them.

My Lord *Davers* was pleased to say, with a Goodness of Temper that is peculiar to him, My dearest, dear Sister,—May God preserve you!—and multiply your Comforts! I shall pray for you more than ever I did for myself, tho' I have so much more need of it!—*I must* leave you—But I leave a Lady whom I love and honour next to Lady *Davers*, and ever shall.

MR. *H.* looked consciously silly. — I can say nothing, Madam—but (saluting me) that I shall never forget your Goodness to me. — Adding, in his frothy Way, and with as foppish an Air, Now can I say, I have saluted an Angel, if ever there was an Angel on Earth.

I HAD before, in Mrs. *Jervis's* Parlour, taken Leave of Mrs. *Worden* and Mrs. *Lesley*, my Ladies Women: They each, stole, as it were, at the same time, a Hand of mine, and kissed it, begging Pardon, as they said, for the Freedom. But I answer'd, taking each by her Hand, and kissing her, I shall always think of you with Pleasure, my good Friends; for you have encouraged me constantly by your Presence in my private Duties. And may GOD bless you, and the worthy Families you so laudably serve, as well for your sakes, as their own!

THEY



THEY turned away with Tears, and Mrs. *Worden* would have said something to me, but could not. — Only both taking Mrs. *Jervis* by her Hand, Happy, happy, Mrs. *Jervis*! said they almost in a Breath. — And happy, happy I, too, repeated I, in my Mrs. *Jervis*, and in such kind and worthy Well-wishers as Mrs. *Worden* and Mrs. *Lesley*. Wear this, Mrs. *Worden*; wear this, Mrs. *Lesley*, for my sake; — and I gave each of them a Ring, with a Crystal and Brilliants set about it, which Mr. *B.* had bought a Week before, for this very Purpose; for he has a great Opinion of both the good Folks, and often praised their Prudence, and their quiet and respectful Behaviour to every body, so different from the Impertinence, that was his Word, of most Ladies Women, who are Favourites.

MRS. *Jervis* said, I have enjoyed many happy Hours in your Conversation, Mrs. *Worden* and Mrs. *Lesley*: I shall miss you very much.

I MUST endeavour, said I, taking her Hand, to make it up to you, my good Friend, as well as I can. And of late we have not had so many Opportunities together as I should have wished, had I not been so agreeably engaged as you know. — So we must each try to comfort the other, when we have lost, I such noble, and you such worthy Guests.

MRS. *Jervis*'s honest Heart, before touched by the Parting, shew'd itself at her Eyes — Wonder not, my good Friends, said I, to the Two Gentlewomen, wiping with my Handkerchief her venerable Checks, that I always endeavour thus

to

to dry up all my good Mrs. *Jervis's* Tears; and then I kissed her, thinking of *you*, my dear Mother; and I was forced to withdraw a little abruptly, lest I should be too much moved myself, because I was going up to our noble Guests, who, had they inquired into the Occasion, would perhaps have thought it derogatory (tho' I should not) to my present Station, and too much retrospecting to my former.

I COULD not, in Conversation between Mr. *B.* and myself, when I was gratefully expatiating upon the amiable Characters of our noble Guests, and of their Behaviour and Kindness to me, help observing, that I had little expected, from some \* Hints which formerly dropt from Mr. *B.* to find my good Lord *Davers* so polite and so sensible a Nobleman.

HE is a very good-natur'd Man, reply'd Mr. *B.* I believe I might once or twice drop some disrespectful Words of him. But it was the Effect of Passion, at the Time, and with a View to two or three Points of his Conduct in publick Life; for which I took the Liberty to find fault with him, and received very unsatisfactory Excuses. One of these, I remember particularly, was in a Conference between a Committee of each House of Parliament, in which he behaved in a way I could not wish from a Gentleman so nearly ally'd to me by Marriage; for all he could talk of, was the Dignity of their House, when the Rea-

\* See Vol. II. p. 149.

son of the Thing was strong with the other ; and it fell to my Lot to answer what he said, which I did with some Asperity ; and this occasioned a Coolness between us for some Time.

BUT no Man makes a better Figure in private Life than Lord *Davers* ; especially now, that my Sister's good Sense has got the better of her Passions, and she can behave with tolerable Decency towards him. For, formerly, *Pamela*, it was not so ; the Violence of her Spirit making him appear in a Light too little advantageous either to his Quality or Merit. But now his Lordship improves upon me every time I see him.

YOU know not, my Dear, continued Mr. *B.* what a Disgrace a haughty and passionate Woman brings upon her Husband, and upon herself too, in the Eye of her own Sex, as well as ours. Nay, even those Ladies, who would be as glad of Dominion as she, if they might be permitted to exercise it, despise others who do, and the Man *most*, who suffers it.

AND let me tell you, my *Pamela*, said the dear Gentleman, with an Air that shew'd he was satisfy'd with his own Conduct in this Particular, that you cannot imagine how much a Lady owes to her Husband, as well with regard to *her own* Peace of Mind, as to *both* their Reputations, (however it may go against the Grain with her sometimes) if he be a Man who has Discretion to keep her incroaching Passions under a genteel and reasonable Controul !

How do you like this Doctrine, Miss ? — I'll warrant you believe, that I could do no less, than



than drop Mr. *B.* one of my best Court'sies, in Acknowledgement of my Obligation to him, for so considerately preserving to me *my* Peace of Mind, and *my* Reputation, as well as *his own*, in this Case.

BUT, after all, when one duly weighs the Matter, I can't tell but what he says may be right in the main; for I have not been able to contradict him, partial as I am to my Sex, when he has pointed out to me Instances, in the Behaviour of certain Ladies, who, like Children, the more they have been humour'd, the more humour-some they have grown; which must have occasion'd as great Uneasiness to themselves, as to their Husbands. Will you excuse me, Miss?—This is between ourselves; for I did not own so much to Mr. *B.*—For one should not give up one's Sex, you know, if one can help it; for the Men will be as apt to impose, as Ladies to incroach, I doubt.

WELL, but here, my honoured Father and Mother, and my dear Miss *Darnford*, at last, I end my Journal-wise Letters, as I may call them; our noble Guests being gone, and our Time and Employments rolling on in much the same manner, as in the past Days, of which I have given an Account.

IF any thing new or uncommon, or more particularly affecting to me than usual, occurs, I shall not fail to trouble you with it, as I have Opportunity. But I have now my Correspondence with Lady *Davers* to resume; and how shall I do about that!—Oh! I can easily tell: It is but

trespassing a little on your indulgent Allowance for me, my ever-honoured Parents — And you, my dear Miss, will find it a Relief, instead of an Occasion for Regret, to be eased of a great many Impertinencies, which I write to you in my Heart's Confidence, and in the Familiarity of Friendship — Besides, I shall have the Happiness of changing our Paper-Correspondence into personal Conversation with you, when at *London* ---- And what a sweet Change for me will that be! ---- I will end with the joyful Thought; and with the Assurance, that I am,

*My dearest Father and Mother,  
and best-beloved Miss,  
Your dutiful and affectionate*

P. B.

## LETTER XXXIX.

*My dear Miss DARNFORD,*

I HEAR that Mrs. *Jewkes* is in no good State of Health. I am very sorry for it. I pray for her Life, that she may be a Credit (if it please God) to the Penitence she has so lately assumed. For if she die, it will look discouraging to some thoughtless Minds, who penetrate not far into the Methods Providence takes with its poor Creatures, that as soon as she had changed her Manner of Living, and was in a reformed State, she was taken away: Tho' 'tis certain, that a Person is fittest to die, when worthiest to live. And what

what a Mercy will it be to her, if she should *not* live long, that she saw her Errors, and repented before 'twas too late!

Do, my dear *good Miss*, vouchsafe to the poor Soul the Honour of a Visit: She may be low-spirited — She may be too much sunk with the Recollection of past Things --- Comfort, with that Sweetness which is so natural to Miss *Darnford*, her drooping Heart, and let her know, that I have a true Concern for her, and give it her in Charge to take care of herself, and spare nothing that will administer either to her Health, or Peace of Mind.

YOU'LL pardon me, my dear Miss, that I put you upon such an Office; an Office indeed unsuitable to a Lady in your Station, to a Person in hers; but not to your Piety and Charity, where a Duty so eminent as that of visiting the Sick, and cheering the doubting Mind, is in the Question.

I KNOW your Condescension will give her great Comfort; and if she should be hastening to her Account, what a Pleasure will it give such a Lady as you, to have illuminated a benighted Mind, when it was tottering on the Verge of Death!

BUT I hope she will get the better of her Indisposition, and live many Years a thankful Monument of God's Mercies, and to do more Good by her Example in the latter Part of her Life, than she may possibly have done Evil in the former.

I KNOW she will want no spiritual Help from good Mr. *Peters*; but then the kind Notice of



so generally esteem'd a young Lady, will raise her more than can be imagined : for there is a Tenderness, a Sympathy, in the good Persons of our Sex to one another, that (while the best of the other seem but to act as in Office, saying to one those Things, which, tho' edifying and convincing, one is not certain proceeds not rather from the Fortitude of their Minds, than the Tenderness of their Natures) mingles from one Woman to another with one's very Spirits, thins the animal Mass, and runs thro' one's Heart, in the same lively Current, (I can't cloathe my Thought suitably to express what I *would* express) giving Assurance as well as Pleasure in the most arduous Cases, and brightening our misty Prospects, till we see the Sun of Righteousness rising on the Hills of Comfort, and dispelling the heavy Fogs of Doubt and Diffidence.

THIS it is makes me wish and long as I do, for the Company of my dear Miss *Darnford*. O when shall I see you? When shall I? — To speak to my present Case, it is *all I long for*; and, pardon my Freedom of Expression, as well as Thought, when I let you know in this Instance, how *early* I experience the *ardent Longings* of one in the Way I am in..

BUT I ought not to set my Heart upon any thing that is not in my own Power, and which may be subject to Accidents, and the Controul of others. But, let whatever Interventions happen, so I have your *Will* to come, I must be rejoiced in your kind Intention, altho' your *Power* should not prove answerable.

AND

AND now, my dearest honoured Mother, let me tell you, that I build no small Consolation in the Hope, that I shall, on a certain Occasion, have your Presence, and be strengthened by your Advice and Comfortings. For this was a Proposal of the best and most considerate of Gentlemen, who is every Day, if he sees but the least thoughtful Cloud upon my Brow, studying to say or to do something to dispel it. But I believe it is the grateful Sense I have of his Goodness to me, that makes me thus over-anxious: For the Apprehensions of a Separation from such an excellent Husband, from Hopes so chearing, Prospects so delightful, must at times affect one, let one's Affiance and Desires be ever so strong, where they ought to be preferably placed. — Then one *would* live to do a little more Good, if one *might*!

I AM a sad weak, apprehensive Body; to be sure I am! How much better fitted for the Contingencies of Life, are the gay, frolick Minds, that think not of any thing before it comes upon them, than such thoughtful Futurity-Pokers as I!

BUT why should I trouble you, my honoured and dear Friends, with my idle Fears and Follies — just as if nobody was ever in my Case before? — Yet weak and apprehensive Spirits will be gloomily-affected sometimes; and how can one help it? — And if I may not hope for the indulgent Soothings of the best of Parents, and of my Miss *Darnford*, in whose Bosom besides can one disburden one's Heart, when oppressed by too great a Weight of Thought?

YOU *will* come, and be in the House with me, my dear Mother, for some Time, when my best Friend sends to you: — Won't you? — And you will *spare* my dear Mother, my best of Fathers: Won't you? — Yes, yes, I am sure ye will — And I am sure my Miss *Darnford* will be with me, if she can; and these are my Comforts. But how I run on! — For I am so much a Novice, that —

BUT I will say no more, than that I am, my honoured Father and Mother, your ever-dutiful Daughter; and, my dear Miss *Darnford*,  
*Your affectionate and obliged*

P. B.

## LETTER XL.

*From Miss DARNFORD to Mrs. B.*

*My dearest Mrs. B.*

WE are greatly obliged to you for every particular Article in your entertaining Journal, which you have brought, sooner than we wish'd, to a Conclusion. We cannot express how much we admire you for your judicious Charities, so easy to be practised, yet so uncommon in the Manner; and for your inimitable Conduct in the Affair of your frail *Polly*, and the silly Mr. *H.*

YOUR Account of the Visit of the Four Rakes, of your Parting with your noble Guests; your Verses, and Mr. *H.*'s Letter, (an Original indeed!)



deed!) have all greatly entertain'd us, as your Prerogative Hints \* have amus'd us: But we defer our Opinions of those Hints, till we have the Case more fully explain'd.

BUT, my dear Friend, are you not in Danger of falling into a too thoughtful and gloomy way? By the latter Part of your last Letter, we are afraid you are; and my Mamma, and Mrs. *Jones*, and Mrs. *Peters*, injoin me to write, to caution you on that Head. But there is the less need of it, because your Prudence will always suggest to you Reasons, as it does in that very Letter, that must out-balance our Fears. *Think* little, and *hope* much, is a good Lesson in your Case, and to a Lady of your Temper; and I hope Lady *Davers* will not in vain have given you that Caution. After all, I dare say, your Thoughtfulness is but symptomatical, and will go off, in proper Time.

MEAN time, permit me to chuse you a Subject, that will certainly divert you. You must know, that I have been a diligent Observer of the Conduct of People in the marry'd Life to each other, and have often pronounced, that there cannot be any tolerable Happiness in it, unless the one or the other makes such Sacrifices of their Inclinations and Humours, as renders it a State very little desirable to free and generous Minds. Of this I see an Instance in our own Family; for tho' my Papa and Mamma live very happily, it is all owing to one Side, I need not say which. And this, I am sure, must be the Case between

\* See p. 467, 468.

Mr. *B.* and you : For you must, even thro' Fire, if requir'd, sacrifice to *Moloch*. I know your Prudence will oblige you to make the best of it ; and, like a contented good Wife, you will say, You have your own Will in every thing : A good Reason why, Because you make your own Will his. This, long ago, we all agreed, any Lady must do, be her Quality ever so great, who would be happy with Mr. *B.* — Yet my Sister once hoped (*entre nous*) to be the Person. Fine Work would there have been between Two such Spirits, you may believe!

BUT, to wave this: Let me ask you, Mrs. *B.* Is your Monarch's Conduct to you as *respectful*, I don't mean fond, when you are alone together, as when in Company? — Forgive me, Madam — But you have hinted two or three times, in your Letters, that he always is most complaisant to you in Company; and you observe, that *wisely* does he act in this, because he thereby does Credit with every body to his own Choice. I make no doubt, that the many charming Scenes which your Genius and fine Behaviour furnish out to him, must, as often as they happen, inspire him with Joy, and even Rapture; and must make him love you more for your Mind, than for your Person : — But these rapturous Scenes last very little longer than the present Moment. What I want to know is, Whether in the *steadier* Parts of Life, when you are both nearer the Level of us common Folks, he gives up any thing of his own Will in Compliment to yours? Whether he acts the Part of a respectful, polite Gentleman, in his  
Be-

Behaviour to you; and breaks not into your Retirements, in the Dress, and with the brutal Roughness, of a Fox-hunter? — Making no Difference, perhaps, between the Field or his Stud, (I will not say Kennel) and your Chamber or Closet? — Policy, for his own Credit-sake, as I mention'd, accounts to me well, for his Complaisance to you in publick. But his regular and uniform Behaviour to you in your Retirements, when the Conversation between you turns upon usual and common Subjects, and you have not obliged him to rise to Admiration of you, by such Scenes as those of your Two Parsons, Sir *Jacob Swynford*, and the like, are what would satisfy my Curiosity, if you please to give me an Instance or two of it.

Now, my dearest Mrs. *B.* if you can give me a Case partly or nearly thus circumstanced, you will highly oblige me:

FIRST, Where he has borne with any Infirmary of your own; and I know of none where you can give him such an Opportunity, except you get into a vapourish Habit, by giving way to a Temper too thoughtful and apprehensive:

NEXT, That, in Complaisance to *your* Will, he recedes from *his own*, in any one Instance:

NEXT, Whether he breaks not into your Retirements unceremoniously, and without Apology or Concern; as I hinted above.

YOU know, my dear Mrs. *B.* all I mean, by what I have said; and if you have any pretty Conversation in Memory, by the Recital of which, this my bold Curiosity may be answer'd, pray oblige



oblige me with it; and we shall be able to judge by it, not only of the inborn Generosity which all that know Mr. *B.* have been willing to attribute to him, but of the Likelihood of the Continuance of both your Felicities, upon Terms suitable to the Characters of a fine Lady and fine Gentleman; and, of consequence, worthy of the Imitation of the most delicate of our own Sex.

THIS is the Task your *Polly Darnford* presumes to set her beloved Mrs. *B.* And why? For your own Diversion, in the *first* place. For my Edification, in the *next*. And that when I have the Pleasure I hope for, of attending you in *London*, I may see what there is in the Conduct of both, to admire, or to remonstrate against, in the *third*. For, where there is so little wanting to Perfection between you, I shall be very free with you both, in my Censures, if he imposes, thro' Prerogative, or you permit, thro' an undue Compliance, what I shall imagine ought not to be in either Case. I know, you will excuse me for what I have said; and well you may, since I am sure I shall have nothing to do, when I am with you, but to admire, and to imitate *you*; and to wish, if ever I marry, I may have just such a Husband (tho' not quite so haughty perhaps) as Mr. *B.* But pray, let not the lordly Man see this Letter, nor your Answer, nor the Copy of it, till you may conclude I have the latter, if then; that you may not be under any undue Influences.

YOUR obliging *Longings*, my beloved dear Lady, for my Company, I hope, will be soon,  
very

very soon, answer'd. My Papa was so pleased with your sweet Earnestness on this Occasion, that he join'd with my Mamma, and both, with equal Chearfulness, said, You should not be many Days in *London* before me. *Murray* and his Mistress go on swimmingly, and have not yet had one Quarrel. The only Person, he, of either Sex, that ever knew *Nancy*, so intimately, and so long, without one!

THIS is all I have to say, at present, when I have assured you, my dear Mrs. *B.* how much I am

*Your obliged and affectionate*

POLLY DARNFORD.

I must add, however, that I expect from you almost as many Letters as there are Post-Days, between this and the Time I see you; for I will not part with my Correspondent for any body; no, not for Lady *Davers*.

But I must insist upon your giving me the Conversation with the young Ladies related to Mrs. *Towers*, and Mrs. *Arthur*.

I will observe every thing you say in relation to Mrs. *Jewkes*; who is much as she was; but not better.

---

## L E T T E R X L I .

*My dearest Miss* DARNFORD,

I WAS afraid I ended my last Letter in a gloomy way; and I am obliged to you for the kind and friendly Notice you take of it. It was owing  
to

to a Train of Thinking which sometimes I get into, of late; I hope, only symptomatically, as you say, and that the Cause and Effect will soon vanish together.

BUT what a Task, my dear Miss, I'll warrant, you think you have set me! I thought, in the Progress of my Journal, and in my Letters, I had given so many Instances of Mr. *B.*'s polite Tenderness to me, that no new ones would be requir'd at my Hands; and when I said, he was always *most* complaisant before Company, I little expected, that such an Inference would be drawn from my Words, as would tend to question the Uniformity of his Behaviour to me, when there were no Witnesses to it. But I am glad you give me an Opportunity to clear up all your Doubts on this Subject. To begin then;

YOU first desire an Instance, Where Mr. *B.* has borne with some Infirmary of mine :

NEXT, That in Complaisance to my Will, he has receded from his own :

AND, lastly, Whether he breaks not into my Retirements unceremoniously, and without Apology or Concern, making no Difference between the Field or the Stud, and my Chamber or Closet.

I KNOW not, my dear Miss, what the Distance is, at which the polite Ladies, and those of Rank, think it proper to endeavour to keep their Husbands: But I will give you, by-and-by, the Subject of One Conversation only, which will answer all you mean, as I apprehend, and at the same time acquaint you with the Notions and Behaviour of us both, with respect to this Distance,



stance, and my Retirements; and then leave you to judge as you think fit.

As to the first, his bearing with my Infirmities, he is daily giving Instances of his Goodness to me on this Head; and I am asham'd to say, that of late I give him so much Occasion for them as I do: But he sees my Apprehensiveness, at times, tho' I endeavour to conceal it; and no Husband was ever so soothing and so indulgent as Mr. *B.* He gives me the best Advice, as to my Malady, if I may call it one: Treats me with redoubled Tenderness; talks to me upon the Subjects I most delight to dwell upon; as of my worthy Parents; what they are doing at this time, and at that; of our intended Journey to *London*; of the Diversions of the Town; of Miss *Darnford's* Company; and when he goes abroad, sends up my good Mrs. *Jervis* to me, because I should not be alone. At other times, takes me abroad with him; brings this Neighbour and that Neighbour to visit me; and carries me to visit them: Talks of our Journey to *Kent*, and into *Lincolnshire*, and to my Lady *Davers's*, to *Bath*, to *Tunbridge*, and I can't tell whither, when the apprehended Time shall be over. — In fine, my dear Miss *Darnford*, you cannot imagine one half of his tender Goodness and Politeness to me! Indeed you cannot! — Then, as to what you call *respectful*, he watches every Motion of my Eye, every Turn of my Countenance; seldom gives his Opinion upon Subjects that he kindly imagines within my Capacity, till he has heard mine; and I have the less Fear of falling into mean Compliances,

pliances, because his Generosity is my Guardian, and never fails to exalt me more than I can debase myself, or than it is possible I can deserve. Then he hardly ever goes out, but he brings me some pretty Present, that he thinks will be grateful to me: When at home, is seldom out of my Company; delights to teach me *French* and *Italian*, and reads me Pieces of manuscript Poetry, in several of the modern Tongues (for he speaks them all); explains to me every thing I understand not; delights to answer all my Questions, and to encourage my Inquisitiveness and Curiosity; tries to give me a Notion of Pictures and Medals, and reads me Lectures upon them, for he has a fine Collection of both; and every now-and-then will have it, that he has been improved by my Questions and Observations.

WHAT say you to these things, my dear Miss? Do they come up to your first Question? or do they not? Or is not what I have said, a full Answer, were I to say no more, to *all* your Inquiries? Can there be any such thing as *undue Compliances* to such a Husband, on my Side, think you? And when I have charm'd to sleep, by my grateful Duty, that watchful Dragon *Prerogative*, as Lady *Davers*, in one of her Letters, calls it\*; and am resolved not to awake it, if I can help it, by the least disobliging, or wilfully perverse Act, what have I to apprehend from it?

O MY dear Miss, I am thoroughly convinc'd, that half the Misunderstandings among marry'd People, are owing to Trifles, to petty Distin-

\* See this Vol. p. 126.

tions,

ctions, to mere Words, and little captious Follies, to Over-weenings, or unguarded Petulances: And who would forego the solid Satisfactions of Life, for the sake of triumphing in such poor Contentions, if one could triumph?

ARE such Foibles as these to be dignify'd by the Name of *Inclinations*, and *Humours*, which, to be given up, would be making such a *Sacrifice*, as shall render the married Life little desirable to free and generous Minds?

BUT say not, my dear Miss, to free and generous Minds: For every high Spirit deserves not those Epithets: Nor think what I say, a Partiality in behalf of my own Conduct, and an Argument for Tameness of Spirit, and such a one as would lick the Dust; for, let me tell you, my dear Friend, that, dearly as I love and honour Mr. B. if he were to require of me any thing that I thought it was my Duty not to comply with, I should be the unhappiest Creature in the World; because I am sure I should withstand his Will, and desire him to excuse my Non-Compliance.

BUT then I would reserve my Strength for these greater Points, and would never dispute with him the smaller, altho' they were not entirely to my Liking: And this would give both Force and Merit to the Opposition, when I found it necessary: But to contest every little Point, where nothing but one's stubborn Will was in the Question, what an inexcusable Perverseness would that be! How ready to enter the Lists against a Husband, would it make one appear to him! And where, besides, is the Merit of Oblige-



ing, were we only to yield to what will oblige ourselves?

BUT you next require of me an Instance, where, in Complaisance to *my* Will, he has receded from *his own*? I don't know, Miss, what to say to this. When Mr. *B.* is all Tenderness and Indulgence, as I have said, and requires of me nothing, that I can have a material Objection to; ought I *not* to oblige him? *Can* I have a Will, that is not his? Or would it be excusable, if I *had*? All little Matters, as I have said, I cheerfully give up: Great ones have not yet occur'd between us, and I hope never will. One Point, indeed, I have some Apprehension *may* happen; and that, to be plain with you, is, We have had a Debate or two on the Subject (which I maintain) of a Mother's Duty to nurse her own Child; and, I am sorry to say it, he seems more determin'd than I wish he were, against it.

I HOPE it will not proceed so far, as to awaken the sleeping Dragon I mention'd, *Prerogative* by Name; but I doubt I cannot give up this Point very contentedly. But as to lesser Points, had I been a Duchess born, I think I would not have contested them with my Husband.

UPON the Whole of this Question then, I have really had no Will of my own to contend for, so generous is Mr. *B.* and so observant, and so grateful, have I thought it my Duty to be; yet I could give you many respectful Instances, too, of his receding, when he has desir'd to see what I have been writing, and I have told him to whom, and begg'd to be excus'd. One such Instance I can give, since I began this Letter. This is it:

I PUT

I PUT it in my Bosom, when he came up : He saw me do so.

ARE you writing, my Dear, what I must not see ?

I AM writing to Miss *Darnford*, Sir ; and she begg'd, you might not, at present.

THIS augments my Curiosity, *Pamela*. What can Two such Ladies write, that I may not see ?

IF you won't be displeased, Sir, I had rather you would not, because Miss desires you may not see her Letter, nor this my Answer, till the latter is in her Hands.

THEN I will not, return'd Mr. *B*.

WILL this Instance, my dear Miss, come up to your Demand, for One, where he recedes from his own Will, in Complaisance to mine ?

BUT now, as to what both our Notions and our Practice are on the Article of my Retirements, and whether he breaks in upon them unceremoniously, and without Apology, let the Conversation I promised, inform you, which began on the following Occasion :

MR. *B*. rode out early one Morning, within a few Days past, and did not return till the Afternoon, an Absence I had not been used to of late ; and breakfasting and dining without him being also a new thing to me, I had such an Impatency to see him, having expected him at Dinner, that I was forced to retire to my Closet, to try to divert it, by Writing ; and the gloomy Conclusion of my last, was then the Subject. He return'd about Four o'Clock ; and indeed did *not* tarry to change his Riding-dress, as your Politeness, my dear Friend, would perhaps have expected ; but came directly up to me, with an Impatency to see me, equal

to my own, when he was told, upon Inquiry, that I was in my Closet.

I HEARD his welcome Step, as he came upstairs; which generally, after a longer Absence than I expect, has such an Effect upon my fond Heart, that it gives a responsive Throb for every Step he takes towards me, and beats quicker and faster, as he comes nearer and nearer; till, tapping my Breast, I say to it sometimes, Lie still, busy Fool, as thou art! Canst thou not forbear letting thy discerning Lord see thy nonsensical Emotions? I love to indulge thee in them, myself, 'tis true; but then let nobody else observe them; for, generous as thy Master is, thou mayst not perhaps meet with such favourable Interpretations as thou deservest, when thou art always fluttering thus as he approaches, and playest off all thy little joyful Frolicks into the glowing Cheek, and brighten'd Eye, of thy Mistress; which makes her look, as if she were conscious of some Misdemeanour; when all the time, it is nothing in the world but grateful Joy, and a Love so innocent, that the purest Mind might own it.

THIS little Flutter and Chiding of the busy Simpleton, made me meet him but at the Closet-door, instead of the Entrance of my Chamber, as sometimes I do. — So, my dear Love, how do you? folding his kind Arms about me, and saluting me with Ardour. Whenever I have been but a few Hours from you, my Impatience to see my Beloved, will not permit me to stand upon the Formality of a Message to know how you are engag'd; but I break in upon you, even in my Riding-dress, as you see.

DEAR



DEAR Sir, you are very obliging. But I have no Notion of *mere* Formalities of this kind (How unpolite this, my dear Miss, in your Friend!) in a married State; since 'tis impossible a virtuous Wife can be imploy'd about any thing, that her Husband may not know; and so need not fear Surprizes.

I AM glad to hear you say this, my *Pamela*; for I have always thought the extraordinary Civilities and Distances of this kind, which I have observed among several Persons of Rank, altogether unaccountable. For, if they are exacted by the Lady, I should suspect she had Reserves, which she herself believed I could not approve of. If not exacted, but practised of choice by the Gentleman, it carries with it, in my Opinion, a false Air of Politeness, little less than affrontive to the Lady, and dishonourable to himself. For does it not look, as if he supposed, and *allowed*, that, probably, she might be so imployed, that it was necessary to apprise her of his Visit, lest he should make Discoveries not to her Credit, or his own?

ONE would not, Sir, (for I thought his Conclusion too severe) make such a harsh Supposition as this, neither: For there are little Delicacies, and Moments of Retirement, no doubt, in which a modest Lady would be glad to be indulged by the tenderest Husband.

IT may be so, in an *early* Matrimony, before the Lady's Confidence in the Honour and Discretion of the Man she has chosen, has disengag'd her from her Bridal Reserves.

BRIDAL Reserves! dear Sir; permit me to give it, as my humble Opinion, That a Wife's Behaviour ought to be as pure, and as circumspect, in degree, as that of a Bride, or even of a Maiden Lady, be her Confidence in her Husband's Honour and Discretion, ever so great. For, indeed, I think, a gross or a careless Deemeanour little becomes that Modesty, which is the peculiar Excellency and Distinction of our Sex.

YOU account very well, my Dear, by what you now say, for your own over-nice Behaviour, as I have sometimes thought it. But are we not all apt to argue for a Practice we make our own, because we *do* make it our own, rather than from the Reason of the Thing?

I HOPE, Sir, that is not the present Case with me; for, permit me to say, That an over-free or negligent Behaviour of a Lady in the marry'd State, must be a Mark of Disrespect to her Comfort; and would shew, as if she was very little solicitous about what Appearance she made in his Eye. And must not this beget in him a slight Opinion of her, and her Sex too, as if, supposing the Gentleman had been a free Liver, she would convince him, there was no other Difference in the Sex, but as they were within or without the Pale; licens'd by the Law, or acting in Defiance of it?

I UNDERSTAND the Force of your Argument, *Pamela*. But you were going to say something more.

ONLY, Sir, permit me to add, That when, in my particular Case, you injoin me to appear before you always \* dress'd, even in the early

\* See Vol. II. p. 214, 223.

Part of the Day, it would be wrong, if I was less regardful of my Behaviour and Actions, than of my Appearance.

I BELIEVE you are are right, my Dear, if a precise or unnecessary Scrupulousness be avoided; and where all is unaffected, easy, and natural, as in my *Pamela*. For I have seen marry'd Ladies, both in *England* and *France*, who have kept a Husband at greater Distance, than they have exacted from some of his Sex, who have been more intitled to his Resentment, than to his Wife's Intimacies.

BUT to wave a Subject, in which, as I can with Pleasure say, neither of us have much Concern, tell me, my Dearest, how you were employ'd before I came up? Here are Pen and Ink: Here too is Paper; but it is as spotless as your Mind. To whom were you directing your Favours now? May I not know your Subject?

MR. *H.*'s Letter was a Part of it; and so I had put it by, at his Approach; and not chusing he should see that, I am writing, reply'd I, to Miss *Darnford*: But I think you must not ask me to see what I have written *this* time. I put it aside, that you should not, when I heard your welcome Step. The Subject is our Parting with our noble Guests; and a little of my Apprehensiveness, on an Occasion upon which our Sex may write to one another; but, for some of the Reasons we have been mentioning, Gentlemen should not desire to see.

THEN I will not, my dearest Love (So here, Miss, is another Instance — I could give you a hundred such — of his receding from his own



Will, in Complaisance to mine): Only, continued he, let me warn you against too much Apprehensiveness, for your own sake, as well as mine; for such a Mind as my *Pamela's*, I cannot permit to be habitually over-clouded. And yet there now hangs upon your Brow an Overthoughtfulness, which you must not indulge.

INDEED Sir, I was a little too thoughtful, from my Subject, before you came; but your Presence, like the Sun, has dissipated the Mists that hung upon my Mind. See you not, and I press'd his Hand with my Lips, they are all gone already? smiling upon him, with a Delight unfeigned.

NOT quite, my dearest *Pamela*; and therefore, if you have no Objection, I will change my Dress, and attend you in the Chariot for an Hour or Two, whither you please, that not one Shadow may remain visible in this dear Face; tenderly saluting me.

WHITHERSOEVER you please, Sir. A little Airing with you, will be highly agreeable to me.

THE dear Obliger went and chang'd his Dress in an Instant; and he led me to the Chariot, with his usual tender Politeness, and we had a charming Airing of several Miles; returning quite happy, chearful, and delighted with each other's Conversation, without calling in upon any of our good Neighbours: For what need of that, my dear Miss, when we could be the best Company in the World to each other?

Now, Miss, do these Instances come up to your Questions? Do they, or do they not? — If you think not, I could give you our Conversation  
in

in the Chariot; for I wrote it down, at my first Leisure, so highly was I delighted with it: For the Subject was my dearest Parents; a Subject started by himself, because he knew it would oblige me. But being tir'd with writing, I may reserve it, till I have the Pleasure of seeing you, if you think it worth asking for. And so I will hasten to a Conclusion of this long Letter.

YOU will perceive, my dear Miss, by what I have written, in what Sense it may be *justly* said, That Mr. B. is *most* complaisant to me before Company, perhaps, politically, as you say, to do Credit to his own generous Choice: — But that he is more tender, yea, *respectfully* tender, (for that's the Word with you) and not less polite to me, in our retired Hours, you will have no Doubt, from what I have related, and could further relate, if it were necessary: For every Day produces Instances equal to what I have given you.

THEN, my dear Miss, let me say to you, what I could not so freely say to any other young Lady; That I never could have hoped I should be so happy as I am, in other Particulars, from a Gentleman who has given himself the Liberties Mr. B. has done: For I never hear from him, in Company, or when alone, the least shocking Expression, or such frothy Jests, as tend to convey impure Ideas to the most apprehensive Mind. There is indeed the less Wonder in this, and that we can glory in a true conjugal Chastity, as I have the Vanity to think, his Love, as well as my own, is the Love of the Mind, rather than that of Person; and our tenderest and most affecting

fecting Moments, are those which lift us up above Sense, and all that Sense can imagine. But this is a Subject too delicate to be dwelt upon, even to you: And you'll better comprehend all I mean, when your pure Mind meets with a Gentleman of exalted Sense, like Mr. *B.* whom, if you *find* him not so good as you wish, your Example will *make* so.

PERMIT me to add, for the sake of you, my dear Parents, as well as for the sakes of my much-respected Friends, who have join'd in the kind Caution you, my dear Miss, so obligingly give me, against getting into too thoughtful and gloomy a way, that there is no great Fear, I should continue long in it, when I have so kind and so generous a Comforter as Mr. *B.* For, at his Presence, all my fearful Apprehensions are dissipated, and vanish like a Morning Dream. And depend upon it, that so sure as the Day succeeds to the Night, so sure will my Mind, while capable of the least Sense of Gratitude, be illuminated the Moment he shines out upon me, let it be ever so overcast in his Absence, thro' imaginary Doubts, and apprehended Evils.

I HAVE only further to add, for my Comfort, that next *Thursday* Sev'n-night, if nothing hinders, we are to set out for *London*. And why do you think I say *for my Comfort*? Only that I shall then soon have the Opportunity, to assure you personally, as you give me Hope, how much I am, my dear Miss *Darnford*,

*Your truly affectionate*

P. B.

I will



I will shew you, when I see you, the Conversation you require about the young Ladies.

---

## L E T T E R XLII.

*My dear Miss,*

ONE more Letter, and I have done for a great while; because I hope your Presence will put an End to the Occasion. I shall now tell you of my second Visit to the Dairy-house, where we went to Breakfast, in the Chariot and Four, because of the Distance, which is Ten pretty long Miles.

I TRANSCRIB'D for you, from Letters written formerly to my dear Parents, an \* Account of my former Dairy-house Visit, and what the People were, and whom I saw there; and altho' I besought you to keep that Affair to yourself, as too much affecting the Reputation of my Mr. B. to be known any further, and even to destroy that Account, when you had perused it; yet, I make no doubt, you remember the Story, and so I need not repeat any Part of it.

WHEN we arrived there, we found at the Door, expecting us, (for they heard the Chariot-wheels at a Distance) my pretty Miss *Goodwin*, and Two other Misses, who had earned their Ride, attended by the Governess's Daughter, a discreet young Gentlewoman. As soon as I stepp'd out, Miss ran into my Arms with great Eagerness. and I as tenderly embraced her; and

\* See Vol. II. p. 401.

leading her into the Parlour, ask'd her abundance of Questions about her Work and her Lessons; and among the rest, If she had merited this Distinction of the Chaise and Dairy-house Breakfast, or if it were owing to her Uncle's Favour, and to that of her Governess? The young Gentlewoman assur'd me it was to both, and shew'd me Miss's Needle-works and Penmanship, and the Child was highly pleas'd with my Commendations.

I took a good deal of Notice of the other Two Misses, for their School-fellow's sake, and made each of them a Present of some little Toys; and my Miss, of a Number of pretty Trinkets, with which she was highly delighted; and I told her, That I would wait upon her Governess, when I came from *London* into the Country again, and see in what Order she kept her little Matters; for, above all things, I loved pretty housewifely Misses; and then I would bring her more.

MR. B. observ'd, with no small Satisfaction, the Child's Behaviour, which is very pretty; and appeared as fond of her, as if he had been *more* than her *Uncle*; and yet seem'd under some Restraint, lest it should be taken, that he *was* more. Such Power has secret Guilt, poor dear Gentleman! to lessen and restrain a Pleasure, that would, in a happier Light, have been so laudable to have manifested! But how commendable is this his Love to the dear Child, compar'd to that of most wicked Libertines, who have no Delight, but in destroying Innocence; and care not what becomes of the unhappy Infants, or of the still more unhappy Mothers!

I AM going to let you into a charming Scene, resulting from this Perplexity of the dear Gentleman! A Scene that has afforded me high Delight ever since; and always will, when I think of it: But I will lead to it, as gradually as it happen'd.

THE Child was very fond of her Uncle, and told him, She loved him dearly, and always would love and honour him, for giving her such a good Aunt. — You talked, Madam, said she, when I saw you before, that I should come and live with you — Will you let me, Madam? Indeed I will be very good, and do every thing you bid me, and mind my Book, and my Needle; indeed I will.

ASK your Uncle, my dearest Miss, said I: I should like your pretty Company of all things.

SHE went to Mr. B. and said, Shall I, Sir, go and live with my Aunt? Pray let me, when you come from *London* again.

YOU have a very good Governess, Miss, said he; and she can't part with you.

YES, but she can, Sir; she has a great many Misses, and can spare me well enough; and if you please to let me ride in your Coach sometimes, I can go and visit my Governess, and beg a Holiday for the Misses, now-and-then, when I am almost a Woman; and then all the Misses will love me.

DON'T the Misses love you now, Miss *Goodwin*? said he. Yes, they love me well enough, for matter of that; but they'll love me better, when I can beg them a Holiday. Do, dear Sir, let me go home to my new Aunt, next time you come into the Country.

I WAS



I WAS much pleased with the dear Child's Earnestness; and permitted her to have her full Argument with her beloved Uncle; but was much moved, and he himself was under some Concern, when the dear Miss said — But you should, in Pity, let me live with you, Sir; for I have no Papa, nor Mamma neither: They are so far off! — But I will love you both, as if you were my own Papa and Mamma; so, dear now, my good Uncle, promise the poor Girl, that has never a Papa nor Mamma! —

I WITHDREW to the Door: It will rain, I believe, said I, and looked up. And, indeed, I had almost a Shower in my Eye; and had I kept my Place, could not have refrained shewing how much I was affected.

MR. B. as I said, was a little mov'd; but for fear the young Gentlewoman should take notice of it, How! my Dear, said he, No Papa and Mamma! — Did they not send you a pretty Black Boy to wait upon you, a while ago? Have you forgot that? — That's true, reply'd Miss: But what's a Black Boy to living with my new Aunt? — That's better a great deal than a Black Boy!

WELL, your Aunt and I will consider of it, when we come from *London*. Be a good Girl, mean time, and do as your Governess would have you, and then you don't know what we may do for you. Well then, Miss *Bett*, said she, to her young Governess, let me be set Two Tasks instead of One, and I will learn all I can, to deserve to go to my Aunt.

IN this manner the little Prattler diverted herself. And as we returned from them, the Scene I hinted at, open'd as follows:

MR. B.

MR. B. was pleased to say, What a poor Figure does the proudest Man make, my dear *Pamela*, under the Sense of a concealed Guilt, in Company of the Innocent who know it, and even of those who do not! Since the casual Expression of a Baby shall overwhelm him with Shame, and make him unable to look up without Confusion. I blush'd for myself, continued he, to see how you were affected for me, and yet withdrew, to avoid reproaching me so much as with a Look. Surely, *Pamela*, I must then make a most contemptible Appearance in your Eye! — Did you not disdain me at that Moment?

DEAREST Sir! how can you speak such a Word? A Word I cannot repeat after you! For at that very Time, I beheld you with the more Reverence, for seeing your noble Heart touch'd with a Sense of your Error; and it was such an Earnest to me of the happiest Change I could ever wish for, and in so young a Gentleman, that it was one half Joy for that, and the other half Concern at the little Charmer's accidental Plea, to her best and nearest Friend, for coming home to her new Aunt, that affected me so sensibly as you saw.

YOU must not talk to me of the Child's coming home, after this Visit, *Pamela*; for how, at this rate, shall I stand the Reproaches of my own Mind, when I see the little Prater every Day before me, and think of what her poor Mamma has suffer'd on my Account? 'Tis enough, that in *you*, my Dear, I have an hourly Reproach before me, for my Attempts on your Virtue; and I have nothing to boast of, but that I gave way to the Triumphs of your Innocence; And what then is my Boast?

WHAT

WHAT is your Boast, dearest Sir? You have every thing to boast, that is worthy of being boasted of: — Brought up to an affluent Fortune, uncontrouled in your Will, your Passions uncurbed, you have, nevertheless, permitted the Divine Grace to operate upon your truly noble Heart, and have seen your Error, at a Time of Life, when others are rushing into Vices, in the midst of which, perhaps they are cut off.

YOU act generously, and with a laudable Affection, to a deserving Baby, which some would have left friendless to the wide World, and have made more miserable, perhaps, than they had made the very miserable Mother. And you have the Comfort to think, that, thro' God's Goodness, this *Mother* is not unhappy; and that there is not a lost *Soul*, any more than a lost *Body*, to lay to your Charge.

YOU have inspirited, by your generous Example, and enabled, by your splendid Fortune, another Person, whom you have made the happiest Creature in the World, to do Good to the Poor and Destitute all around her; besides making every one, who approaches you, easy and happy, with the Bounty of your own Hands.

YOU are the best of Husbands, the best of Landlords, the best of Masters, the best of Friends; and with all these Excellencies, and a Mind, as I hope, continually improving, and more and more affected with the Sense of its past Mistakes, will you ask, dear Sir, What is your Boast?

O MY dearest, dear Mr. *B.* and then I press'd his Hand with my Lips, whatever you are to yourself, when you give way to Reflections so  
hopeful,



hopeful, you are the Glory and the Boast of your grateful *Pamela*! And, permit me to add, (Tears standing in my Eyes, and holding his Hand between mine) That I never beheld you in my Life, in a more amiable Light, than when I saw that noble Consciousness, which you speak of, manifest itself in your Eyes, and your Countenance—  
O Sir! this was a Sight of Joy, of true Joy! to one who loves you for your dear Soul's sake, as well as for that of your Person; and who looks forward to a Companionship with you, beyond the Term of this transitory Life!

THE dear Gentleman look'd down sometimes, and sometimes upon me, without offering to interrupt me; and when I had done speaking, I began to fear, by his Silence, that I had offended him, remembering, just then, one of his former \* Cautions to me, not to throw a Gloom upon his Mind by my Over-seriousness; and I said, putting my Arms round *his* Arm, as I sat, my tearful Eye watching his, I fear, Sir, I have been too serious! I have perhaps broken one of your Injunctions! Have cast a Gloominess over your Mind! And if I have, dear Sir, forgive me!

HE clasped his Arm around me; O my beloved *Pamela*, said he; thou dear Confirmer of all my better Purposes! how shall I acknowledge your inexpressible Goodness to me? I see every Day more and more, my dear Love, what Confidence I may repose in your Generosity and Discretion! You want no Forgiveness, and my Si-

\* See Vol. II. p. 151.

lence was owing to much better Motives, than those you were apprehensive of.

JUDGE ye, my honoured Parents, what Pleasure must overspread my Heart, encouraged in a manner so agreeable to my Wishes, and at the hopeful Prospect of a thorough Reformation, which I had so often pray'd for, and which so happily began to open to my delighted Mind, on this Occasion.

INDEED I could not find Words to express my Joy, and so was obliged to Silence in my Turn, being only able to raise my swimming Eyes to his encouraging ones, and to press his Hand, between both mine, to my Lips, which, by t<sup>he</sup>ir quivering Motion, shew'd their Readiness to perform their Part of Speech, could my backwarder Tongue have given Utterance to my Meanings.

HE saw my grateful Transport, and kindly said, Struggle not, my beloved *Pamela*, for Words to express Sentiments which your Eyes, and your Countenance, much more significantly express, than any Words *can* do. Every Day produces new Instances of your affectionate Concern for my *future* as well as *present* Happiness: And I will endeavour to confirm to you all the Hopes which the present Occasion has given you of me, and which I see, by these transitory Effects, are so desirable to you.

IF, my dear Miss, you are not at present able to account for this speechless Rapture, as I may call it, I am confident you will, if it should be your Lot to marry such a Gentleman as Mr. *B.* one who is capable of generous and noble Sentiments;

ments; and yet has not been so good as you could wish, whenever it shall happen, that the Divine Grace, and your unaffected Piety, shall touch his Heart, and he shall give you Hopes like those I have the Pleasure to rejoice in. — Hopes so charming, that they must, if confirm'd, irradiate many a gloomy Appearance, which, at times, will cast a Shadow over the brightest and happiest Prospects.

THE Chariot brought us home sooner than I wished, and Mr. *B.* handed me into the Parlour. Here, Mrs. *Fervis*, said he, meeting her in the Passage, receive your Angelick Lady. I must take a little Tour without you, *Pamela*; for I have had *too much* of your dear Company, and must leave you, to descend again into myself; for you have raised me to such a Height, that it is with Pain I look down from it.

HE kissed my Hand, and went into his Chariot, for it was but half an Hour after Twelve; and said, He would be back by Two, at Dinner. He left Mrs. *Fervis* wondering at his Words, and at the solemn Air with which he utter'd them. But when I told that good Friend the Occasion, I had a new Joy in the Pleasure and Gratuations of the dear good Woman, on what had passed.

WERE I, my dear Friends, to recount to you every Conversation that gives me Delight, [when we are *alone*, my Miss *Darnford*, as well as when we are in Company] I should do nothing but write. Imagine the rest from what I have (but as so many Specimens of my Felicity) informed you of, and think, if there can possibly be a happier Creature on Earth, than I am at present.



My next Letter will be from *London*, and to You, my honoured Parents (for to You, my dear Miss, I shall not write again, expecting to see you soon). But I must now write seldomer, because I am to renew my Correspondence with Lady *Davers*; with whom I cannot be so free, as I have been with Miss *Darnford*; and so I doubt, my dear Father and Mother, you cannot have the Particulars of that Correspondence; for I shall never find Time to transcribe. But every Opportunity that offers, you may assure yourself, shall be laid hold of, by your ever-dutiful Daughter.

AND now, my dear Miss, as I inscribed this Letter to you, let me conclude it, with the Assurance, that I am, and ever will be,

*Your most affectionate Friend*

*and Servant,*

P. B.



*The END of VOL. III.*

